

UNIVERSITY OF ST. MICHAEL'S COLLEGE



3 1761 04329 7902



# OR REFERENCE

DO NOT BE TAKEN FROM THIS ROOM

DA 30 4

G 798

1901

THE LIBRARY  
RESURRECTION COLLEGE

TRANSFERRED



Joan Evans  
with love from her father & mother  
Christmas 1903







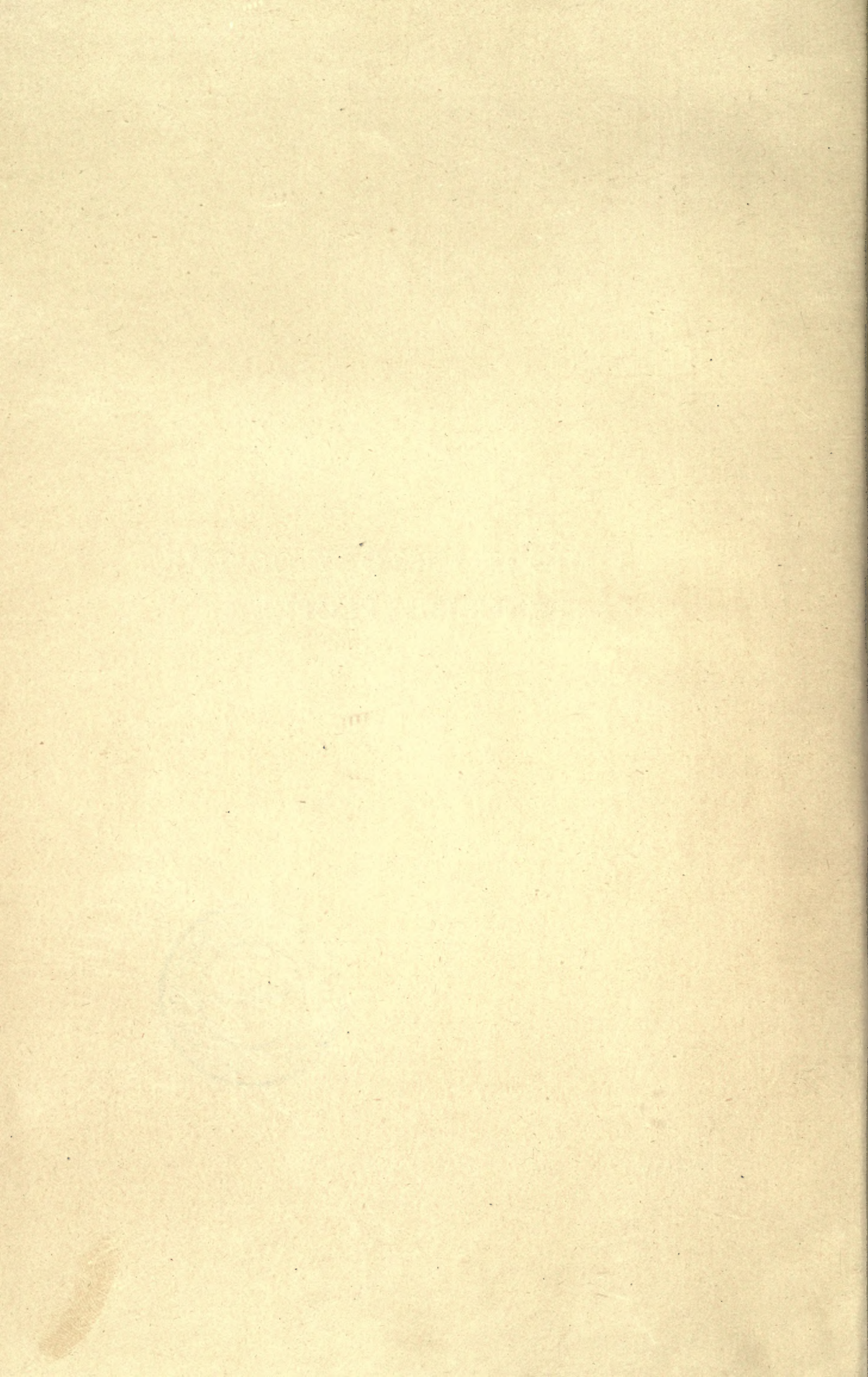


A SHORT HISTORY OF THE  
ENGLISH PEOPLE



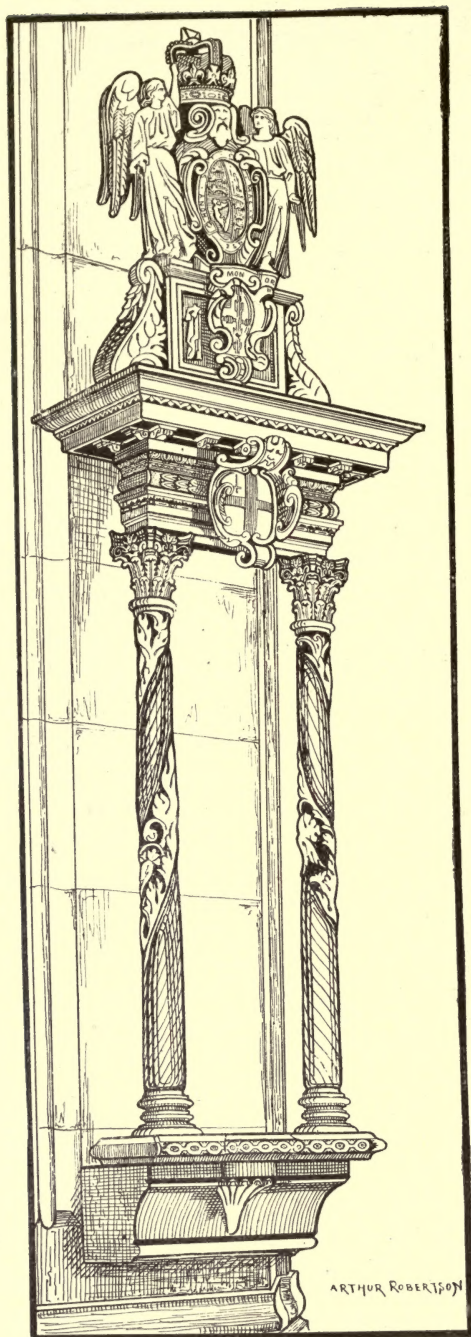
VOL IV











SWORD-REST OF THE LORD MAYOR OF LONDON, c. 1680,  
IN S. HELEN'S CHURCH, BISHOPSGATE.



# A SHORT HISTORY OF THE ENGLISH PEOPLE

BY  
JOHN RICHARD GREEN M.A

Illustrated Edition

EDITED BY  
MRS. J. R. GREEN AND MISS KATE NORGATE

VOLUME IV

London

MACMILLAN & CO LIMITED

JAMES FINCH & CO LIMITED

1901

RESERVED  
THE LIBRARY  
ST. JEROME'S COLLEGE  
TRANSFERRED

THE LIBRARY  
RESURRECTION COLLEGE  
TRANSFERRED



1313



# CONTENTS OF VOLUME FOUR

## CHAPTER IX

### THE REVOLUTION (*continued*)

	PAGE
Sect. 5—Shaftesbury, 1679—1682 . . . . .	1411
„ 6—The Second Stuart Tyranny, 1682—1688 . . . . .	1431
„ 7—William of Orange . . . . .	1465
„ 8—The Grand Alliance, 1689—1697 . . . . .	1492
„ 9—Marlborough, 1698—1712 . . . . .	1531
„ 10—Walpole, 1712—1742 . . . . .	1577

## CHAPTER X

### MODERN ENGLAND

Sect. 1—William Pitt, 1742—1762 . . . . .	1607
„ 2—The Independence of America, 1761—1782 . . . . .	1657
„ 3—The Second Pitt, 1783—1793 . . . . .	1718
„ 4—The War with France, 1793—1815 . . . . .	1763
Epilogue . . . . .	1829
Chronological Annals of English History . . . . .	1851
Genealogical Tables . . . . .	1865
Index . . . . .	1875







TITLE-PAGE OF MUSICK'S HANDMAIDE, 1663.

## THE REVOLUTION

### Section V.—Shaftesbury, 1679—1682

[*Authorities.*—As before. We may add for this period Earl Russell's Life of his ancestor, William, Lord Russell,]

The new Parliament was elected in a tumult of national excitement. The members were for the most part Churchmen and country gentlemen, but they shared the alarm of the country, and even before their assembly in March their temper had told on the King's policy. James was sent to Brussels. Charles began to disband the army and promised that Danby should soon withdraw from office. In his speech from the throne he asked for supplies to maintain the Protestant attitude of his Government in foreign affairs. But it was impossible to avert Danby's fall. The Commons insisted on carrying his impeachment to the bar of the Lords. It was necessary to dismiss him from his post of Treasurer and to construct a new ministry. Shaftesbury became President of the Council. The chiefs of the Country party, Lord Russell and Lord Cavendish, took their seats at the board with Lords Holles and Roberts, the older representatives of the Presby-

Sir  
William  
Temple

*The New  
Ministry*

SEC. V  
 SHAFTESBURY  
 1679  
 TO  
 1682  
 —

terian party which had merged in the general Opposition. Savile, Lord Halifax, as yet known only as a keen and ingenious speaker, entered the ministry in the train of Shaftesbury, with whom he was connected; Lord Sunderland was admitted to the Council; while Lord Essex and Lord Capel, two of the most popular among the Country leaders, went to the Treasury. The recall of Sir William Temple, the negotiator of the Triple Alliance, from his embassy at the Hague to fill the post of Secretary of State, promised a foreign policy which would again place England high among the European powers. Temple returned with a plan of administration which, fruitless as it directly proved, is of great importance as marking the silent change which was passing over the Constitution. Like many men of his time, he was equally alarmed at the power both of the Crown and of the Parliament. In moments of national excitement the power of the Houses seemed irresistible. They had overthrown Clarendon. They had overthrown Clifford and the Cabal. They had just overthrown Danby. But though they were strong enough in the end to punish ill government, they showed no power of securing good government or of permanently influencing the policy of the Crown. For nineteen years, with a Parliament always sitting, Charles as far as foreign policy went had it pretty much his own way. He had made war against the will of the nation and he had refused to make war when the nation demanded it. While every Englishman hated France, he had made England a mere dependency of the French King. The remedy for this state of things, as it was afterwards found, was a very simple one. By a change which we shall have to trace, the Ministry has now become a Committee of State-officers, named by the majority of the House of Commons from amongst the more prominent of its representatives in either House, whose object in accepting office is to do the will of that majority. So long as the majority of the House of Commons itself represents the more powerful current of public opinion it is clear that such an arrangement makes government an accurate reflection of the national will. But obvious as such a plan may seem to us, it had as yet occurred to no English statesman. Even to Temple the one remedy seemed to lie in the restoration of the Royal Council to its older powers. This body, composed as it



was of the great officers of the Court, the royal Treasurer and Secretaries, and a few nobles specially summoned to it by the sovereign, formed up to the close of Elizabeth's reign a sort of deliberative assembly to which the graver matters of public

SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682

*Temple  
and his  
Council*



THE DUCHESS OF LAUDERDALE'S BOUDOIR, HAM HOUSE.

administration were commonly submitted by the Crown. A practice, however, of previously submitting such measures to a smaller body of the more important councillors must always have existed; and under James this secret committee, which was then

SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682

known as the Cabala or Cabal, began almost wholly to supersede the Council itself. In the large and balanced Council which was formed after the Restoration all real power rested with the "Cabala" of Clarendon, Southampton, Ormond, Monk, and the two Secretaries; and on Clarendon's fall these were succeeded by Clifford, Arlington, Buckingham, Ashley, and Lauderdale. By a mere coincidence the initials of the latter names formed the word "Cabal," which has ever since retained the sinister meaning their unpopularity gave to it. The effect of these smaller committees had undoubtedly been to remove the check which the larger



THE "CABAL" ROOM, HAM HOUSE.

numbers and the more popular composition of the Royal Council laid upon the Crown. The unscrupulous projects which made the Cabal of Clifford and his fellows a by-word among Englishmen could never have been laid before a Council of great peers and hereditary officers of State. To Temple therefore the organization of the Council seemed to furnish a check on mere personal government which Parliament was unable to supply. For this purpose the Cabala, or Cabinet, as it was now becoming the fashion to term the confidential committee of the Council, was abolished. The Council itself was restricted to thirty members



and their joint income was not to fall below £300,000, a sum little less than what was estimated as the income of the whole House of Commons. A body of great nobles and proprietors, not too numerous for secret deliberation, and wealthy enough to counterbalance either the Commons or the Crown, would form, Temple hoped, a barrier against the violence and aggression of the one power, and a check on the mere despotism of the other.

SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682

The new Council and the new ministry gave fair hope of a wise and patriotic government. But the difficulties were still great.

The Ex-  
clusion  
Bill



THE LONG GALLERY, HAM HOUSE.

The nation was frenzied with suspicion and panic. The elections to the Parliament had taken place amidst a whirl of excitement which left no place for candidates of the Court. The appointment of the new ministry, indeed, was welcomed with a general burst of joy. But the question of the Succession threw all others into the shade. At the bottom of the national panic lay the dread of a Catholic King, a dread which the after history of James fully justified. Shaftesbury was earnest for the exclusion of James, but as yet the majority of the Council shrank from the step, and



SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682  
*The Bill of  
Securities*

supported a plan which Charles brought forward for preserving the rights of the Duke of York while restraining his powers as sovereign. By this project the presentation to Church livings was to be taken out of his hands on his accession. The last Parliament of the preceding reign was to continue to sit ; and the appointment of all Councillors, Judges, Lord-Lieutenants, and officers in the fleet, was vested in the two Houses so long as a Catholic sovereign was on the throne. The extent of these provisions showed the pressure which Charles felt, but Shaftesbury was undoubtedly right in setting the plan aside as at once insufficient and impracticable. He continued to advocate the Exclusion in the royal Council ; and a bill for depriving James of his right to the Crown, and for devolving it on the next Protestant in the line of succession, was introduced into the Commons by his adherents, and passed the House by a large majority. It was known that Charles would use his influence with the Peers for its rejection, and the Earl therefore fell back on the tactics of Pym. A bold Remonstrance was prepared in the Commons. The City of London was ready with an address to the two Houses in favour of the bill. All Charles could do was to gain time by the prorogation of the Parliament, and by its dissolution in May.

Mon-  
mouth

But delay would have been useless had the Country party remained at one. The temper of the nation and of the House of Commons was so hotly pronounced in favour of the exclusion of the Duke, that union among the ministers must in the end have secured it and spared England the necessity for the Revolution of 1688. The wiser leaders of the Country party, indeed, were already leaning to the very change which that Revolution brought about. If James were passed over, his daughter Mary, the wife of the Prince of Orange, stood next in the order of succession : and the plan of Temple, Essex, and Halifax after the failure of their bill of Securities, was to bring the Prince over to England during the prorogation, to introduce him into the Council, and to pave his way to the throne. Unhappily Shaftesbury was contemplating a very different course. He distrusted the Prince of Orange as a mere adherent of the royal house, and as opposed to any weakening of the royal power or invasion of the royal prerogative. His motive for setting aside William's claims is probably to be found in the

maxim ascribed to him, that "a bad title makes a good king." Whatever were his motives, however, he had resolved to set aside the claims of James and his children, as well as William's own

SEC. V  
SHAFTES  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682



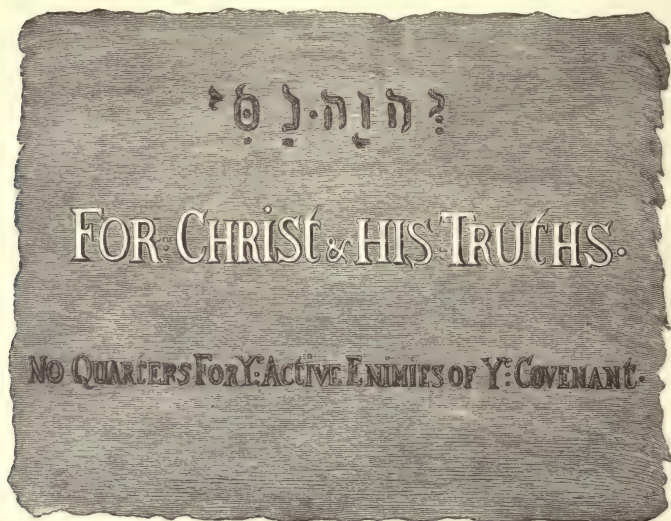
JAMES, DUKE OF MONMOUTH.  
*Picture by Sir Peter Lely at Dalkeith Palace.*

claim, and to place the Duke of Monmouth on the throne. Monmouth was reputed to be the eldest of the King's bastards, a weak and worthless profligate in temper, but popular through his



SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682

personal beauty and his reputation for bravery. The tale was set about of a secret marriage between the King and his mother ; Shaftesbury induced Charles to put the Duke at the head of the troops sent to repress a rising of the Covenanters in the west of Scotland, and on his return pressed the King to give him the com-



BANNER USED BY THE COVENANTERS AT DRUMCLOG AND BOTHWELL BRIG, 1679.

*Napier, "Memoirs of Dundee."*

mand of the Guards, which would have put the only military force possessed by the Crown in Monmouth's hands.

Shaftes-  
bury's  
Second  
Dismissal

Sunderland, Halifax, and Essex, however, were not only steadily opposed to Shaftesbury's project, but saw themselves marked out for ruin in the event of Shaftesbury's success. They had advised the dissolution of the last Parliament ; and the Earl's anger had vented itself in threats that the advisers of the dissolution should pay for it with their heads. The danger came home to them when a sudden illness of the King and the absence of James made Monmouth's accession a possible contingency. The three ministers at once induced Charles to recall the Duke of York ; and though he withdrew to Scotland on the King's recovery, Charles deprived



Monmouth of his charge as Captain-General of the Forces and ordered him like James to leave the realm. Left alone in his cause

SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682



SAMUEL PEPYS.

Imprisoned in the Tower, 1679, during the panic of the Popish Plot.

*Picture by John Hayls, in the National Portrait Gallery.*

by the opposition of his colleagues, Shaftesbury threw himself more and more on the support of the Plot. The prosecution of its



FRANCIS NORTH, LORD GUILFORD, KEEPER OF THE GREAT SEAL, 1680.  
 From an engraving by G. Vertue after David Loggan.



SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682

victims was pushed recklessly on. Three Catholics were hanged in London. Eight priests were put to death in the country. Pursuivants and informers spread terror through every Catholic household. He counted on the reassembling of the Parliament to bring all this terror to bear upon the King. But Charles had already marked the breach which the Earl's policy had made in the ranks of the Country party. He saw that Shaftesbury was unsupported by any of his colleagues save Russell. To Temple, Essex, or Halifax it seemed possible to bring about the succession of Mary without any violent revolution ; but to set aside not only the right of James but the right of his Protestant children, and even of the Prince of Orange, was to ensure a civil war. It was with their full support therefore that Charles deprived Shaftesbury of his post of Lord President of the Council. The dismissal was the signal for a struggle to whose danger Charles was far from blinding himself. What had saved him till now was his cynical courage. In the midst of the terror and panic of the Plot men "wondered to see him quite cheerful amidst such an intricacy of troubles," says the courtly Reresby, "but it was not in his nature to think or perplex himself much about anything." Even in the heat of the tumult which followed on Shaftesbury's dismissal, Charles was seen fishing and sauntering as usual in Windsor Park. But closer observers than Reresby saw beneath this veil of indolent unconcern a consciousness of new danger. "From this time," says Burnet, "his temper was observed to change very visibly." He became in fact "sullen and thoughtful ; he saw that he had to do with a strange sort of people, that could neither be managed nor frightened." But he faced the danger with his old unscrupulous coolness. He reopened secret negotiations with France. Lewis was as alarmed as Charles himself at the warlike temper of the nation, and as anxious to prevent the assembly of a Parliament ; but the terms on which he offered a subsidy were too humiliating even for the King's acceptance. The failure forced him to summon a new Parliament ; and the panic, which Shaftesbury was busily feeding with new tales of massacre and invasion, returned members even more violent than the members of the House he had just dismissed. A host of petitions called on the King to suffer Parliament to meet at the opening of 1680. Even the Council shrank from the King's

Oct. 1679

*Shaftes-  
bury's  
struggle*

SEC. V  
 —  
 SHAFTES-  
 BURY  
 1679  
 TO  
 1682  
 —

proposal to prorogue its assembly to November, 1680, but Charles persisted. Alone as he stood, he was firm in his resolve to gain time, for time, as he saw, was working in his favour. The tide of public sympathy was beginning to turn. The perjury of Oates proved too much at last for the credulity of juries; and the acquittal of four of his victims was a sign that the panic was beginning to ebb. A far stronger proof of this was seen in the immense efforts which Shaftesbury made to maintain it. Fresh informers were brought forward to swear to a plot for the assassination of the Earl himself, and to the share of the Duke of York in the conspiracies of his fellow-religionists. A paper found in a meal-tub was produced as evidence of the new danger. Gigantic torch-light processions paraded the streets of London, and the effigy of the Pope was burnt amidst the wild outcry of a vast multitude.

Peti-  
 tioners  
 and Ab-  
 horres

Acts of yet greater daring showed the lengths to which Shaftesbury was ready to go. He had grown up amidst the tumults of civil war, and, greyheaded as he was, the fire and vehemence of his early days seemed to wake again in the singular recklessness with which he drove on the nation to a struggle in arms. Early in 1680 he formed a committee for promoting agitation throughout the country; and the petitions which it drew up for the assembly of the Parliament were sent to every town and grand jury, and sent back again with thousands of signatures. Monmouth, in spite of the King's orders, returned at Shaftesbury's call to London; and a daring pamphlet pointed him out as the nation's leader in the coming struggle "against Popery and tyranny." So great was the alarm of the Council that the garrison in every fortress was held in readiness for instant war. But the danger was really less than it seemed. The tide of opinion had fairly turned. Acquittal followed acquittal. A reaction of horror and remorse at the cruelty which had hurried victim after victim to the gallows succeeded to the pitiless frenzy which Shaftesbury had fanned into a flame. Anxious as the nation was for a Protestant sovereign, its sense of justice revolted against the wrong threatened to James's Protestant children; and every gentleman in the realm felt insulted at the project of setting Mary aside to put the crown of England on the head of a bastard. The memory too of the Civil War

The  
 re-action



was still fresh and keen, and the rumour of an outbreak of revolt rallied men more and more round the King. The host of petitions which Shaftesbury procured from the counties was answered by a counter host of addresses from thousands who declared their "abhorrence" of the plans against the Crown. The country was divided into two great factions of "petitioners" and "abhorrrers," the germs of the two great parties of "Whigs" and "Tories" which have played so prominent a part in our political history from the time of the Exclusion Bill. Charles at once took advantage of this turn of affairs. He recalled the Duke of York to the Court. He received the resignations of Russell

SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682



MEDAL OF THE DUCHESS OF PORTSMOUTH, 1673.

and Cavendish, as well as of the Earl of Essex, who had at last gone over to Shaftesbury's projects "with all his heart." Shaftesbury met defiance with defiance. Followed by a crowd of his adherents he attended before the Grand Jury of Middlesex, to indict the Duke of York as a Catholic recusant, and the King's mistress, the Duchess of Portsmouth, as a national nuisance, while Monmouth made a progress through the country, and gained favour everywhere by his winning demeanour. Above all, Shaftesbury relied on the temper of the Commons, elected as they had been in the very heat of the panic and irritated by the long delay in calling them together. The first act of the House on meeting in

SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682

October was to vote that their care should be "to suppress Popery and prevent a Popish successor." Rumours of a Catholic plot in Ireland were hardly needed to push the Exclusion Bill through the Commons without a division. So resolute was the temper of



GEORGE SAVILE, VISCOUNT HALIFAX.

*From an engraving by Houbraken of a picture in the possession of Sir George Savile.*

the Lower House that even Temple and Essex now gave their adhesion to it as a necessity, and Sunderland himself wavered towards accepting it. Halifax, whose ability and eloquence had now brought him fairly to the front, opposed it resolutely



and successfully in the Lords; but Halifax was only the mouthpiece of William. "My Lord Halifax is entirely in the interest of the Prince of Orange," the French ambassador, Barillon, wrote to his master, "and what he seems to be doing for the Duke of York is really in order to make an opening for a compromise by which the Prince of Orange may benefit." The Exclusion Bill once rejected, Halifax followed up the blow by bringing forward a plan of Protestant securities, which would have taken from James on his accession the right of veto on any bill passed by the two Houses, the right of negotiating with foreign states, or of appointing either civil or military officers save with the consent of Parliament. This plan also was no doubt prompted by the Prince of Orange; and the States of Holland supported it by pressing Charles to come to an accommodation with his subjects which would enable them to check the perpetual aggressions which France was making on her neighbours.

But if the Lords would have no Exclusion Bill the Commons with as good reason would have no Securities Bill. They felt—as one of the members for London fairly put it—that such securities would break down at the very moment they were needed. A Catholic king, should he ever come to the throne, would have other forces besides those in England to back him. "The Duke rules over Scotland; the Irish and the English Papists will follow him; he will be obeyed by the officials of high and low rank whom the King has appointed; he will be just such a king as he thinks good." Shaftesbury however was far from resting in a merely negative position. He made a despairing effort to do the work of exclusion by a Bill of Divorce, which would have enabled Charles to put away his Queen on the ground of barrenness, and by a fresh marriage to give a Protestant heir to the throne. The Earl was perhaps already sensible of a change in public feeling, and this he resolved to check and turn by a great public impeachment which would revive and establish the general belief in the Plot. Lord Stafford, who from his age and rank was looked on as the leader of the Catholic party, had lain a prisoner in the Tower since the first outburst of popular frenzy. He was now solemnly impeached; and his trial in December 1680 mustered the whole force of informers to prove the truth of a Catholic conspiracy

SEC. V

SHAFTES-  
BURY

1679

TO

1682

*William  
and the  
Exclusion*

1680

*The  
Oxford  
Parlia-  
ment**Trial of  
Lord  
Stafford*

SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682

against the King and the realm. The evidence was worthless ; but the trial revived, as Shaftesbury had hoped, much of the old panic, and the condemnation of the prisoner by a majority of his peers was followed by his death on the scaffold. The blow produced its effect on all but Charles. Sunderland again pressed the King to give way. But deserted as he was by his ministers, and even by his mistress, for the Duchess of Portsmouth had been cowed into supporting the exclusion by the threats of Shaftesbury, Charles was determined to resist. On the coupling of a grant



PARADE OF MILITIA AT ABERGWILI.

*T. Dineley, "Progress of the Duke of Beaufort through Wales," 1684.*

of supplies with demands for a voice in the appointment of officers of the royal garrisons he prorogued the Parliament. The truth was that he was again planning an alliance with France. With characteristic subtlety, however, he dissolved the existing  
1681 Parliament, and called a new one to meet in March. The act was a mere blind. The King's aim was to frighten the country into reaction by the dread of civil strife ; and his summons of the Parliament to Oxford was an appeal to the country against the disloyalty of the capital, and an adroit means of reviving the



memories of the Civil War. With the same end he ordered his guards to accompany him, on the pretext of anticipated disorder ; and Shaftesbury, himself terrified at the projects of the Court, aided the King's designs by appearing with his followers in arms on the plea of self-protection. Monmouth renewed his progresses through the country. Riots broke out in London. Revolt seemed at hand, and Charles hastened to conclude his secret negotiations with France. He verbally pledged himself to a policy of peace, in other words to withdrawal from any share in the Grand Alliance which William was building up, while Lewis promised a small subsidy which with the natural growth of the royal revenue sufficed to render Charles, if he remained at peace, independent of Parliamentary aids. The violence of the new Parliament played yet more effectually into the King's hands. The members of the House of Commons were the same as those who had been returned to the Parliaments he had just dissolved, and their temper was naturally embittered by the two dissolutions. Their rejection of a new Limitation Bill brought forward by Halifax, which while granting James the title of King would have vested the actual functions of government in the Prince and Princess of Orange, alienated the more moderate and sensible of the Country party. The attempt of the Lower House to revive the panic by impeaching an informer named Fitzharris before the House of Lords, in defiance of the constitutional rule which entitled him as a commoner to a trial by his peers in the course of common law, did still more to throw public opinion on the side of the Crown. Shaftesbury's course, in fact, went wholly on a belief that the penury of the Treasury left Charles at his mercy, and that a refusal of supplies must wring from the King his assent to the Exclusion. But the gold of France had freed the King from his thralldom. He had used the Parliament simply to exhibit himself as a sovereign whose patience and conciliatory temper was rewarded with insult and violence ; and now that his end was accomplished, he no sooner saw the Exclusion Bill re-introduced, than he suddenly dissolved the Houses after a month's sitting, and appealed in a royal declaration to the justice of the nation at large.

The appeal was met by an almost universal burst of loyalty. The Church rallied to the King ; his declaration was read from

SEC. V

SHAFTES-

BURY

1679

TO

1682

*Charles  
turns to  
France*

Shaftes-  
bury's  
Death

SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682

every pulpit; and the Universities solemnly decided that "no religion, no law, no fault, no forfeiture," could avail to bar the sacred right of hereditary succession. The arrest of Shaftesbury on a charge of suborning false witnesses to the Plot marked the new strength of the Crown. London indeed was still true to him; the Middlesex Grand Jury ignored the bill of his indictment; and his discharge from the Tower was welcomed in every street with bonfires and ringing of bells. But a fresh impulse was given to the loyal enthusiasm of the country at large by the publication of a plan said to have been found among his papers, the plan of a secret association for the furtherance of the Exclusion, whose members bound themselves to obey the orders of Parliament even after its



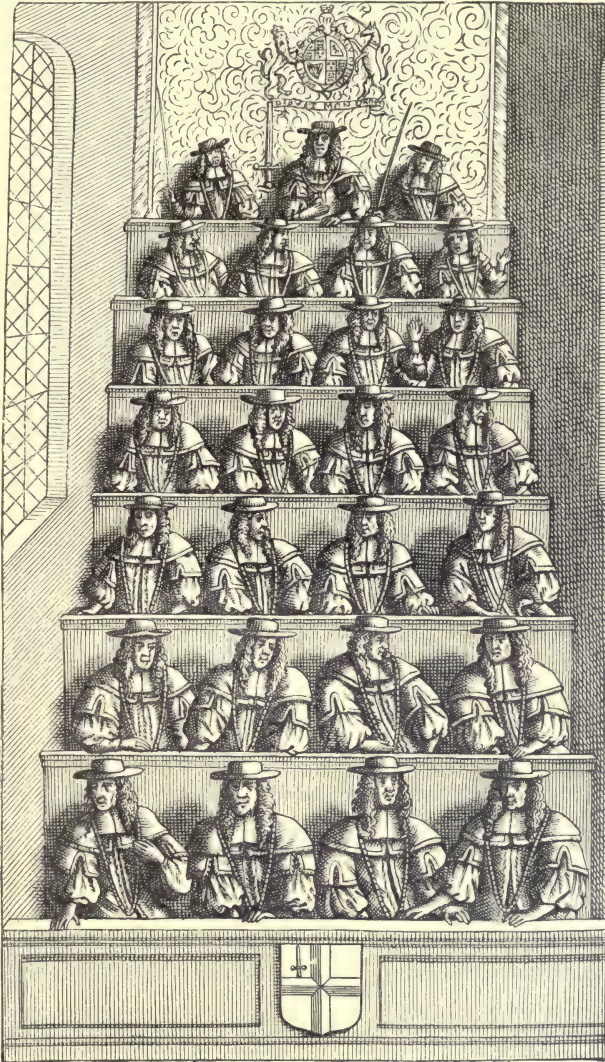
MEDAL STRUCK TO COMMEMORATE SHAFTESBURY'S ACQUITTAL, 1681.

prorogation or dissolution by the Crown. So general was the reaction that Halifax advised the calling of a new Parliament in the belief that it would be a loyal one. William of Orange too visited England to take advantage of the turn of affairs to pin Charles to the policy of the Alliance; but the King met both counsels with evasion. He pushed boldly on in his new course. He confirmed the loyalty of the Church by a renewed persecution of the Nonconformists, which drove Penn from England and thus brought about the settlement of Pennsylvania as a refuge for his fellow Quakers. He was soon strong enough to call back James to Court. Monmouth, who had resumed his progresses through the country as a means of checking the tide of reaction, was arrested.



The friendship of a Tory mayor secured the nomination of Tory sheriffs in London, and the juries they packed left the life of every

SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682



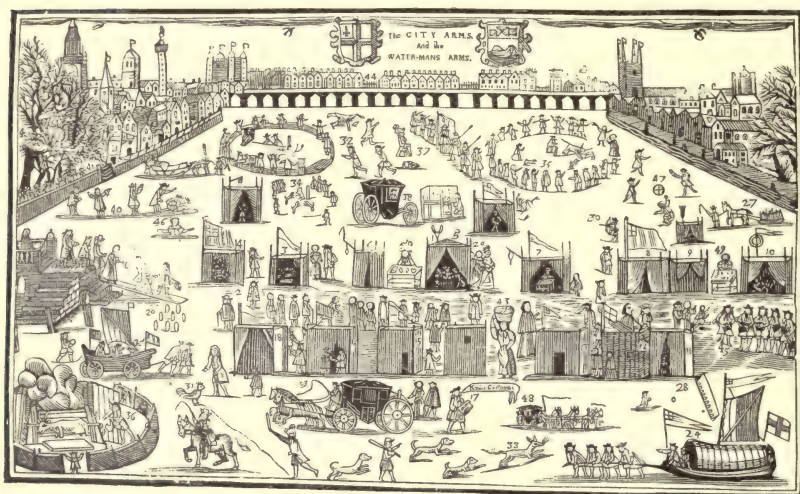
*The Lord Mayor & Court Of Aldermen*

*Frontispiece to De Laune, "Present State of London," 1681.*

Exclusionist at the mercy of the Crown. Shaftesbury, alive to the new danger, plunged madly into conspiracies with a handful of

SEC. V  
SHAFTES-  
BURY  
1679  
TO  
1682  
Jan. 1683

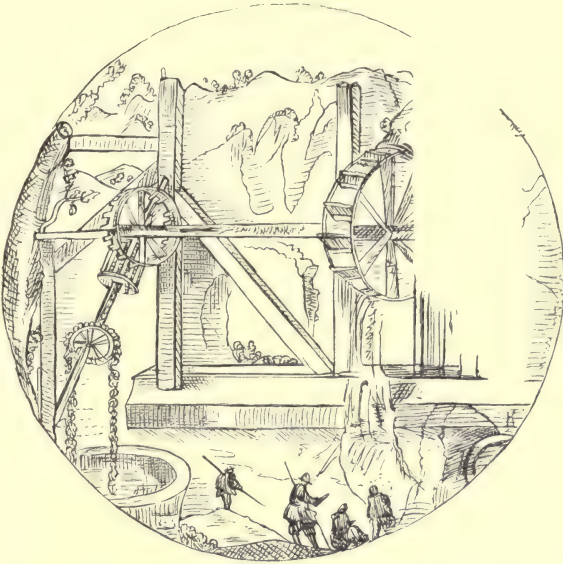
adventurers as desperate as himself, hid himself in the City, where he boasted that ten thousand "brisk boys" were ready to appear at his call, and urged his friends to rise in arms. But their delays drove him to flight; and two months after his arrival in Holland, the soul of the great leader, great from his immense energy and the wonderful versatility of his genius, but whose genius and energy had ended in wrecking for the time the fortunes of English freedom, and in associating the noblest of causes with the vilest of crimes, found its first quiet in death.



FROST FAIR ON THAMES, 1683.  
*Broadside in British Museum.*



SEC. VI  
 THE  
 SECOND  
 STUART  
 TYRANNY  
 1682  
 TO  
 1688



LEAD AND COAL MINES AT MOSTYN, 1684.

*T. Dineley, "Progress of the Duke of Beaufort through Wales," 1684.*

### Section VI.—The Second Stuart Tyranny, 1682—1688

[*Authorities.*—To those given before we may add Welwood's "Memoirs," Luttrell's "Diary," and above all Lord Macaulay's "History of England."]

The flight of Shaftesbury proclaimed the triumph of the King. His marvellous sagacity had told him when the struggle was over and further resistance useless. But the country leaders, who had delayed to answer the Earl's call, still believed opposition possible; and Monmouth, with Lord Essex, Lord Howard of Ettrick, Lord Russell, Hampden, and Algernon Sidney held meetings with the view of founding an association whose agitation should force on the King the assembly of a Parliament. The more desperate spirits who had clustered round him as he lay hidden in the City took refuge in plots of assassination, and in a plan for murdering Charles

The  
 Royal  
 Triumph

SEC. VI  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682  
TO  
1688

*Rye-house  
Plot*

and his brother as they passed the Rye-house on their road from London to Newmarket. Both projects were betrayed, and though they were wholly distinct from one another the cruel ingenuity of



WILLIAM, LORD RUSSELL.

*From an engraving by Pieter van der Banck, after Sir Godfrey Kneller.*

the Crown lawyers blended them into one. Lord Essex saved himself from a traitor's death by suicide in the Tower. Lord Russell, convicted on a charge of sharing in the Rye-house plot, was beheaded in Lincoln's Inn Fields. The same fate awaited

Algernon Sidney. Monmouth fled in terror over sea, and his flight was followed by a series of prosecutions for sedition directed against his followers. In 1683 the Constitutional opposition which had held Charles so long in check lay crushed at his feet. A weaker man might easily have been led into a wild tyranny by the mad outburst of loyalty which greeted his triumph. On the very day when the crowd around Russell's scaffold were dipping their handkerchiefs in his blood, as in the blood of a martyr, the University of Oxford solemnly declared that the doctrine of passive obedience, even to the worst of rulers, was a part of religion. But Charles saw that immense obstacles still lay in the road of a mere tyranny. The great Tory party which had rallied to his succour against the Exclusionists were still steady for parliamentary and legal government. The Church was as powerful as ever, and the mention of a renewal of the Indulgence to Nonconformists had to be withdrawn before the opposition of the bishops. He was careful therefore during the few years which remained to him to avoid the appearance of any open violation of public law. He suspended no statute. He imposed no tax by royal authority. Nothing indeed shows more completely how great a work the Long Parliament had done than a survey of the reign of Charles the Second. "The King," Hallam says very truly, "was restored to nothing but what the law had preserved to him." No attempt was made to restore the abuses which the patriots of 1641 had swept away. Parliament was continually summoned. In spite of its frequent refusal of supplies, no attempt was ever made to raise money by unconstitutional means. The few illegal proclamations issued under Clarendon ceased with his fall. No effort was made to revive the Star Chamber and the Court of High Commission; and if judges were servile and juries sometimes packed, there was no open interference with the course of justice. In two remarkable points freedom had made an advance even on 1641. From the moment when printing began to tell on public opinion, it had been gagged by a system of licences. The regulations framed under Henry the Eighth subjected the press to the control of the Star Chamber, and the Martin Marprelate libels brought about a yet more stringent control under Elizabeth. Even the Long Parliament laid a heavy hand on the press, and the great remonstrance of

SEC. VI  
—  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY  
1682  
TO  
1688  
—

*Freedom  
of the  
Press*



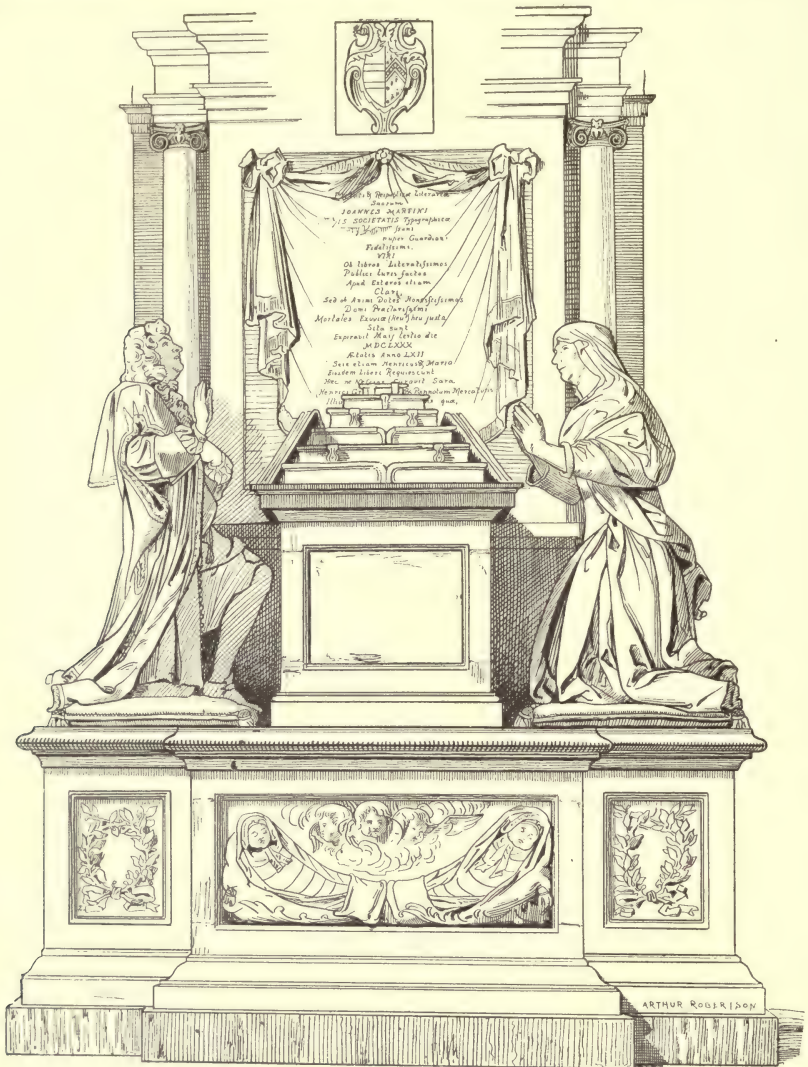
## SEC. VI

THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682

TO  
1688

Milton in his "Areopagitica" fell dead on the ears of his Puritan associates. But the statute for the regulation of printing which



MONUMENT OF JOHN MARTIN, PRINTER, 1680.

*In Crypt of S. Paul's Cathedral.*

was passed immediately after the Restoration expired finally in 1679, and the temper of the Parliament at once put an end to any attempt at re-establishing the censorship. To the new freedom of

the press the Habeas Corpus Act added a new security for the personal freedom of every Englishman. Against arbitrary imprisonment provision had been made in the earliest ages by a famous clause in the Great Charter. No free man could be held in prison save on charge or conviction of crime or for debt, and every prisoner on a criminal charge could demand as a right from the Court of King's Bench the issue of a writ of "habeas corpus," which bound his gaoler to produce both the prisoner and the warrant on which he was imprisoned, that the court might judge whether he was imprisoned according to law. In cases however of imprisonment on a warrant of the royal Council it had been sometimes held by judges that the writ could not be issued, and under Clarendon's administration instances had in this way occurred of imprisonment without legal remedy. But his fall was quickly followed by the introduction of a bill to secure this right of the subject, and after a long struggle the Act which is known as the Habeas Corpus Act passed finally in 1679. By this great statute the old practice of the law was freed from all difficulties and exceptions. Every prisoner committed for any crime save treason or felony was declared entitled to his writ even in the vacations of the courts, and heavy penalties were enforced on judges or gaolers who refused him this right. Every person committed for felony or treason was entitled to be released on bail, unless indicted at the next session of gaol delivery after his commitment, and to be discharged if not indicted at the sessions which followed. It was forbidden under the heaviest penalties to send a prisoner into any places or fortresses beyond the seas.

SEC. VI

THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682

TO

1688

*Habeas  
Corpus  
Act*

Galling to the Crown as the freedom of the press and the Habeas Corpus Act were soon found to be, Charles made no attempt to curtail the one or to infringe the other. But while cautious to avoid rousing popular resistance, he moved coolly and resolutely forward on the path of despotism. It was in vain that Halifax pressed for energetic resistance to the aggressions of France, for the recall of Monmouth, or for the calling of a fresh Parliament. Like every other English statesman he found he had been duped, and that now his work was done he was suffered to remain in office but left without any influence in the government. Hyde, who was created Earl of Rochester, still remained at the head

Death of  
Charles





"THE ABOLITION OF MONARCHY."  
*Nelson, "Collection of Affairs of State," 1683.*



of the Treasury ; but Charles soon gave more of his confidence to the supple and acute Sunderland. Parliament, in defiance of the Triennial Act, which after having been repealed had been re-enacted but without the safeguards of the original act, remained un assembled during the remainder of the King's reign. His secret alliance with France furnished Charles with the funds he immediately required, and the rapid growth of the customs through the increase of English commerce promised to give him a revenue which, if peace were preserved, would save him from the need of a fresh appeal to the Commons. All opposition was at an end. The strength of the Country party had been broken by its own dissensions over the Exclusion Bill, and by the flight or death of its more prominent leaders. Whatever strength it retained lay chiefly in

the towns, and these were now attacked by writs of "quo warranto," which called on them to show cause why their charters should not be declared forfeited on the ground of abuse of their privileges. A few verdicts on the side of the Crown brought about a general surrender of municipal liberties ; and the grant of fresh charters, in which all but ultra-loyalists were carefully excluded from their corporations, placed the representation of the boroughs in the hands

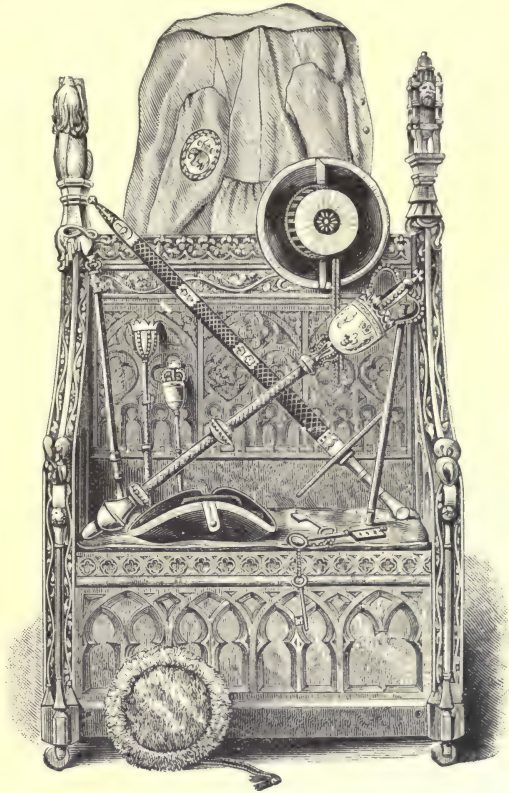
SEC. VI

THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682

TO

1688



INSIGNIA OF THE CORPORATION OF COVENTRY.

Seventeenth Century.

*Art Journal.**New  
Town  
Charters*

SEC. VI  
—  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

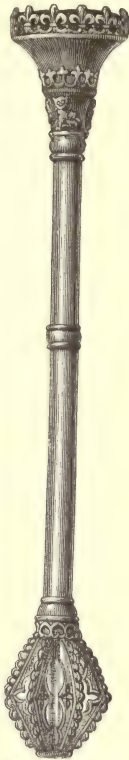
1682  
TO  
1688  
—

of the Crown. Against active discontent Charles had long been quietly providing by the gradual increase of his Guards. The withdrawal of its garrison from Tangier enabled him to raise their force to nine thousand well-equipped soldiers, and to supplement



MACE,  
SOUTHAMPTON.  
Temp. Henry VII.

*Proceedings of Society of Antiquaries.*



MACE, NEWTOWN  
(ISLE OF WIGHT).  
Temp. Henry VII.



MACES, STAMFORD  
Temp. Charles II.

*Art Journal.*



this force, the nucleus of our present standing army, by a reserve of six regiments, which were maintained till they should be needed at home at the service of the United Provinces. But great as the danger really was, it lay not so much in isolated acts of tyranny as in the character and purpose of Charles himself. His death at the

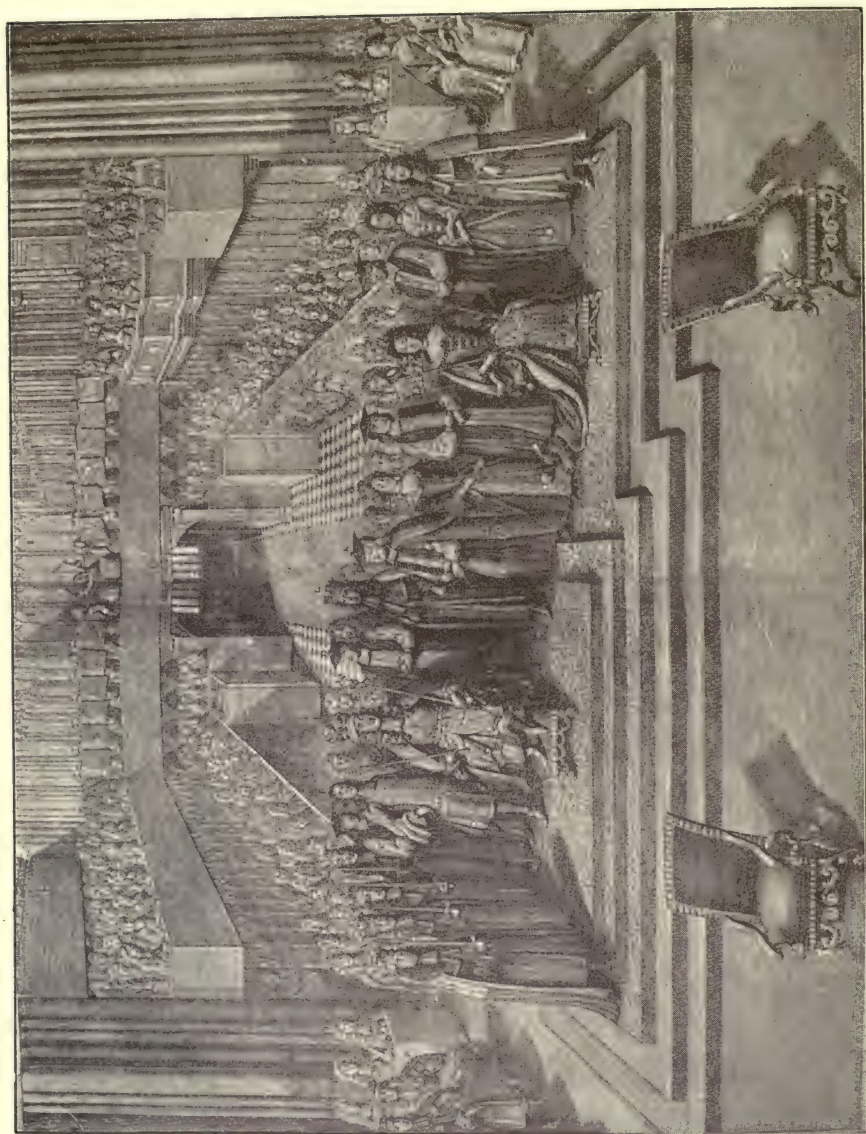
Charles

Right Reverend Father in God and Trustee,  
and Welbelov'd We greet you well. Whereas  
We have receiv'd information of the factious  
and disloyall behaviour of <sup>John</sup> Locke  
one of the Students of that Our Colledge; We  
have thought fit hereby to signify Our Will  
and Pleasure to you that you forthwith  
remove him from his said Students Place  
and deprive him of all the Rights and  
Advantages thereunto belonging For  
which this shall be your Warrant And  
We bid you heartily Farewell. Given  
at Our Court at Whitehall the 11<sup>th</sup> day  
of November 1684 in the Six & thirtieth  
yeare of Our Reigne.

By his Majesty's command  
Gunderbaril

Chapter of Christ Church.





ENTHRONEMENT OF JAMES II. AND HIS QUEEN.  
*Saunders, "Coronation of James II.," 1687.*

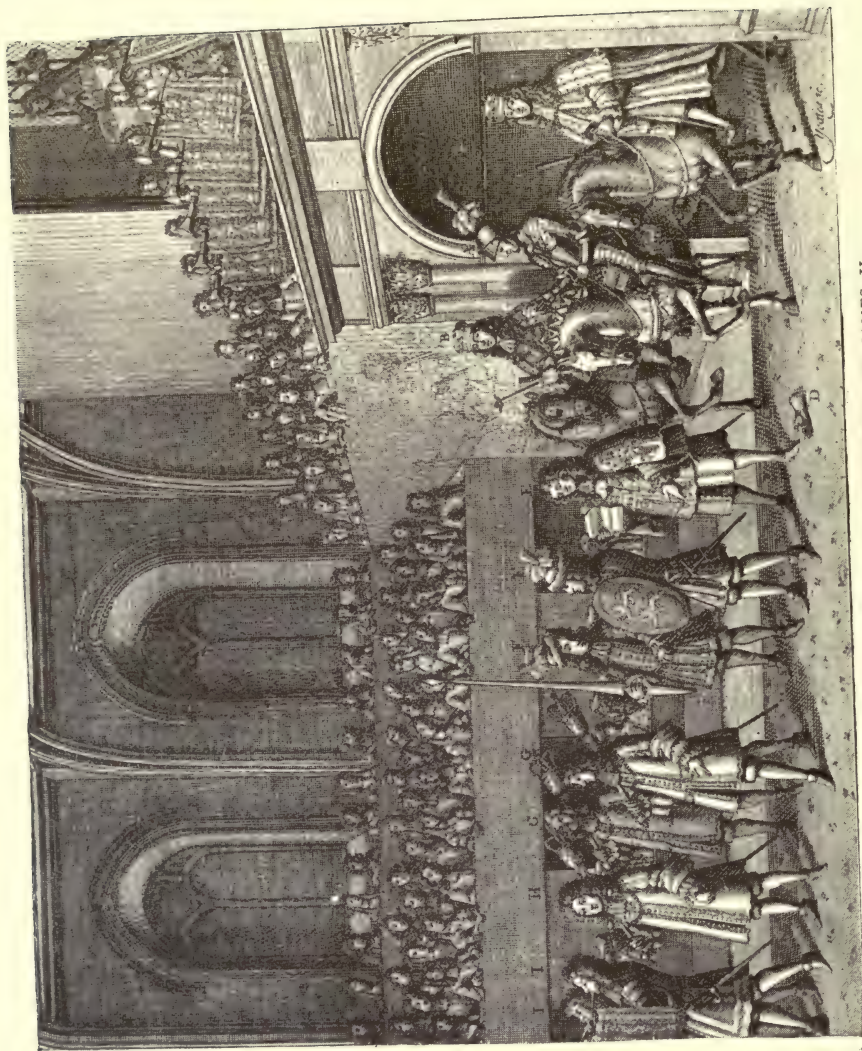
very moment of his triumph saved English freedom. He had regained his old popularity, and at the news of his sickness crowds thronged the churches, praying that God would raise him up again to be a father to his people. But the one anxiety of the King was to die reconciled to the Catholic Church. His chamber was cleared and a priest named Huddleston, who had saved his life after the battle of Worcester, received his confession and administered the last sacraments. Not a word of this ceremony was whispered when the nobles and bishops were recalled into the royal presence. All the children of his mistresses save Monmouth were gathered round the bed. Charles "blessed all his children one by one, pulling them on to his bed; and then the bishops moved him, as he was the Lord's anointed and the father of his country, to bless them also and all that were there present, and in them the general body of his subjects. Whereupon, the room being full, all fell down upon their knees, and he raised himself in his bed and very solemnly blessed them all." The strange comedy was at last over. Charles died as he had lived: brave, witty, cynical, even in the presence of death. Tortured as he was with pain, he begged the bystanders to forgive him for being so unconscionable a time in dying. One mistress, the Duchess of Portsmouth, hung weeping over his bed. His last thought was of another mistress, Nell Gwynn. "Do not," he whispered to his successor ere he sank into a fatal stupor, "do not let poor Nelly starve!"

SEC. VI  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY  
1682  
TO  
1688  
1685

The first words of James on his accession in February 1685, his promise "to preserve the Government both in Church and State as it is now by law established," were welcomed by the whole country with enthusiasm. All the suspicions of a Catholic sovereign seemed to have disappeared. "We have the word of a King!" ran the general cry, "and of a King who was never worse than his word." The conviction of his brother's faithlessness stood James in good stead. He was looked upon as narrow, impetuous, stubborn, and despotic in heart, but even his enemies did not accuse him of being false. Above all he was believed to be keenly alive to the honour of his country, and resolute to free it from foreign dependence. It was necessary to summon a Parliament, for the royal revenue ceased with the death of Charles; but the

James  
the  
Second





THE CHALLENGE AT THE CORONATION OF JAMES II.  
*Saunders, "Coronation of James II.," 1687.*



elections, swayed at once by the tide of loyalty and by the command of the boroughs which the surrender of their charters had

SEC. VI

THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY  
1682  
TO  
1688



JAMES II.

*Illumination on Patent in Public Record Office.*

given to the Crown, sent up a House of Commons in which James found few members who were not to his mind. The question of religious security was waived at a hint of the royal displeasure.

SEC. VI

THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682

TO  
1688*Argyll's  
rising**Mon-  
mouth's  
rising*

A revenue of nearly two millions was granted to the King for life. All that was wanted to rouse the loyalty of the country into fanaticism was supplied by a rebellion in the North, and by another under Monmouth in the West. The hopes of Scotch freedom had clung ever since the Restoration to the house of Argyll. The great Marquis, indeed, had been brought to the block at the King's return. His son, the Earl of Argyll, had been unable to save himself even by a life of singular caution and obedience from the ill-will of the vile politicians who governed Scotland. He was at last convicted of treason in 1682 on grounds at which every English statesman stood aghast. "We should not hang a dog here," Halifax protested, "on the grounds on which my lord Argyll has been sentenced to death." The Earl escaped however to Holland, and lived peacefully there during the last years of the reign of Charles. Monmouth had found the same refuge at the Hague, where a belief in the King's purpose to recall him secured him a kindly reception from William of Orange. But the accession of James was a death-blow to the hopes of the Duke, while it stirred the fanaticism of Argyll to a resolve of wresting Scotland from the rule of a Catholic king. The two leaders determined to appear in arms in England and the North, and the two expeditions sailed within a few days of each other. Argyll's attempt was soon over. His clan of the Campbells rose on his landing in Cantyre, but the country had been occupied for the King, and quarrels among the exiles who accompanied him robbed his effort of every chance of success. His force scattered without a fight; and Argyll, arrested in an attempt to escape, was hurried to a traitor's death. Monmouth for a time found brighter fortune. His popularity in the West was great, and though the gentry held aloof when he landed at Lyme, and demanded effective parliamentary government and freedom of worship for Protestant Nonconformists, the farmers and traders of Devonshire and Dorset flocked to his standard. The clothier-towns of Somerset were true to the Whig cause, and on the entrance of the Duke into Taunton the popular enthusiasm showed itself in flowers which wreathed every door, as well as in a train of young girls who presented Monmouth with a Bible and a flag. His forces now amounted to six thousand men, but whatever chance of success he might have had was lost by his

assumption of the title of king. The Houses supported James, and passed a bill of attainder against the Duke. The gentry, still true to the cause of Mary and of William, held stubbornly aloof; while the Guards hurried to the scene of the revolt, and the militia gathered to the royal standard. Foiled in an attempt on Bristol and Bath, Monmouth fell back on Bridgewater, and flung himself

SEC. VI  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY  
1682  
TO  
1688



BRIDGEWATER HIGH CROSS.

*Proceedings of Somerset Archæological Society.*

in the night of the sixth of July, 1685, on the King's forces, which lay encamped on Sedgemoor. The surprise failed; and the brave peasants and miners who followed the Duke, checked in their advance by a deep drain which crossed the moor, were broken after a short resistance by the royal horse. Their leader fled from the field, and after a vain effort to escape from the realm, was captured and sent pitilessly to the block.

Never had England shown a firmer loyalty; but its loyalty was changed into horror by the terrible measures of repression

The  
Bloody  
Circuit



SEC. VI

THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682

TO

1688

which followed on the victory of Sedgemoor. Even North, the Lord Keeper, a servile tool of the Crown, protested against the



SCYTHES PICKED UP AT SEDGEMOOR; USED AS WEAPONS BY THE PEASANTS.  
*Tower of London.*

licence and bloodshed in which the troops were suffered to indulge after the battle. His protest however was disregarded, and he withdrew broken-hearted from the Court to die. James was, in fact, resolved on a far more terrible vengeance; and the Chief-



BATTLE OF SEDGEMOOR.  
*"Engelants Schouwtooneel," &c., Amsterdam, 1690.*

Justice Jeffreys, a man of great natural powers but of violent temper, was sent to earn the Seals by a series of judicial murders which have left his name a byword for cruelty. Three hundred and fifty rebels were hanged in the "Bloody Circuit," as Jeffreys made his way through Dorset and Somerset. More than eight

hundred were sold into slavery beyond sea. A yet larger number were whipped and imprisoned. The Queen, the maids of honour, the courtiers, even the Judge himself, made shameless profit from the sale of pardons. What roused pity above all were the cruelties wreaked upon women. Some were scourged from market-town to market-town. Mrs. Lisle, the wife of one of the Regicides, was

SEC. VI  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY  
1682  
TO  
1688



LORD JEFFREYS AS CHIEF JUSTICE.

*From an engraving by R. White, after Sir Godfrey Kneller.*

sent to the block at Winchester for harbouring a rebel. Elizabeth Gaunt, for the same act of womanly charity, was burned at Tyburn. Pity turned into horror when it was found that cruelty such as this was avowed and sanctioned by the King. Even the cold heart of General Churchill, to whose energy the victory of Sedgemoor had mainly been owing, revolted at the ruthlessness with which James turned away from all appeals for mercy. "This marble," he cried as he struck the chimney-piece on which he leant, "is not harder





*The Duke of York's Horse Guard.*

“THE DUKE OF YORK'S HORSE GUARDS.”  
*From Hollar's engraving of the Coronation Procession of Charles II.*



than the King's heart." But it was soon plain that the terror which the butchery was meant to strike into the people was part of a larger purpose. The revolt was made a pretext for a vast increase of the standing army. Charles, as we have seen, had silently and cautiously raised it to nearly ten thousand men ; James raised it at one swoop to twenty thousand. The employment of this force was to be at home, not abroad, for the hope of an English policy in foreign affairs had already faded away. In the designs which James had at heart he could look for no consent from Parliament ; and however his pride revolted against a dependence on France, it was only by French gold and French soldiers that he could hope to hold the Parliament permanently at bay. A week therefore after his accession he assured Lewis that his gratitude and devotion to him equalled that of Charles himself. "Tell your master," he said to the French ambassador, "that without his protection I can do nothing. He has a right to be consulted, and it is my wish to consult him, about everything." The pledge of subserviency was rewarded with the promise of a subsidy, and the promise was received with the strongest expressions of delight and servility.

Never had the secret league with France seemed so full of danger to English religion. Europe had long been trembling at the ambition of Lewis ; it was trembling now at his bigotry. He had proclaimed warfare against civil liberty in his attack upon

SEC. VI  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY  
1682  
TO  
1688

The  
Tyranny



MEDAL OF LOUIS XIV. COMMEMORATING REVOCATION OF EDICT  
OF NANTES, 1685.

Holland ; he declared war at this moment upon religious freedom by revoking the Edict of Nantes, the measure by which Henry

SEC. VI  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682  
TO  
1688

the Fourth after his abandonment of Protestantism secured toleration and the free exercise of their worship for his Protestant subjects. It had been respected by Richelieu even in his victory over



HOUSE OF HUGUENOT SILK-WEAVER, CANTERBURY.

the Huguenots, and only lightly tampered with by Mazarin. But from the beginning of his reign Lewis had resolved to set aside its provisions, and his revocation of it in 1685 was only the natural

close of a progressive system of persecution. The Revocation was followed by outrages more cruel than even the bloodshed of Alva. Dragoons were quartered on Protestant families, women were flung from their sick-beds into the streets, children were torn from their mothers' arms to be brought up in Catholicism, ministers were sent

SEC. VI  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY  
1682  
TO  
1688



STAMPING CALICO.

Temp. James II.

Bagford Collection, British Museum.

to the galleys. In spite of the royal edicts, which forbade even flight to the victims of these horrible atrocities, a hundred thousand Protestants fled over the borders, and Holland, Switzerland, the Palatinate, were filled with French exiles. Thousands found refuge in England, and their industry founded in the fields east of London the silk trade of Spitalfields. But while Englishmen were





POPE INNOCENT XI. RECEIVING THE AMBASSADOR OF JAMES II., 1687.  
*Wright, "Account of the Earl of Castlemaine's Embassy." 1688.*

looking with horror on these events in France, James drew from them new hopes. In defiance of the law he was filling his fresh regiments with Catholic officers. He dismissed Halifax from the Privy Council on his refusal to consent to a plan for repealing the Test Act. He met the Parliament with a haughty declaration that whether legal or no his grant of commissions to Catholics must not be questioned, and with a demand of supplies for his new troops. Loyal as was the temper of the Houses, their alarm for the Church, their dread of a standing army, was yet stronger than their loyalty. The Commons by the majority of a single vote deferred the grant of supplies till grievances were redressed, and demanded in their address the recall of the illegal commissions. The Lords took a bolder tone ; and the protest of the bishops against any infringement of the Test Act was backed by the eloquence of Halifax. But both Houses were at once prorogued. The King resolved to obtain from the judges what he could not obtain from Parliament. He remodelled the bench by dismissing four judges who refused to lend themselves to his plans ; and their successors decided in the case of Sir Edward Hales, a Catholic officer in the army, that a royal dispensation could be pleaded in bar of the Test Act. The principle laid down by the judges asserted the right of the King to dispense with penal laws according to his own judgment, and it was applied by James with a reckless impatience of all decency and self-restraint. Catholics were admitted into civil and military offices without stint, and four Catholic peers were sworn as members of the Privy Council. The laws which forbade the presence of Catholic priests in the realm, or the open exercise of Catholic worship, were set at nought. A gorgeous chapel was opened in the palace of St. James for the worship of the King. Carmelites, Benedictines, Franciscans, appeared in their religious garb in the streets of London, and the Jesuits set up a crowded school in the Savoy.

SEC. VI

THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682

TO  
1688

1686

*The  
Test Act  
set aside*

The quick growth of discontent at these acts would have startled a wiser man into prudence, but James prided himself on an obstinacy which never gave way ; and a riot which took place on the opening of a fresh Catholic chapel in the City was followed by the establishment of a camp of thirteen thousand men at Hounslow to overawe the capital. The course which James intended to

James  
and the  
Church



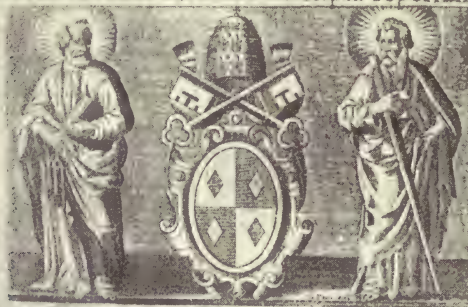
GRADVALE  
ROMANVM  
IVXTA MISSALE  
EX DECRETO SACRO-SANCTI  
Concilij Tridentini.

PII. V. PONT. MAX. JUSSU EDITUM,  
ET

CLEMENTIS VIII. PRIMVM,  
NUNC DENUO,  
VRBANI PAPÆ OCTAVI  
AVCTORITATE RECOGNITVM.  
Cujus Sanctitas, ne vetus Graduale recuda-  
tur, gravi interminatione sanxit.

Cui additus est Cantus Missarum omnium votivarum, qui antehac desiderabatur: item  
Cantus & Modulationes Kyriales, Hymni Angelici, Symboli Apostolorum,  
ac omnium præterea quæ in singulis Missis passim decantari solent.

Adjecta sunt tandem, Sanctorum omnium Officia, quorum no-  
mina in Calendario Romano descripta reperiuntur.



LUTETIÆ PARISIORUM  
Apud CLAUDIUM JOSSE, viâ Jacobæa sub signo  
Columbarum.

M. DC. LXVIII  
CUM APPROBATIONE:

*Die 21. Augusti 1678  
Ecclesie Metrop. S. Patricii Capitulo Dono dedit  
Joh. Archiep. Caputensis.*



follow in England was shown by the course he was following in the sister kingdoms. In Scotland he acted as a pure despot. He placed its government in the hands of two lords, Melfort and Perth, who had embraced his own religion, and put a Catholic in command of the Castle of Edinburgh. The Scotch Parliament had as yet been the mere creature of the Crown, but servile as were its members there was a point at which their servility stopped. When James boldly required them to legalize the toleration of Catholics, they refused to pass such an Act. It was in vain that the King tempted them to consent by the offer of a free trade with England. "Shall we sell our God?" was the indignant reply. James at once ordered the Scotch judges to treat all laws against Catholics as null and void, and his orders were obeyed. In Ireland his policy threw off even the disguise of law. Catholics were admitted by the King's command to the Council and to civil offices. A Catholic, Lord Tyrconnell, was put at

SEC. VI

THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682

TO  
1688

SATIRICAL PLAYING-CARD.

Temp. James II.

British Museum.

the head of the army, and set instantly about its re-organization by cashiering Protestant officers and by admitting two thousand Catholic natives into its ranks. Meanwhile James had begun in England a bold and systematic attack upon the Church. He regarded his ecclesiastical supremacy as a weapon providentially left to him for undoing the work which it had enabled his predecessors

SEC. VI  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682  
TO  
1688

*The High  
Commission*  
1686

to do. Under Henry and Elizabeth it had been used to turn the Church of England from Catholic to Protestant. Under James it should be used to turn it back again from Protestant to Catholic. The High Commission indeed had been declared illegal by an Act of the Long Parliament, and this Act had been confirmed by the Parliament of the Restoration. But it was thought possible to evade this Act by omitting from the instructions on which the Commission acted the extraordinary powers and jurisdictions by which its predecessor had given offence. With this reserve, seven commissioners were appointed for the government of the Church, with Jeffreys at their head ; and the first blow of the Commission was at the Bishop of London. James had forbidden the clergy to preach against "the King's religion," and ordered Bishop Compton to suspend a London vicar who set this order at defiance. The Bishop's refusal was punished by his own suspension. But the pressure of the Commission only drove the clergy to a bolder defiance of the royal will. Sermons against superstition were preached from every pulpit ; and the two most famous divines of the day, Tillotson and Stillingfleet, put themselves at the head of a host of controversialists who scattered pamphlets and tracts from every printing press.

**Declara-  
tion of  
Indul-  
gence**

It was in vain that the bulk of the Catholic gentry stood aloof and predicted the inevitable reaction his course must bring about, or that Rome itself counselled greater moderation. James was infatuated with what seemed to be the success of his enterprises. He looked on the opposition he experienced as due to the influence of the High Church Tories who had remained in power since the reaction of 1681, and these he determined "to chastise." The Duke of Queensberry, the leader of this party in Scotland, was driven from office. Tyrconnell, as we have seen, was placed as a check on Ormond in Ireland. In England James resolved to show the world that even the closest ties of blood were as nothing to him if they conflicted with the demands of his faith. His earlier marriage with Anne Hyde, the daughter of Clarendon, bound both the Chancellor's sons to his fortunes ; and on his accession he had sent his elder brother-in-law, Henry, Earl of Clarendon, as Lord-Lieutenant to Ireland, and raised the younger, Laurence, Earl of Rochester, to the post of Lord Treasurer. But Rochester was now

told that the King could not safely entrust so great a charge to any one who did not share his sentiments on religion, and on his refusal to abandon his faith he was deprived of the White Staff. His brother, Clarendon, shared his fall. A Catholic, Lord Bellasys, became First Lord of the Treasury, which was put into commission after Rochester's removal; and another Catholic, Lord Arundel, became Lord Privy Seal, while Father Petre, a Jesuit, was called to the Privy Council. One official after another who refused to aid in the repeal of the Test Act was dismissed. In defiance of the law the Nuncio of the Pope was received in state at Windsor. But even James could hardly fail to perceive the growth of public discontent. If the great Tory nobles were staunch for the Crown, they were as resolute Englishmen in their hatred of mere tyranny as the Whigs themselves. James gave the Duke of Norfolk the sword of State to carry before him as he went to Mass. The Duke stopped at the Chapel door. "Your father would have gone further," said the King. "Your Majesty's father was the better man," replied the Duke, "and he would not have gone so far." The young Duke of Somerset was ordered to introduce the Nuncio into the Presence Chamber. "I am advised," he answered, "that I cannot obey your Majesty without breaking the law." "Do you not know that I am above the law?" James asked angrily.

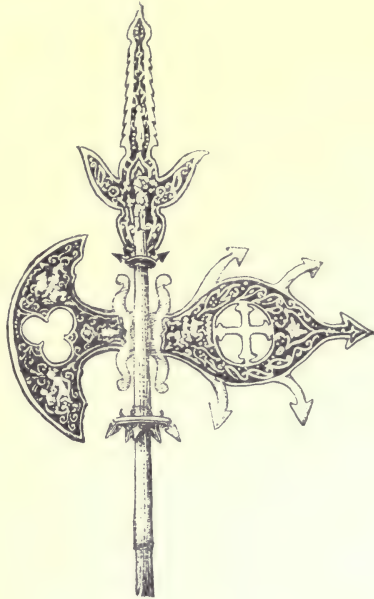
"Your Majesty may be, but I am not," retorted the Duke. He was dismissed from his post; but the spirit of resistance spread fast. In spite of the King's letters the governors of the Charter House, who numbered among them some of the greatest English nobles, refused to admit a Catholic to the benefits of the founda-

SEC. VI  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682  
TO  
1688

1687

*The Tory  
nobles*



HALBERT FROM ROME.  
Seventeenth Century.  
*Tower of London.*



SEC. VI  
 THE  
 SECOND  
 STUART  
 TYRANNY  
 1682  
 TO  
 1688  
 The  
 Non-con-  
 formists

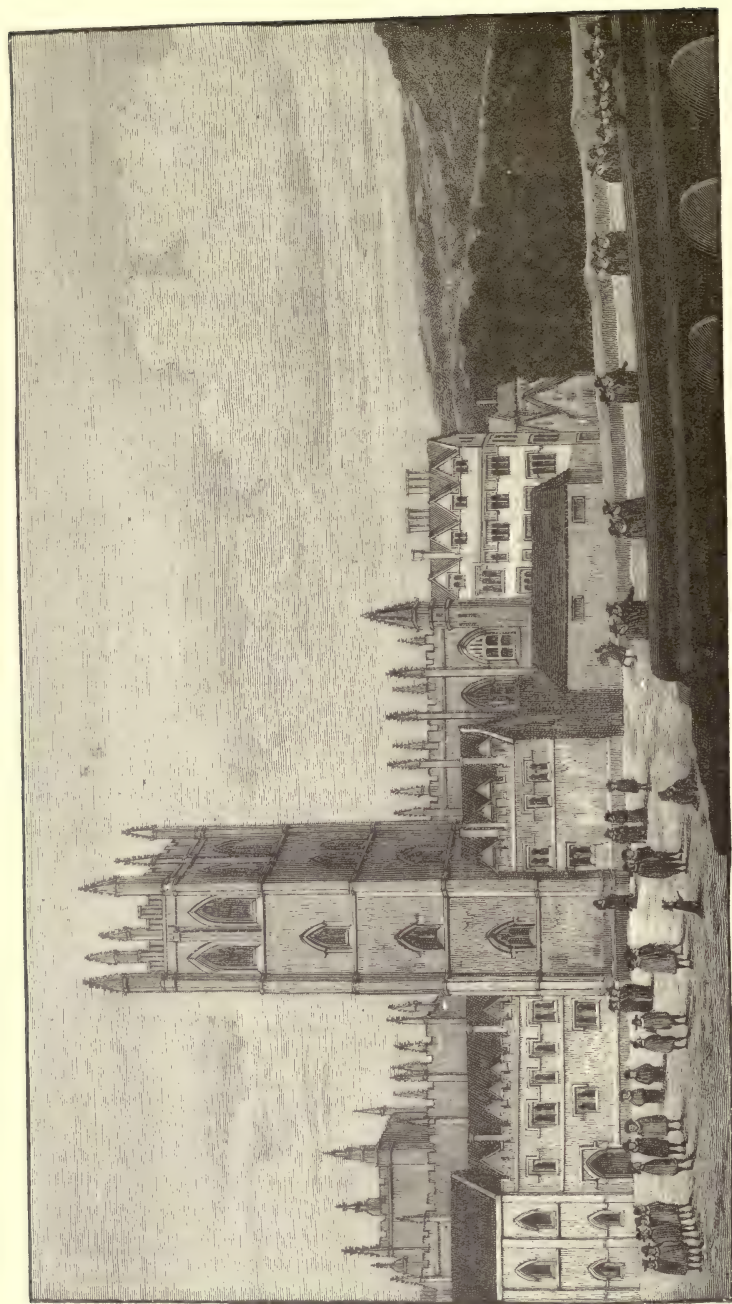
tion. The most devoted loyalists began to murmur when James demanded apostasy as a proof of their loyalty. He had soon in fact to abandon all hope of bringing the Church or the Tories over to his will. He turned, as Charles had turned, to the Nonconformists, and published in 1687 a Declaration of Indulgence which suspended the operation of the penal laws against Nonconformists and Catholics alike, and of every Act which imposed a test as a qualification for office in Church or State. The temptation to accept the Indulgence was great, for since the fall of Shaftesbury persecution had fallen heavily on the Protestant dissidents, and we can hardly wonder that the Nonconformists wavered for a time, or that numerous addresses of thanks were presented to James. But the great body of them, and all the more venerable names among them, remained true to the cause of freedom. Baxter, Howe, and Bunyan all refused an Indulgence which could only be purchased by the violent overthrow of the law. It was plain that the attempt to divide the forces of Protestantism had utterly failed, and that the only mode of securing his end was to procure a repeal of the Test Act from Parliament itself.

James  
 and the  
 Univer-  
 sities

The temper of the existing Houses however remained absolutely opposed to the King's project. He therefore dissolved the Parliament, and summoned a new one. But no free Parliament could be brought, as he knew, to consent to the repeal. The Lords indeed could be swamped by lavish creations of new peers. "Your troop of horse," his minister, Lord Sunderland, told Churchill, "shall be called up into the House of Lords." But it was a harder matter to secure a compliant House of Commons. The Lord-Lieutenants were directed to bring about such a "regulation" of the governing body in boroughs as would ensure the return of candidates pledged to the repeal of the Test, and to question every magistrate in their county as to his vote. Half of them at once refused, and a long list of great nobles—the Earls of Oxford, Shrewsbury, Dorset, Derby, Pembroke, Rutland, Abergavenny, Thanet, Northampton, and Abingdon—were dismissed from their Lord-Lieutenancies. The justices when questioned simply replied that they would vote according to their consciences, and send members to Parliament who would protect the Protestant religion. After repeated "regulations" it was

found impossible to form a corporate body which would return representatives willing to comply with the royal will. All thought of a Parliament had to be abandoned ; and even the most bigoted courtiers counselled moderation at this proof of the stubborn opposition which James must prepare to encounter from the peers, the gentry, and the trading classes. The clergy alone still hesitated in any open act of resistance. Even the tyranny of the Commission failed to rouse into open disaffection men who had been preaching Sunday after Sunday the doctrine of passive obedience to the worst of kings. But James cared little for passive obedience. He looked on the refusal of the clergy to support his plans as freeing him from his pledge to maintain the Church as established by law ; and he resolved to attack it in the great institutions which had till now been its strongholds. To secure the Universities for Catholicism was to seize the only training schools which the clergy possessed. Cambridge indeed escaped easily. A Benedictine monk who presented himself with royal letters recommending him for the degree of a Master of Arts was rejected on his refusal to sign the Articles : and the Vice-Chancellor paid for the rejection by dismissal from his office. But a violent and obstinate attack was directed against Oxford. The Master of University College, who declared himself a convert, was authorized to retain his post in defiance of the law. Massey, a Roman Catholic, was presented by the Crown to the Deanery of Christ Church. Magdalen was the wealthiest Oxford College, and James in 1687 recommended one Farmer, a Catholic of infamous life and not even qualified by statute for the office, to its vacant headship. The Fellows remonstrated, and on the rejection of their remonstrance chose Hough, one of their own number, as their President. The Ecclesiastical Commission declared the election void ; and James, shamed out of his first candidate, recommended a second, Parker, Bishop of Oxford, a Catholic in heart and the meanest of his courtiers. But the Fellows held stubbornly to their legal head. It was in vain that the King visited Oxford, summoned them to his presence, and rated them as they knelt before him like schoolboys. "I am King," he said, "I will be obeyed ! Go to your chapel this instant, and elect the Bishop ! Let those who refuse look to it, for they shall feel the

SEC. VI  
—  
THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY  
1682  
TO  
1688



MAGDALEN COLLEGE, OXFORD, IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.  
*Picture in Magdalen College.*



whole weight of my hand!" It was seen that to give Magdalen as well as Christ Church into Catholic hands was to turn Oxford into a Catholic seminary, and the King's threats were disregarded. But they were soon carried out. A special Commission visited the University, pronounced Hough an intruder, set aside his appeal to the law, burst open the door of his President's house to install Parker in his place, and on their refusal to submit deprived the Fellows of their fellowships. The expulsion of the Fellows was followed on a like refusal by that of the Demies. Parker, who died immediately after his installation, was succeeded by a Roman Catholic bishop *in partibus*, Bonaventure Giffard, and twelve Catholics were admitted to fellowships in a single day.

Meanwhile James clung to the hope of finding a compliant Parliament, from which he might win a repeal of the Test Act. In face of the dogged opposition of the country the elections had been adjourned; and a renewed Declaration of Indulgence was intended as an appeal to the nation at large. At its close he promised to summon a Parliament in November, and he called on the electors to choose such members as would bring to a successful end the policy he had begun. His resolve, he said, was to establish universal liberty of conscience for all future time. It was in this character of a royal appeal that he ordered every clergyman to read the declaration during divine service on two successive Sundays. Little time was given for deliberation, but little time was needed. The clergy refused almost to a man to be the instruments of their own humiliation. The Declaration was read in only four of the London churches, and in these the congregation flocked out of church at the first words of it. Nearly all of the country clergy refused to obey the royal orders. The Bishops went with the rest of the clergy. A few days before the appointed Sunday Archbishop Sancroft called his suffragans together, and the six who were able to appear at Lambeth signed a temperate protest to the King, in which they declined to publish an illegal Declaration. "It is a standard of rebellion," James exclaimed as the Primate presented the paper; and the resistance of the clergy was no sooner announced to him than he determined to wreak his vengeance on the prelates who had signed the protest. He ordered the Ecclesiastical Commissioners to deprive them of their sees, but

SEC. VI

THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY1682  
TO  
1688The  
Seven  
Bishops

April 1688

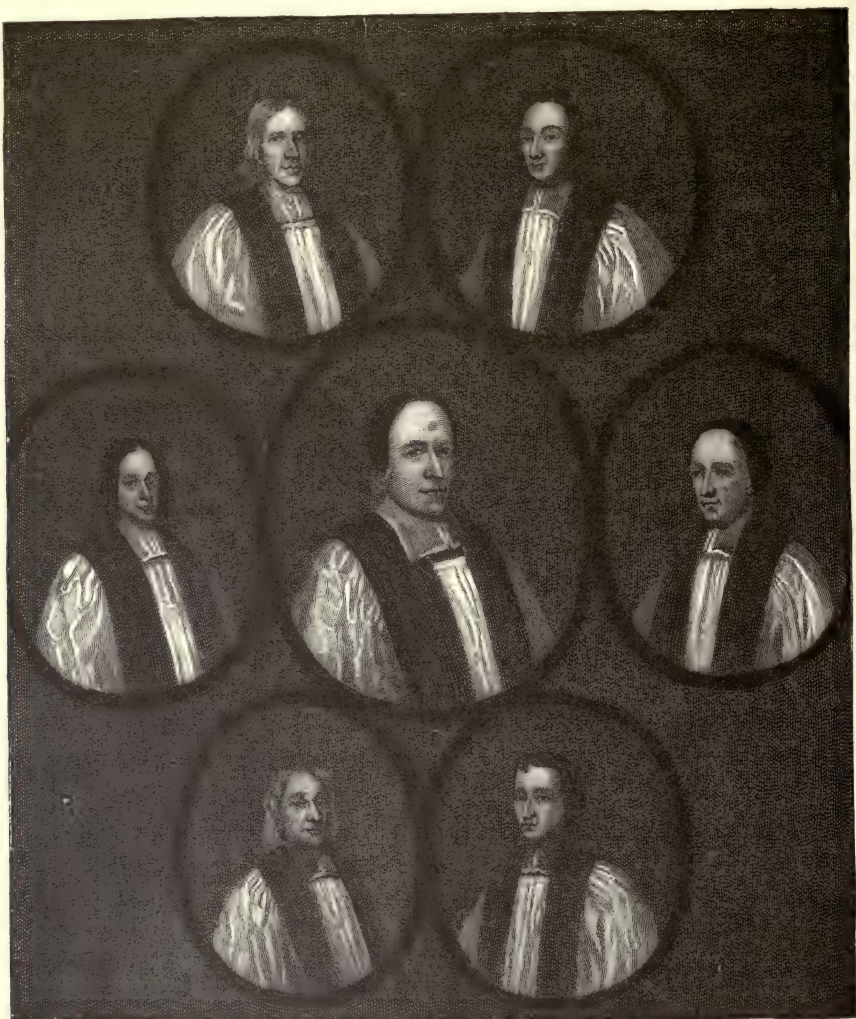
## SEC. VI

THE  
SECOND  
STUART  
TYRANNY

1682

TO  
1683*Trial  
of the  
Bishops*  
1688

in this matter even the Commissioners shrank from obeying him. The Chancellor, Lord Jeffreys, advised a prosecution for libel as an



THE SEVEN BISHOPS.  
*Picture in National Portrait Gallery.*

easier mode of punishment ; and the bishops, who refused to give bail, were committed on this charge to the Tower. They passed to

their prison amidst the shouts of a great multitude, the sentinels knelt for their blessing as they entered its gates, and the soldiers of the garrison drank their healths. So threatening was the temper of the nation that his ministers pressed James to give way. But his obstinacy grew with the danger. "Indulgence," he said, "ruined my father ;" and on the 29th of June the bishops appeared as criminals at the bar of the King's Bench. The jury had been packed, the judges were mere tools of the Crown, but judges and jury were alike overawed by the indignation of the people at large. No sooner had the foreman of the jury uttered the words "Not guilty" than a roar of applause burst from the crowd, and horsemen spurred along every road to carry over the country the news of the acquittal.

SEC. VI  
 THE  
 SECOND  
 STUART  
 TYRANNY  
 1682  
 TO  
 1688



THE SEVEN BISHOPS GOING TO THE TOWER.

*"Engelands Godsdienst en Vryheid hersteld door den Heere Prince van Oranjen,"*  
 Amsterdam, 1689.





MEDAL COMMEMORATING TRIPLE VICTORY OF DENMARK OVER SWEDEN, 1677.  
(Reverse.)

## Section VII.—William of Orange

[Authorities. — As before.]

Amidst the tumult of the Plot and the Exclusion Bill the wiser among English statesmen had fixed their hopes steadily on the succession of Mary, the elder daughter and heiress of James. The tyranny of her father's reign made this succession the hope of the people at large. But to Europe the importance of the change, whenever it should come about, lay not so much in the succession of Mary, as in the new power which such an event would give to her husband, William Prince of Orange. We have come in fact to a moment when the struggle of England against the aggression of its King blends with the larger struggle of Europe against the aggression of Lewis the Fourteenth, and it is only by a rapid glance at the political state of the Continent that we can understand the real nature and results of the Revolution which drove James from the throne.

*William  
and  
Europe*

At this moment France was the dominant power in Christendom. The religious wars which began with the Reformation had broken the strength of the nations around her. Spain was no longer able to fight the battle of Catholicism. The Peace of Westphalia, by the independence it gave to the German princes and the jealousy it kept alive between the Protestant and Catholic powers of Germany, destroyed the strength of the Empire. The German branch of the House of Austria, spent with the long struggle of the Thirty Years' War, had enough to do in battling hard against the advance of the Turks from Hungary on Vienna. The victories of Gustavus and of the generals whom he formed had been dearly purchased by the exhaustion of Sweden. The United Provinces were as yet hardly regarded as a great power, and were trammelled by their contest with England for the empire of the seas. France alone profited by the general wreck. The wise policy of Henry the Fourth in securing religious peace by a grant

*The  
Great-  
ness of  
France*



LOUIS XIV. AND OFFICERS OF HIS STAFF.  
*Contemporary Tapestry at Versailles.*



of toleration to the Protestants had undone the ill effects of its religious wars. The Huguenots were still numerous south of the Loire, but the loss of their fortresses had turned their energies into the peaceful channels of industry and trade. Feudal disorder was roughly put down by Richelieu, and the policy which gathered all local power into the hands of the crown, though fatal in the end to the real welfare of France, gave it for the moment an air of good government, and a command over its internal resources which no other country could boast. Its compact and fertile territory, the natural activity and enterprise of its people, and the rapid growth of its commerce and manufactures, were sources of natural wealth which even its heavy taxation failed to check. In the latter half of the seventeenth century France was looked upon as the wealthiest power in Europe. The yearly income of the French crown was double that of England, and even Lewis the Fourteenth trusted as much to the credit of his treasury as to the glory of his arms. "After all," he said, when the fortunes of war began to turn against him, "it is the last louis d'or which must win!" It was in fact this

superiority in wealth which enabled France to set on foot forces such as had never been seen in Europe since the downfall of Rome. At the opening of the reign of Lewis the Fourteenth its army mustered a hundred thousand men. With the war against Holland it rose to nearly two hundred thousand. In the last struggle against the Grand Alliance there was a time when it counted nearly half a million of men in arms. Nor was France content with these enormous land forces. Since the ruin of Spain the fleets of Holland and of England had alone disputed the empire of the seas. Under Richelieu and Mazarin France could hardly be looked upon as a naval power. But the early years of Lewis saw the creation of a navy of 100 men-of-war, and

SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE



CARDINAL MAZARIN.

*From a miniature by Petitot, in the South Kensington Museum.*



MARSHAL TURENNE.

*From a miniature by P. Sevin, in the South Kensington Museum.*

the fleets of France soon held their own against England or the Dutch.

Such a power would have been formidable at any time ; but it was doubly formidable when directed by statesmen who in knowledge and ability were without rivals in Europe. No diplomatist

SEC. VII

WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGELewis  
the Four-  
teenth

LOUIS XIV.

*From an original engraving by R. Nanteuil, 1670.*

could compare with Lionne, no war minister with Louvois, no financier with Colbert. Their young master, Lewis the Fourteenth, bigoted, narrow-minded, commonplace as he was, without personal honour or personal courage, without gratitude and without pity, insane in his pride, insatiable in his vanity, brutal in his selfishness, had still many of the qualities of a great ruler : industry, patience,





LOUIS II., PRINCE DE CONDÉ.  
*From a miniature in the South Kensington Museum.*

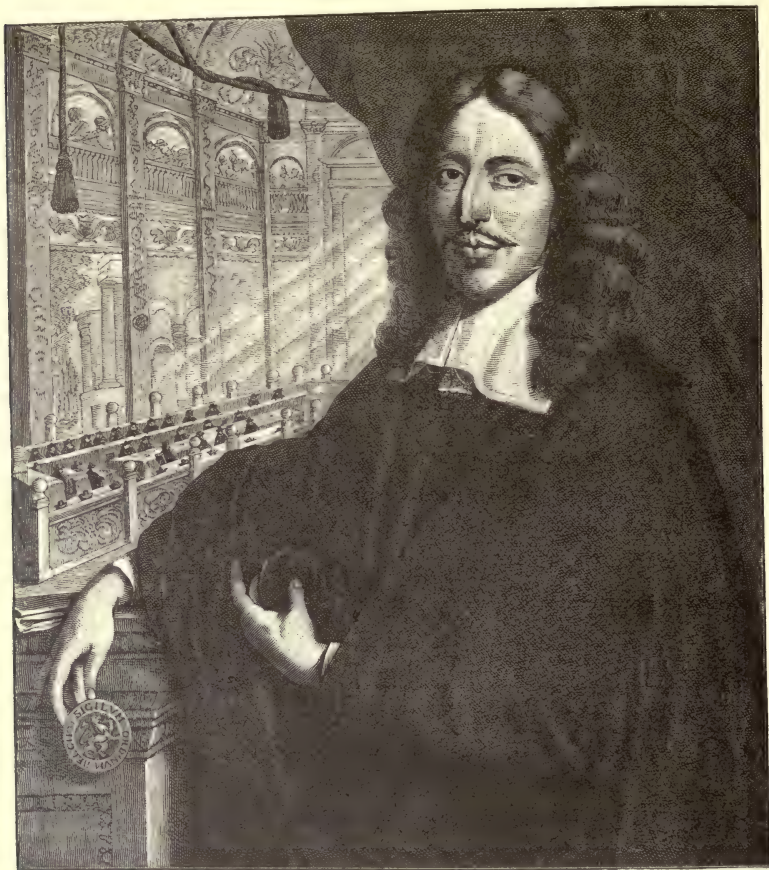
quickness of resolve, firmness of purpose, a capacity for discerning greatness and using it, an immense self-belief and self-confidence, and a temper utterly destitute indeed of real greatness, but with a dramatic turn for seeming to be great. As a politician Lewis had simply to reap the harvest which the two great Cardinals who went before him had sown. Both had used to the profit of France the exhaustion and dissension which the wars of religion had brought upon Europe. Richelieu turned the scale against the House of Austria by his alliance with Sweden, with the United Provinces, and with the Protestant princes of Germany ; and the two great treaties by which Mazarin ended the Thirty Years' War, the Treaty of Westphalia and the Treaty of the Pyrenees, left the Empire disorganized and Spain powerless. From that moment indeed Spain sank into a strange decrepitude. Robbed of the chief source of her wealth by the independence of Holland, weakened at home by the revolt of Portugal, her infantry annihilated by Condé in his victory of Rocroi, her fleet ruined by the Dutch, her best blood drained away to the Indies, the energies of her people destroyed by the suppression of all liberty, civil or religious, her intellectual life crushed by the Inquisition, her industry crippled by the expulsion of the Moors, by financial oppression, and by the folly of her colonial system, the kingdom which under Philip the Second had aimed at the empire of the world lay helpless and exhausted under Philip the Fourth. The aim of Lewis from 1661, the year when he really became master of France, was to carry on the policy of his predecessors, and above all to complete the ruin of Spain. The conquest of the Spanish provinces in the Netherlands would carry his border to the Scheldt. A more distant hope lay in the probable extinction of the Austrian line which now sat on the throne of Spain. By securing the succession to that throne for a French prince, not only Castille and Aragon with the Spanish dependencies in Italy and the Netherlands, but the Spanish empire in the New World would be added to the dominions of France. Nothing could save Spain but a union of the European powers, and to prevent this union by his negotiations was a work at which Lewis toiled for years. The intervention of the Empire was guarded against by a renewal of the old alliances between France and the lesser German princes. A league

SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE

*France  
and Spain*

SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE

with the Turks gave Austria enough to do on her eastern border. The old league with Sweden, the old friendship with Holland were skilfully maintained. The policy of Charles the Second bound England to the side of Lewis. At last it seemed that the moment



JOHN DE WITT.

*From a contemporary engraving by Lambert Vischer.*

for which he had waited had come, and the signing of the Treaty of Breda gave an opportunity for war of which Lewis availed himself in 1667. But the suddenness and completeness of the French success awoke a general terror before which the skilful diplomacy of Charles gave way. Holland was roused to a sense of danger at



home by the appearance of French arms on the Rhine. England woke from her lethargy on the French seizure of the coast-towns of Flanders. Sweden joined the two Protestant powers in the Triple Alliance ; and the dread of a wider league forced Lewis to content himself with the southern half of Flanders, and the possession of a string of fortresses which practically left him master of the Netherlands.

Lewis was maddened by the check. He had always disliked the Dutch as Protestants and Republicans ; he hated them now as an obstacle which must be taken out of the way ere he could resume his projects upon Spain. Four years were spent in preparations for a decisive blow. The French army was gradually raised to a hundred and eighty thousand men. Colbert created a fleet which rivalled that of Holland in number and equipment. Sweden was again won over. England was again secured by the Treaty of Dover. Meanwhile Holland lay wrapped in a false security. The French alliance had been its traditional policy since the days of Henry the Fourth, and it was especially dear to the party of the great merchant class which had mounted to power on the fall of the House of Orange. John de Witt, the leader of this party, though he had been forced to conclude the Triple Alliance by the advance of Lewis to the Rhine, still clung blindly to the friendship of France. His trust only broke down when the French army crossed the Dutch border in 1672, and the glare of its watch-fires was seen from the walls of Amsterdam. For the moment Holland lay crushed at the feet of Lewis, but the arrogance of the conqueror roused again the stubborn courage which had wrung victory from Alva and worn out the pride of Philip the Second. De Witt was murdered in a popular tumult, and his fall called William, the Prince of Orange, to the head of the Republic. Though the new Stadholder had hardly reached manhood, his great qualities at once made themselves felt. His earlier life had schooled him in a wonderful self-control. He had been left fatherless and all but friendless in childhood, he had been bred among men who looked on his very existence as a danger to the State, his words had been watched, his looks noted, his friends jealously withdrawn. In such an atmosphere the boy grew up silent, wary, self-contained, grave in temper, cold in demeanour,

SEC. VI.  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE

1668

William  
of  
Orange

1672

SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE

blunt and even repulsive in address. He was weak and sickly from his cradle, and manhood brought with it an asthma and consumption which shook his frame with a constant cough;



WILLIAM III. OF ORANGE WHEN A CHILD.

*Picture by Cornelius Jansen van Ceulen the younger, in National Portrait Gallery.*

his face was sullen and bloodless and scored with deep lines which told of ceaseless pain. But beneath this cold and sickly presence lay a fiery and commanding temper, an immovable courage, and a political ability of the highest order. William was

a born statesman. Neglected as his education had been in other ways, for he knew nothing of letters or of art, he had been carefully trained in politics by John de Witt: and the wide knowledge with which in his first address to the States-General the young Stadholder reviewed the general state of Europe, the cool courage with which he calculated the chances of the struggle, at once won him the trust of his countrymen. Their trust was soon rewarded. Holland was saved, and province after province won back from the arms of France, by William's dauntless resolve. Like his great ancestor William the Silent, he was a luckless commander, and no general had to bear more frequent defeats. But he profited by defeat as other men profit by victory. His bravery indeed was of that nobler cast which rises to its height in moments of ruin and dismay. The coolness with which, boy-general as he was, he rallied his broken squadrons amidst the rout of Seneff, and wrested from Condé at the last the fruits of his victory, moved his veteran opponent to a generous admiration. It was in such moments indeed that the real temper of the man broke through the veil of his usual reserve. A strange light flashed from his eyes as soon as he was under fire, and in the terror and confusion of defeat his manners took an ease and gaiety that charmed every soldier around him.

The political ability of William was seen in the skill with which he drew Spain and the House of Austria into a coalition against France, a union which laid the foundation of the Grand Alliance. But France was still matchless in arms, and the effect of her victories was seconded by the selfishness of the allies, and above all by the treacherous diplomacy of Charles the Second. William was forced to consent in 1678 to the Treaty of Nimeguen, which left France dominant over Europe as she had never been

SEC. VII

WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE

DUTCH MUSKET.  
Seventeenth  
Century.  
*Tower of London.*



SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE

William  
and  
Charles  
II.

before. Holland indeed was saved from the revenge of Lewis, but fresh spoils had been wrested from Spain, and Franche-Comté, which had been restored at the close of the former war, was retained at the end of this. Above all France overawed Europe by the daring and success with which she had faced single-handed the wide coalition against her. Her King's arrogance became unbounded. Lorraine was turned into a subject state. Genoa



FRENCH PISTOLIERS AT THE STORMING OF AERDENBURGH, 1672.

*From Contemporary Dutch Engraving.*

was bombarded, and its Doge forced to seek pardon in the antechambers of Versailles. The Pope was humiliated by the march of an army upon Rome to avenge a slight offered to the French ambassador. The Empire was outraged by a shameless seizure of Imperial fiefs in Elsass and elsewhere. The whole Protestant world was defied by the persecution of the Huguenots which was to culminate in the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. In the mind of Lewis peace meant a series of outrages on the

SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE

powers around him ; but every outrage helped the cool and silent adversary who was looking on from the Hague to build up that Great Alliance of all Europe from which alone he looked for any effectual check to the ambition of France. The experience of the last war had taught William that of such an alliance England must form a part, and the efforts of the Prince ever since the peace had been directed to secure her co-operation. A reconciliation of the King with his Parliament was an indispensable step towards freeing Charles from his dependence on France, and it was such a reconciliation that William at first strove to bring about ; but he was for a long time foiled by the steadiness with which Charles clung to the power whose aid was needful to carry out the schemes which he was contemplating. The change of policy however which followed on the fall of the Cabal and the entry of Danby into power raised new hopes in William's mind ; and his marriage with Mary dealt Lewis what proved to be a fatal blow. James was without a son, and the marriage with Mary would at any rate ensure William the aid of England in his great enterprise on his father-in-law's death. But it was impossible to wait for that event, and though the Prince used his new position to bring Charles round to a decided policy his efforts remained fruitless. The storm of the Popish Plot complicated his position. In the earlier stages of the Exclusion Bill, when the Parliament seemed resolved simply to pass over James and to seat Mary at once on the throne after her uncle's death, William stood apart from the struggle, doubtful of its issue, though prepared to accept the good luck if it came to him. But the fatal error of Shaftesbury in advancing the claims of Monmouth forced him into action. To preserve his wife's right of succession, with all the great issues which were to come of it, no other course was left than to adopt the cause of the Duke of York. In the crisis of the struggle, therefore, William threw his whole weight on the side of James. The eloquence of Halifax secured the rejection of the Exclusion Bill, and Halifax was but the mouthpiece of William.

1677

But while England was seething with the madness of the Popish Plot and of the royalist reaction, the great European struggle was drawing nearer and nearer. The patience of Germany was worn out by the ceaseless aggressions of Lewis,

William  
and  
James II.

CVRIA HOLLANDIÆ

EXTERIOR



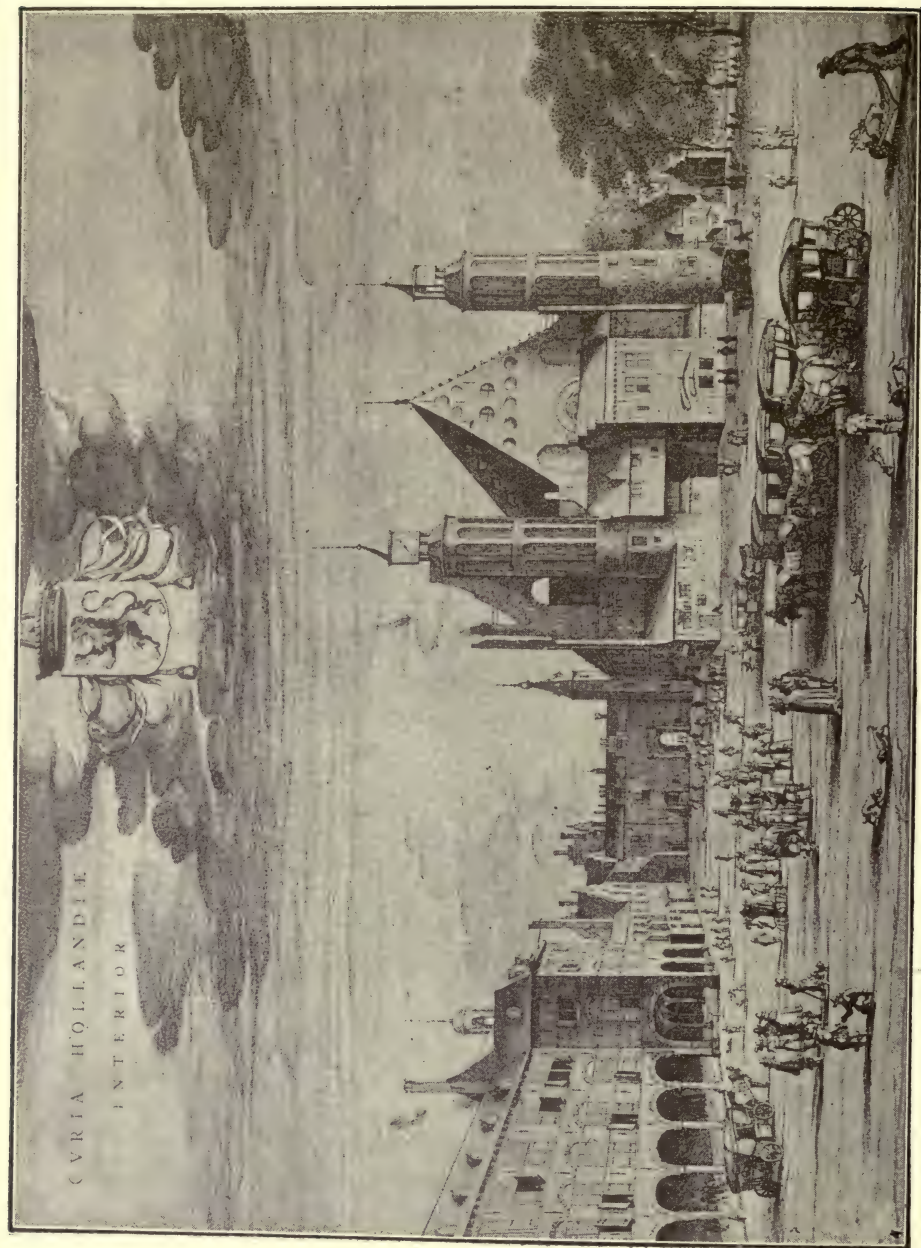
THE PALACE AT THE HAGUE

Temp. William III.

*Contemporary Dutch engraving*



and in 1686 its princes had bound themselves at Augsburg to resist all further encroachments on the part of France. From that moment war became inevitable, and William watched the course of his father-in-law with redoubled anxiety. His efforts to ensure English aid had utterly failed. James had renewed his brother's secret treaty with France, and plunged into a quarrel with his people which of itself would have prevented him from giving any aid in a struggle abroad. The Prince could only silently look on, with a desperate hope that James might yet be brought to a nobler policy. He refused all encouragement to the leading malcontents who were already calling on him to interfere in arms. On the other hand he declined to support the King in his schemes for the abolition of the Test. If he still cherished hopes of bringing about a peace between the King and people which might enable him to enlist England in the Grand Alliance, they vanished in 1687 before the Declaration of Indulgence. It was at this moment that James called on him to declare himself in favour of the abolition of the penal laws and of the Test. But simultaneously with the King's appeal came letters of warning and promises of support from the leading English nobles. Some, like the Hydes, simply assured him of their friendship. The Bishop of London added promises of support. Others, like Devonshire, Nottingham, and Shrewsbury, cautiously or openly warned the Prince against compliance with the King's demand. Lord Churchill announced the resolve of Mary's sister Anne to stand by the cause of Protestantism. Danby, the leading representative of the great Tory party, sent urgent warnings. The letters dictated William's answer. No one, he truly protested, loathed religious persecution more than he himself did, but in relaxing political disabilities James called on him to countenance an attack on his own religion. "I cannot," he ended, "concur in what your Majesty desires of me." But William still shrank from the plan of an intervention in arms. General as the disaffection undoubtedly was, the position of James seemed fairly secure. He counted on the aid of France. He had an army of twenty thousand men. Scotland, disheartened by the failure of Argyll's rising, could give no such aid as it gave to the Long Parliament. Ireland was ready to throw a Catholic army on the western coast. It was



CURIA HOLLANDICÆ  
INTERIOR

COURTYARD OF THE PALACE AT THE HAGUE.

Temp. William III.

*Contemporary Dutch engraving.*

doubtful if in England itself disaffection would turn into actual rebellion. The "Bloody Circuit" had left its terror on the Whigs. The Tories and the Churchmen, angered as they were, were hampered by their doctrine of non-resistance. William's aim therefore was to discourage all violent counsels, and to confine himself to organizing such a general opposition as would force James by legal means to reconcile himself to the country, to abandon his policy at home and abroad, and to join the alliance against France.

SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE

The In-  
vitation

1688

June 20

June 30

But at this moment the whole course of William's policy was changed by an unforeseen event. His own patience and that of the nation rested on the certainty of Mary's succession. But in the midst of the King's struggle with the Church it was announced that the Queen was again with child. The news was received with general unbelief, for five years had passed since the last pregnancy of Mary of Modena. But it at once forced on a crisis. If, as the Catholics joyously foretold, the child turned out a boy, and, as was certain, was brought up a Catholic, the highest Tory had to resolve at last whether the tyranny under which England lay should go on for ever. The hesitation of the country was at an end. Danby, loyal above all to the Church and firm in his hatred of subservience to France, answered for the Tories; Compton for the High Churchmen, goaded at last into rebellion by the Declaration of Indulgence. The Earl of Devonshire, the Lord Cavendish of the Exclusion struggle, answered for the Nonconformists, who were satisfied with William's promise to procure them toleration, as well as for the general body of the Whigs. The announcement of the birth of a Prince of Wales was followed ten days after by a formal invitation to William to intervene in arms for the restoration of English liberty and the protection of the Protestant religion; it was signed by the representatives of the great parties now united against a common danger, and by some others, and was carried to the Hague by Herbert, the most popular of English seamen, who had been deprived of his command for a refusal to vote against the Test. The Invitation called on William to land with an army strong enough to justify those who signed it in rising in arms. It was sent from London on the day after the acquittal of the Bishops. The general excitement, the shouts of the boats



SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE  
*The  
National  
Discontent*

which covered the river, the bonfires in every street, showed indeed that the country was on the eve of revolt. The army itself, on which James had implicitly relied, suddenly showed its sympathy with the people. James was at Hounslow when the news of the verdict reached him, and as he rode from the camp he heard a great shout behind him. "What is that?" he asked. "It is nothing," was the reply, "only the soldiers are glad that the Bishops are acquitted!" "Do you call that nothing?" grumbled the King. The shout told him that he stood utterly alone in his



THE SEVEN BISHOPS RETURNING FROM THE TOWER.  
"Englands Godsdienst hersteld," 1689.

realm. The peerage, the gentry, the Bishops, the clergy, the Universities, every lawyer, every trader, every farmer, stood aloof from him. And now his very soldiers forsook him. The most devoted Catholics pressed him to give way. But to give way was to change the whole nature of his government. All show of legal rule had disappeared. Sheriffs, mayors, magistrates, appointed by the Crown in defiance of a parliamentary statute, were no real officers in the eye of the law. Even if the Houses were summoned, members returned by officers such as these could form no legal Parliament. Hardly a Minister of the Crown or a Privy Councillor

exercised any lawful authority. James had brought things to such a pass that the restoration of legal government meant the absolute reversal of every act he had done. But he was in no mood to reverse his acts. His temper was only spurred to a more dogged obstinacy by danger and remonstrance. He broke up the camp at Hounslow and dispersed its troops in distant cantonments. He dismissed the two judges who had favoured the acquittal of the Bishops. He ordered the chancellor of each diocese to report the names of the clergy who had not read the Declaration of Indulgence. But his will broke fruitlessly against the sullen resistance which met him on every side. Not a chancellor made a return to the Commissioners, and the Commissioners were cowed into inaction by the temper of the nation. When the judges who had displayed their servility to the Crown went on circuit the gentry refused to meet them. A yet fiercer irritation was kindled by the King's resolve to supply the

place of the English troops, whose temper proved unserviceable for his purposes, by draughts from the Catholic army which Tyrconnell had raised in Ireland. Even the Roman Catholic peers at the Council table protested against this measure; and six officers in a single regiment laid down their commissions rather than enrol the Irish recruits among their men. The ballad of "Lillibullero," a scurrilous attack on the Irish recruits, was sung from one end of England to the other.

SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE



SATIRICAL PLAYING CARD.

Temp. James II.  
British Museum.





LANDING OF WILLIAM OF ORANGE, 1688.  
 "Englands Godsdiens hersteld," 1689



An outbreak of revolt was in fact inevitable. William was straining all his resources to gather a fleet and sufficient forces, while noble after noble made their way to the Hague. The Earl of Shrewsbury brought £2,000 towards the expenses of the expedition. Edward Russell, the representative of the Whig Earl of Bedford, was followed by the representatives of great Tory houses, by the sons of the Marquis of Winchester, of Lord Danby, of Lord Peterborough, and by the High Church Lord Macclesfield. At home the Earls of Danby and Devonshire prepared silently with Lord Lumley for a rising in the North. In spite of the profound secrecy with which all was conducted, the keen instinct of Sunderland, who had stooped to purchase continuance in office at the price of a secret apostasy to Catholicism, detected the preparations of William; and the sense that his master's ruin was at hand encouraged him to tell every secret of James on the promise of a pardon for the crimes to which he had lent himself. James alone remained stubborn and insensate as of old. He had no fear of a revolt unaided by the Prince of Orange, and he believed that the threat of a French attack on Holland would render William's departure impossible. But in September the long-delayed war began, and by the greatest political error of his reign Lewis threw his forces not on Holland, but on Germany. The Dutch at once felt themselves secure; the States-General gave their sanction to William's project, and the armament he had prepared gathered rapidly in the Scheldt. The news no sooner reached England than the King passed from obstinacy to panic. By draughts from Scotland and Ireland he had mustered forty thousand men, but the temper of the troops robbed him of all trust in them. Help from France was now out of the question. He could only fall back on the older policy of a union with the Tory party and the party of the Church. He personally appealed for support to the Bishops. He dissolved the Ecclesiastical Commission. He replaced the magistrates he had driven from office. He restored their franchises to the towns. The Chancellor carried back the Charter of London in state into the City. The Bishop of Winchester was sent to replace the expelled Fellows of Magdalen. Catholic chapels and Jesuit schools were ordered to be closed. Sunderland pressed for the instant calling of a Parliament, but to

SEC. VII  
 WILLIAM  
 OF  
 ORANGE  
 William's  
 Landing  
 1688

*James  
 gives way*

SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE

*The  
National  
Rising*

*Flight of  
James*

James the counsel seemed treachery, and he dismissed Sunderland from office. In answer to a declaration from the Prince of Orange, which left the question of the legitimacy of the Prince of Wales to Parliament, he produced before the peers who were in London proofs of the birth of his child. But concessions and proofs came too late. Detained by ill winds, beaten back on its first venture by a violent storm, William's fleet of six hundred transports, escorted by fifty men-of-war, anchored on the fifth of November in Torbay; and his army, thirteen thousand men strong, entered Exeter amidst the shouts of its citizens. His coming had not been looked for in the West, and for a week no great landowner joined him. But nobles and squires soon flocked to his camp, and the adhesion of Plymouth secured his rear. Insurrection broke out in Scotland. Danby, dashing at the head of a hundred horsemen into York, gave the signal for a rising. The militia met his appeal with shouts of "A free Parliament and the Protestant religion!" Peers and gentry flocked to his standard; and a march on Nottingham united his forces to those under Devonshire, who had mustered at Derby the great lords of the midland and eastern counties. Everywhere the revolt was triumphant. The garrison of Hull declared for a free Parliament. The Duke of Norfolk appeared at the head of three hundred gentlemen in the market place at Norwich. At Oxford townsmen and gowmsmen greeted Lord Lovelace with uproarious welcome. Bristol threw open its gates to the Prince of Orange, who advanced steadily on Salisbury, where James had mustered his forces. But the King's army, broken by dissensions and mutual suspicions among its leaders, fell back in disorder; and the desertion of Lord Churchill was followed by that of so many other officers that James abandoned the struggle in despair. He fled to London to hear that his daughter Anne had left St. James's to join Danby at Nottingham. "God help me," cried the wretched King, "for my own children have forsaken me!" His spirit was utterly broken; and though he promised to call the Houses together, and despatched commissioners to Hungerford to treat with William on the terms of a free Parliament, in his heart he had resolved on flight. Parliament, he said to the few who still clung to him, would force on him concessions he could not endure; and he only waited for news of the escape of his wife and child to make

his way to the Isle of Sheppey, where a hoy lay ready to carry him to France. Some rough fishermen, who took him for a Jesuit, prevented his escape, and a troop of Life Guards brought him back in safety to London: but it was the policy of William and his advisers to further a flight which removed their chief difficulty out of the way. It would have been hard to depose James had he remained, and perilous to keep him prisoner: but the entry of the Dutch troops into London, the silence of the Prince, and an order to leave St. James's, filled the King with fresh terrors, and taking advantage of the means of escape which were almost openly placed at his disposal, James a second time quitted London and embarked on the 23rd of December unhindered for France.

SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE

Before flying James had burnt most of the writs convoking the new Parliament, had disbanded his army, and destroyed so far as he could all means of government. For a few days there was a wild burst of panic and outrage in London, but the orderly instinct of the people soon reasserted itself. The Lords who were at the moment in London provided on their own authority as Privy Councillors for the more pressing needs of administration, and resigned their authority into William's hands on his arrival. The difficulty which arose from the absence of any person legally authorized to call Parliament together was got over by convoking the House of Peers, and forming a second body of all members who had sat in the Commons in the reign of Charles the Second, with the Aldermen and Common Councillors of London. Both bodies requested William to take on himself the provisional government of the kingdom, and to issue circular letters inviting the electors of every town and county to send up representatives to a Convention which met in January, 1689. In the new Convention both Houses were found equally resolved against any recall of or negotiation with the fallen King. They were united in entrusting a provisional authority to the Prince of Orange. But with this step their unanimity ended. The Whigs, who formed a majority in the Commons, voted a resolution which, illogical and inconsistent as it seemed, was well adapted to unite in its favour every element of the opposition to James: the Churchman who was simply scared by his bigotry, the Tory who doubted the right of a nation to depose its King, the Whig who held the theory of a

The Re-  
volution

*The Con-  
vention*  
1689





"THE PROTESTANTS' JOY."  
Ballad, 1689, in Bagford Collection, British Museum.

SEC. VII  
 WILLIAM  
 OF  
 ORANGE

contract between King and People. They voted that King James, "having endeavoured to subvert the constitution of this kingdom by breaking the original contract between King and People; and by the advice of Jesuits and other wicked persons having violated the fundamental laws, and having withdrawn himself out of the kingdom, has abdicated the Government, and that the throne is thereby vacant." But in the Lords, where the Tories were still in the ascendant, the resolution was fiercely debated. Archbishop Sancroft with the high Tories held that no crime could bring about a forfeiture of the crown, and that James still remained King, but that his tyranny had given the nation a right to withdraw from him the actual exercise of government and to entrust his functions to a Regency. The moderate Tories under Danby's guidance admitted that James had ceased to be King, but denied that the throne could be vacant, and contended that from the moment of his abdication the sovereignty vested in his daughter Mary. It was in vain that the eloquence of Halifax backed the Whig peers in struggling for the resolution of the Commons as it stood. The plan of a Regency was lost by a single vote, and Danby's scheme was adopted by a large majority. But both the Tory courses found a sudden obstacle in William. He declined to be Regent. He had no mind, he said to Danby, to be his wife's gentleman-usher. Mary, on the other hand, refused to accept the crown save in conjunction with her husband. The two declarations put an end to the question. It was agreed that William and Mary should be acknowledged as joint sovereigns, but that the actual administration should rest with William alone. A Parliamentary Committee in which the most active member was John Somers, a young lawyer who had distinguished himself in the trial of the Bishops and who was destined to play a great part in later history, drew up a Declaration of Rights which was presented on February 13th to William and Mary by the two Houses in the banqueting-room at Whitehall. It recited the misgovernment of James, his abdication, and the resolve of the Lords and Commons to assert the ancient rights and liberties of English subjects. It condemned as illegal his establishment of an ecclesiastical commission, and his raising an army without Parliamentary sanction. It denied the right of any king to suspend or dispense with laws, or to exact money,

*Declara-  
 tion of  
 Rights*



SEC. VII save by consent of Parliament. It asserted for the subject a right  
WILLIAM OF ORANGE to petition, to a free choice of representatives in Parliament, and to  
a pure and merciful administration of justice It declared the right



GREAT SEAL OF WILLIAM AND MARY.  
(Obverse.)

of both Houses to liberty of debate. It demanded securities for the free exercise of their religion by all Protestants, and bound the new sovereign to maintain the Protestant religion and the law and liberties of the realm. In full faith that these principles would be



accepted and maintained by William and Mary, it ended with declaring the Prince and Princess of Orange King and Queen of England. At the close of the Declaration, Halifax, in the name

SEC. VII  
WILLIAM  
OF  
ORANGE



GREAT SEAL OF WILLIAM AND MARY.  
(Reverse.)

of the Estates of the Realm, prayed them to receive the crown. William accepted the offer in his own name and his wife's, and declared in a few words the resolve of both to maintain the laws and to govern by advice of Parliament.

## SEC. VIII

THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE1689  
TO  
1697

## Section VIII.—The Grand Alliance, 1689—1697

[*Authorities.*—As before.]The  
Grand  
Alliance

The blunder of Lewis in choosing Germany instead of Holland for his point of attack was all but atoned for by the brilliant successes with which he opened the war. The whole country west of the Rhine was soon in his hands ; his armies were masters of the Palatinate, and penetrated even to Würtemberg. His hopes had never been higher than at the moment when the arrival of James at St. Germain dashed all hope to the ground. Lewis was at once thrown back on a war of defence, and the brutal ravages which marked the retreat of his armies from the Rhine revealed the bitterness with which his pride stooped to the necessity. The Palatinate was turned into a desert. The same ruin fell on the stately palace of the Elector at Heidelberg, on the venerable tombs of the Emperors at Speyer, on the town of the trader, on the hut of the vine-dresser. In accepting the English throne William had been moved not so much by personal ambition as by the prospect of firmly knitting together England and Holland, the two great Protestant powers whose fleets held the mastery of the sea, as his diplomacy had knit all Germany together a year before in the Treaty of Augsburg. But the advance from such a union to the formation of the European alliance against France was still delayed by the reluctance of the two branches of the House of Austria in Germany and Spain to league with Protestant States against a Catholic King, while England cared little to join in an attack on France with the view of saving the liberties of Europe. All hesitation, however, passed away when the reception of James as still King of England at St. Germain gave England just ground for a declaration of war, a step in which it was soon followed by Holland, and the two countries at once agreed to stand by one another in their struggle against France. The adhesion of Spain and the Court of Vienna in 1689 to this agreement completed the Grand Alliance which William had designed ; and when Savoy joined the Allies France found herself girt in on every side save that of Switzerland with a

ring of foes. The Scandinavian kingdoms alone stood aloof from the confederacy of Europe, and their neutrality was unfriendly to France. Lewis was left without a single ally save the Turk : but

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697



WILLIAM III.

*From a picture by Sir Godfrey Kneller at Windsor Castle.*

the energy and quickness of movement which sprang from the concentration of the power of France in a single hand still left the contest an equal one. The Empire was slow to move ; the Court



SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697

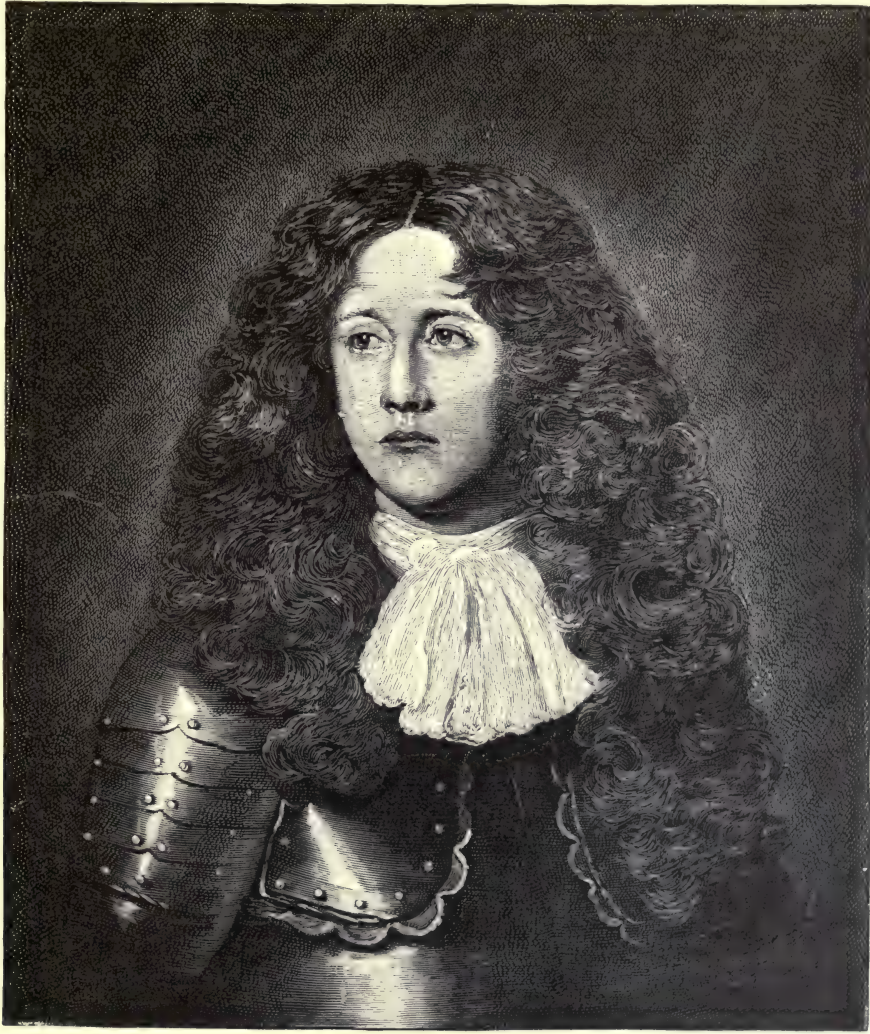
of Vienna was distracted by a war with the Turks ; Spain was all but powerless ; Holland and England were alone earnest in the struggle, and England could as yet give little aid in the war. One English brigade, indeed, formed from the regiments raised by James, joined the Dutch army on the Sambre, and distinguished itself under Churchill, who had been rewarded for his treason by the title of Earl of Marlborough, in a brisk skirmish with the enemy at Walcourt. But William had as yet grave work to do at home.

William  
and  
Scotland

In England not a sword had been drawn for James. In Scotland his tyranny had been yet greater than in England, and so far as the Lowlands went the fall of his tyranny was as rapid and complete. No sooner had he called his troops southward to meet William's invasion than Edinburgh rose in revolt. The western peasants were at once up in arms, and the Episcopalian clergy who had been the instruments of the Stuart misgovernment ever since the Restoration were rabbled and driven from their parsonages in every parish. The news of these disorders forced William to act, though he was without a show of legal authority over Scotland. On the advice of the Scotch Lords present in London, he ventured to summon a Convention similar to that which had been summoned in England, and on his own responsibility to set aside the laws which excluded Presbyterians from the Scotch Parliament. This Convention resolved that James had forfeited the crown by misgovernment, and offered it to William and Mary. The offer was accompanied by a Claim of Right framed on the model of the Declaration of Rights to which they had consented in England, but closing with a demand for the abolition of Prelacy. Both crown and claim were accepted, and the arrival of the Scotch regiments which William had brought from Holland gave strength to the new Government. Its strength was to be roughly tested. John Graham of Claverhouse, whose cruelties in the persecution of the Western Covenanters had been rewarded by a high command in the Scotch army, and the title of Viscount Dundee, withdrew with a few troopers from Edinburgh to the Highlands, and appealed to the clans. In the Highlands nothing was known of English government or misgovernment : all that the Revolution meant to a Highlander was the restoration of the House of

Argyll. To many of the clans it meant the restoration of lands which had been granted them on the Earl's attainder ; and the

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697



JOHN GRAHAME OF CLAVERHOUSE, VISCOUNT DUNDEE.  
*From a picture in the possession of Lady E. Leslie-Melville-Cartwright.*

Macdonalds, the Macleans, and the Camerons, were as ready to join Dundee in fighting the Campbells and the Government which



SEC. VIII  
 THE GRAND  
 ALLIANCE  
 1689  
 TO  
 1697  
*Killie-  
 crankie  
 July 1689*

upheld them as they had been ready to join Montrose in the same cause forty years before. They were soon in arms. As William's Scotch regiments under General Mackay climbed the pass of Killiecrankie, Dundee charged them at the head of three thousand clansman and swept them in headlong rout down the glen. But his death in the moment of victory broke the only bond which held the Highlanders together, and in a few weeks the host which had spread terror through the Lowlands melted helplessly away. In the next summer Mackay was able to build the strong post of Fort



KILLIECRANKIE.

William in the very heart of the disaffected country, and his offers of money and pardon brought about the submission of the clans. Sir John Dalrymple, the Master of Stair, in whose hands the government of Scotland at this time mainly rested, had hoped that a refusal of the oath of allegiance would give grounds for a war of extermination, and free Scotland for ever from its terror of the Highlanders. He had provided for the expected refusal by orders of a ruthless severity. "Your troops," he wrote to the officer in command, "will destroy entirely the country of Lochaber, Lochiel's



lands, Keppoch's, Glengarry's and Glencoe's. Your powers shall be large enough. I hope the soldiers will not trouble the Government with prisoners." But his hopes were disappointed by the readiness with which the clans accepted the offers of the

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697



GLENCOE.

Government. All submitted in good time save Macdonald of Glencoe, whose pride delayed his taking of the oath till six days after the latest date fixed by the proclamation. Foiled in his larger hopes of destruction, Dalrymple seized eagerly on the pretext given by Macdonald, and an order "for the extirpation of

*Massacre  
of  
Glencoe*

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697

Feb. 13,  
1692

that sect of robbers" was laid before William and received the royal signature. "The work," wrote the Master of Stair to Colonel Hamilton who undertook it, "must be secret and sudden." The troops were chosen from among the Campbells, the deadly foes of the clansmen of Glencoe, and quartered peacefully among the Macdonalds for twelve days, till all suspicion of their errand disappeared. At daybreak they fell on their hosts, and in a few moments thirty of the clansfolk lay dead on the snow. The rest, sheltered by a storm, escaped to the mountains to perish for the most part of cold and hunger. "The only thing I regret," said the Master of Stair when the news reached him, "is that any got away." Whatever horror the Massacre of Glencoe has roused in later days, few save Dalrymple knew of it at the time. The peace of the Highlands enabled the work of reorganization to go on quietly at Edinburgh. In accepting the Claim of Right with its repudiation of Prelacy, William had in effect restored the Presbyterian Church, and its restoration was accompanied by the revival of the Westminster Confession as a standard of faith, and by the passing of an Act which abolished lay patronage. Against the Toleration Act which the King proposed, the Scotch Parliament stood firm. But the King was as firm in his purpose as the Parliament. So long as he reigned, William declared in memorable words, there should be no persecution for conscience' sake. "We never could be of that mind that violence was suited to the advancing of true religion, nor do we intend that our authority shall ever be a tool to the irregular passions of any party."

The  
Irish  
Revolt

It was not in Scotland, however, but in Ireland that James and Lewis hoped to arrest William's progress. In the middle of his reign, when his chief aim was to provide against the renewed depression of his fellow religionists at his death by any Protestant successor, James had resolved (if we may trust the statement of the French ambassador) to place Ireland in such a position of independence that she might serve as a refuge for his Catholic subjects. Lord Clarendon was dismissed from the Lord Lieutenancy and succeeded in the charge of the island by the Catholic Earl of Tyrconnell. The new governor, who was raised to a dukedom, went roughly to work. Every Englishman was turned out of office. Every Judge, every Privy Councillor, every



Mayor and Alderman of a borough was required to be a Catholic and an Irishman. The Irish army, raised to the number of fifty thousand men and purged of its Protestant soldiers, was entrusted to Catholic officers. In a few months the English ascendancy was overthrown, and the life and fortune of the English settlers were at the mercy of the natives on whom they had trampled since Cromwell's day. The King's flight and the agitation among the native Irish at the news spread panic therefore through the island.

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697



JAMES II. LANDING AT KINSALE.

*"Engelants Schouwtooneel verbeeldende het vlugte van Jacobus II.," Amsterdam, 1690.*

Another massacre was believed to be at hand ; and fifteen hundred Protestant families, chiefly from the south, fled in terror over sea. The Protestants of the north on the other hand drew together at Enniskillen and Londonderry, and prepared for self-defence. The outbreak however was still delayed, and for two months Tyrconnell intrigued with William's Government. But his aim was simply to gain time. He was in fact inviting James to return to Ireland, and at the news of his coming with officers, ammunition, and a supply of money provided by the French King, Tyrconnell threw off the



SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697

mask. A flag was hoisted over Dublin Castle, with the words embroidered on its folds "Now or Never." The signal called every Catholic to arms. The maddened natives flung themselves on the plunder which their masters had left, and in a few weeks havoc was done, the French envoy told Lewis, which it would take years to repair. Meanwhile James sailed from France to Kinsale. His aim was to carry out an invasion of England with the fifty thousand men that Tyrconnell was said to have at his disposal. But his hopes were ruined by the war of races which had broken



THE WALLS OF LONDONDERRY.

Built 1609.

After W. H. Bartlett.

*Siege of  
Londonderry*

out. To Tyrconnell and the Irish leaders the King's plans were utterly distasteful. Their policy was that of Ireland for the Irish, and the first step was to drive out the Englishmen who still stood at bay in Ulster. Half of Tyrconnell's army therefore had been sent against Londonderry, where the bulk of the fugitives found shelter behind a weak wall, manned by a few old guns, and destitute even of a ditch. But the seven thousand desperate Englishmen behind the wall made up for its weakness. So fierce were their sallies, so crushing the repulse of his attack, that the King's general, Hamilton, at last turned the siege into a blockade.

The Protestants died of hunger in the streets, and of the fever which comes of hunger, but the cry of the town was still "No Surrender." The siege had lasted a hundred and five days, and only two days' food remained in Londonderry, when on the 28th of July an English ship broke the boom across the river, and the besiegers sullenly withdrew. Their defeat was turned into a rout by the men of Enniskillen, who struggled through a bog to charge an Irish force of double their number at Newtown Butler and drove horse and foot

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697



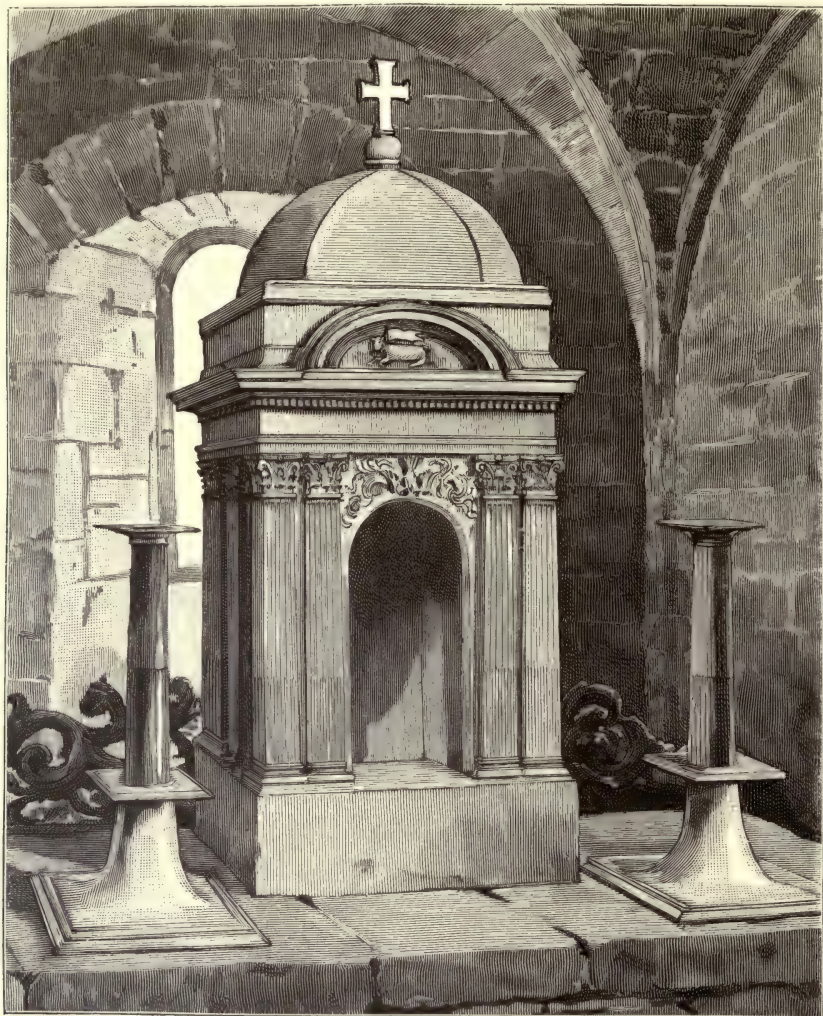
SIEGE OF LONDONDERRY.  
"Engelants Schouwtoneel," &c., 1690.

before them in a panic which soon spread through Hamilton's whole army. The routed soldiers fell back on Dublin, where James lay helpless in the hands of the frenzied Parliament which he had summoned. Every member returned was an Irishman and a Catholic, and their one aim was to undo the successive confiscations which had given the soil to English settlers and to get back Ireland for the Irish. The Act of Settlement on which all title to property rested was at once repealed in spite of the King's reluctance. Three thousand Protestants of name and



SEC. VIII fortune were massed together in the hugest Bill of Attainder  
THE GRAND ALLIANCE which the world has seen. In spite of James's promise of religious

1689  
TO  
1697



TABERNACLE AND CANDLESTICKS GIVEN BY JAMES II. TO CHRISTCHURCH  
CATHEDRAL, DUBLIN.

*From a drawing by Mr. Thomas Drew, R.H.A.*

freedom, the Protestant clergy were driven from their parsonages, Fellows and scholars were turned out of Trinity College, and



the French envoy, the Count of Avaux, dared even to propose that if any Protestant rising took place on the English descent, as was expected, it should be met by a general massacre of the Protestants who still lingered in the districts which had submitted to James. To his credit the King shrank horror-struck from the proposal. "I cannot be so cruel," he said, "as to cut their throats

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697



EXCHANGE, LONDONDERRY, AS REBUILT AFTER THE SIEGE.

while they live peaceably under my government." "Mercy to Protestants," was the cold reply, "is cruelty to Catholics."

Through the long agony of Londonderry, through the proscription and bloodshed of the new Irish rule, William was forced to look helplessly on. The best troops in the army which had been mustered at Hounslow had been sent with Marlborough to the Sambre; and the political embarrassments which grew up around

England  
and the  
Revolution

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE

1689

TO

1697

*Bill of  
Rights*

the Government made it impossible to spare a man of those who remained. The great ends of the Revolution were indeed secured, even amidst the confusion and intrigue which we shall have to describe, by the common consent of all. On the great questions of civil liberty Whig and Tory were now at one. The Declaration of Rights was turned into the Bill of Rights by the Convention which had now become a Parliament, and the passing of this measure in 1689 restored to the monarchy the character which it had lost under the Tudors and the Stuarts. The right of the people through its representatives to depose the King, to change the order of succession, and to set on the throne whom they would, was now established. All claim of Divine Right, or hereditary right independent of the law, was formally put an end to by the election of William and Mary. Since their day no English sovereign has been able to advance any claim to the crown save a claim which rested on a particular clause in a particular Act of Parliament. William, Mary, and Anne were sovereigns simply by virtue of the Bill of Rights. George the First and his



MACE MADE FOR THE GILDS OF  
CORK, 1696.  
*South Kensington Museum.*

successors have been sovereigns solely by virtue of the Act of Settlement. An English monarch is now as much the creature of an Act of Parliament as the pettiest tax-gatherer in his realm. Nor was the older character of the kingship alone restored. The older constitution returned with it. Bitter experience had taught

England the need of restoring to the Parliament its absolute power over taxation. The grant of revenue for life to the last two kings had been the secret of their anti-national policy, and the first act of the new legislature was to restrict the grant of the royal revenue to a term of four years. William was bitterly galled by the provision. "The gentlemen of England trusted King James," he said, "who was an enemy of their religion and their laws, and they will not trust me, by whom their religion and their laws have been preserved." But the only change brought about in the Parliament by this burst of royal anger was a resolve henceforth to make the vote of supplies an annual one, a resolve which, in spite of the slight changes introduced by the next Tory Parliament, soon became an invariable rule. A change of almost as great importance established the control of Parliament over the army. The hatred to a standing army which had begun under Cromwell had only deepened under James; but with the continental war the existence of an army was a necessity. As yet, however, it was a force which had no legal existence. The soldier was simply an ordinary subject; there were no legal means of punishing strictly military offences or of providing for military discipline: and the assumed power of billeting soldiers in private houses had been taken away by the law. The difficulty both of Parliament and the army was met by the Mutiny Act. The powers requisite for discipline in the army were conferred by Parliament on its officers, and provision was made for the pay of the force, but both pay and disciplinary powers were granted only for a single year. The Mutiny Act, like the grant of supplies, has remained annual ever since the Revolution; and as it is impossible for the State to exist without supplies, or for the army to exist without discipline and pay, the annual assembly of Parliament has become a matter of absolute necessity. The greatest constitutional change which our history has witnessed was thus brought about in an indirect but perfectly efficient way. The dangers which experience had lately shown lay in the Parliament itself were met with far less skill. Under Charles, England had seen a Parliament, which had been returned in a moment of reaction, maintained without fresh election for eighteen years. A Triennial Bill, which limited the duration of a Parliament to three, was

SEC. VIII

THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE

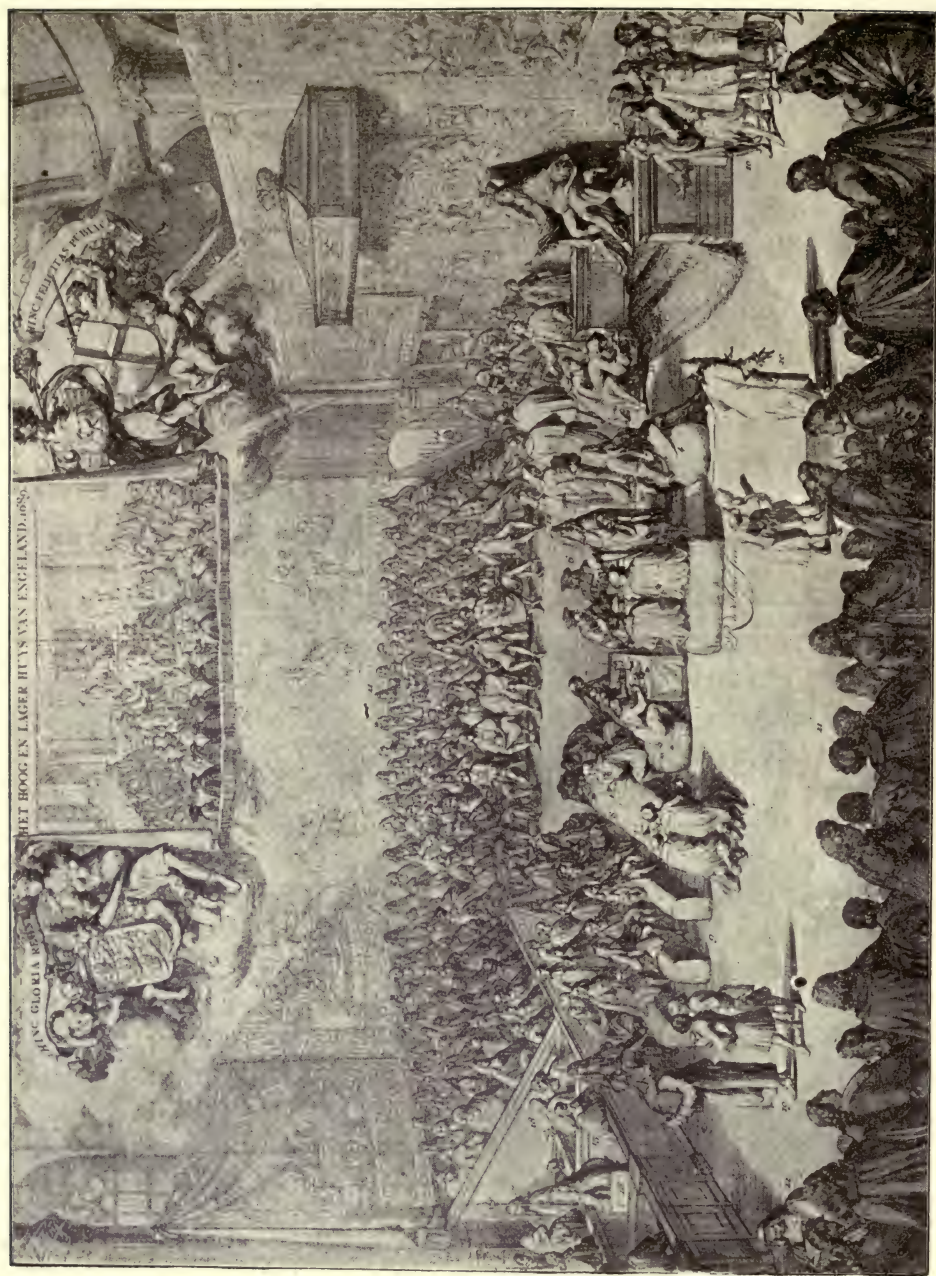
1689

TO

1697

*Taxation**The Army**The  
Parlia-  
ment*





WILLIAM III. IN PARLIAMENT.  
*From an engraving by Romeyn de Hooge.*

passed with little opposition, but fell before the dislike and veto of William. To counteract the influence which a king might obtain by crowding the Commons with officials proved a yet harder task. A Place Bill, which excluded all persons in the employment of the State from a seat in Parliament, was defeated, and wisely defeated, in the Lords. The modern course of providing against a pressure from the Court or the administration by excluding all minor officials, but of preserving the hold of Parliament over the great officers of State by admitting them into its body, seems as yet to have occurred to nobody. It is equally strange that while vindicating its right of Parliamentary control over the public revenue and the army, the Bill of Rights should have left by its silence the control of trade to the Crown. It was only a few years later, in the discussions on the charter granted to the East India Company, that the Houses silently claimed and obtained the right of regulating English commerce.

The religious results of the Revolution were hardly less weighty than the political. In the common struggle against Catholicism Churchman and Nonconformist had found themselves, as we have seen, strangely at one; and schemes of Comprehension became suddenly popular. But with the fall of James the union of the two bodies abruptly ceased: and the establishment of a Presbyterian Church in Scotland, together with the "rabbling" of the Episcopalian clergy in its western shires, revived the old bitterness of the clergy towards the dissidents. The Convocation rejected the scheme of the Latitudinarians for such modifications of the Prayer-book as would render possible a return of the Nonconformists, and a Comprehension Bill which was introduced into Parliament failed to pass in spite of the King's strenuous support. William's attempt to partially admit Dissenters to civil equality by a repeal of the Corporation Act proved equally fruitless; but the passing of a Toleration Act in 1689 practically established freedom of worship. Whatever the religious effect of the failure of the Latitudinarian schemes may have been, its political effect has been of the highest value. At no time had the Church been so strong or so popular as at the Revolution, and the reconciliation of the Nonconformists would have doubled its strength. It is doubtful whether the disinclination to all political

SEC. VIII

THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE

1689

TO

1697

Tolera-  
tion  
and the  
Church*Tolera-  
tion Act*



SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697

change which has characterized it during the last two hundred years would have been affected by such a change ; but it is certain that the power of opposition which it has wielded would have been enormously increased. As it was, the Toleration Act established a group of religious bodies whose religious opposition to the Church forced them to support the measures of progress which



NONCONFORMIST CHAPEL, DEAN ROW, CHESHIRE.

Built 1693.

*Earwaker, "East Cheshire."*

*The Non-  
jurors*

the Church opposed. With religious forces on the one side and on the other England has escaped the great stumbling-block in the way of nations where the cause of religion has become identified with that of political reaction. A secession from within its own ranks weakened the Church still more. The doctrine of Divine Right had a strong hold on the body of the clergy, though they had been driven from their other favourite doctrine of passive



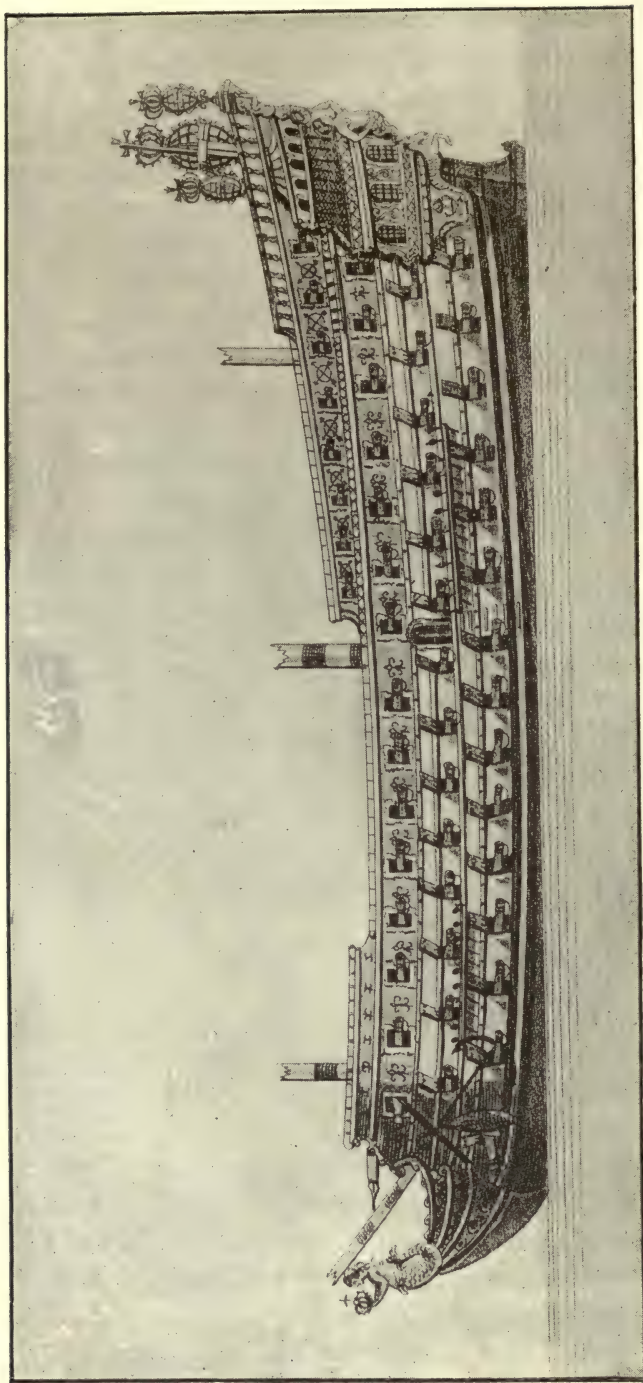
obedience, and the requirement of the oath of allegiance to the new sovereigns from all persons in public functions was resented as an intolerable wrong by almost every parson. Sancroft, the Archbishop of Canterbury, with a few prelates and a large number of the higher clergy, absolutely refused the oath, treated all who took it as schismatics, and on their deprivation by Act of Parliament regarded themselves and their adherents, who were known as Nonjurors, as the only members of the true Church of England. The bulk of the clergy bowed to necessity, but their bitterness against the new Government was fanned into a flame by the religious policy announced in this assertion of the supremacy of Parliament over the Church, and the deposition of bishops by an act of the legislature. The new prelates, such as Tillotson, the Archbishop of Canterbury, and Burnet, Bishop of Salisbury, were men of learning and piety ; but it was only among Whigs and Latitudinarians that William and his successors could find friends among the clergy, and it was mainly to these that they were driven to entrust the higher offices of the Church. The result was a severance between the higher dignitaries and the mass of the clergy which broke the strength of the Church ; and till the time of George the Third its fiercest strife was waged within its own ranks. But the resentment at the measure which brought this strife about already added to the difficulties which William had to encounter.

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697

Yet greater difficulties arose from the temper of his Parliament. In the Commons the bulk of the members were Whigs, and their first aim was to redress the wrongs which the Whig party had suffered during the last two reigns. The attainder of Lord Russell was reversed. The judgements against Sidney, Cornish, and Alice Lisle were annulled. In spite of the opinion of the judges that the sentence on Titus Oates had been against law, the Lords refused to reverse it, but even Oates received a pardon and a pension. The Whigs however wanted not merely the redress of wrongs but the punishment of the wrong-doers. Whig and Tory had been united, indeed, by the tyranny of James ; both parties had shared in the Revolution, and William had striven to prolong their union by joining the leaders of both in his first Ministry. He named the

The Act  
of Grace

*Political  
difficulties*



THE "SOLEIL ROYAL."  
Finest ship of the navy of Louis XIV. ; built 1690.  
*Charnock, "History of Marine Architecture."*

Shrewsbury Secretary of State, and gave the Privy Seal to Lord Halifax, a trimmer between the one party and the other. But save in a moment of common oppression or common danger union was impossible. The Whigs clamoured for the punishment of Tories who had joined in the illegal acts of Charles and of James, and refused to pass the Bill of General Indemnity which William laid before them. William on the other hand was resolved that no bloodshed or proscription should follow the revolution which had placed him on the throne. His temper was averse from persecution; he had no great love for either of the battling parties; and above all he saw that internal strife would be fatal to the effective prosecution of the war. While the cares of his new throne were chaining him to England, the confederacy of which he was the guiding spirit was proving too slow and too loosely compacted to cope with the swift and resolute movements of France. The armies of Lewis had fallen back within their own borders, but only to turn fiercely at bay. Even the junction of the English and Dutch fleets failed to assure them the mastery of the seas. The English navy was paralyzed by the corruption which prevailed in the public service, as well as by the sloth and incapacity of its commander. The services of Admiral Herbert at the Revolution had been rewarded by the Earldom of Torrington and the command of the fleet; but his indolence suffered the seas to be swept by French privateers, and his want of seamanship was shown in an indecisive engagement with a French squadron in Bantry Bay. Meanwhile Lewis was straining every nerve to win the command of the Channel; the French dockyards were turning out ship after ship, and the galleys of the Mediterranean fleet were brought round to reinforce the fleet at Brest. A French victory off the English coast would have brought serious political danger, for the reaction of popular feeling which had begun in favour of James had been increased by the pressure of the war, by the taxation, by the expulsion of the Nonjurors and the discontent of the clergy, by the panic of the Tories at the spirit of vengeance which broke out among the triumphant Whigs, and above all by the presence of James in Ireland. A new party, that of the Jacobites or adherents of King James, was just forming; and it was feared that a Jacobite rising would follow the appearance of a French fleet

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697

*The  
Jacobites*



SEC. VIII

THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE

1689

TO

1697

1690

on the coast. In such a state of affairs William judged rightly that to yield to the Whig thirst for vengeance would have been to ruin his cause. He dissolved the Parliament, which had refused to pass a Bill of Indemnity for all political offences, and called a new one to meet in March. The result of the election proved that he had only expressed the general temper of the nation. The boroughs had been alienated from the Whigs by their refusal to pass the Indemnity, and their attempts to secure the Corporations for their own party ; while in the counties parson after parson led his flock to the poll against the Whigs. In the new Parliament the bulk of the members proved Tories. William accepted the resignation of the more violent Whigs among his councillors, and



MEDAL COMMEMORATING RESTORATION OF TOWN CHARTERS, 1690.

placed Danby at the head of affairs. In May the Houses gave their assent to the Act of Grace. The King's aim in this sudden change of front was not only to meet the change in the national spirit, but to secure a momentary lull in English faction which would suffer him to strike at the rebellion in Ireland. While James was King in Dublin it was hopeless to crush treason at home ; and so urgent was the danger, so precious every moment in the present juncture of affairs, that William could trust no one to bring the work as sharply to an end as was needful save himself.

In the autumn of the year 1689 the Duke of Schomberg, an exiled Huguenot who had followed William to England, had been sent with a small force to Ulster, but his landing had only roused

Battle  
of the  
Boyne

Ireland to a fresh enthusiasm. The ranks of the Irish army were filled up at once, and James was able to face the Duke at Drogheda with a force double that of his opponent. Schomberg, whose men were all raw recruits whom it was hardly possible to trust at such

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697



LIMERICK FROM THE SEA.

*Drawing, c. 1685, in British Museum.*

odds in the field, entrenched himself at Dundalk, in a camp where pestilence soon swept off half his men, till winter parted the two armies. During the next six months James, whose treasury was utterly exhausted, strove to fill it by a coinage of brass money, while his soldiers subsisted by sheer plunder. William meanwhile was toiling hard on the other side of the Channel to bring the Irish



CARRICKFERGUS.

*Drawing, c. 1680, British Museum.*

war to an end. Schomberg was strengthened during the winter with men and stores, and when the spring came his force reached thirty thousand men. Lewis too felt the importance of the coming struggle; and seven thousand picked Frenchmen, under the Count

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE

1689  
TO  
1697

July 1,  
1690



ARMOUR WORN BY JAMES II. AT THE BOYNE.  
*Tower of London.*

*The Irish  
War*

of Lauzun, were despatched to reinforce the army of James. They had hardly arrived when William himself landed at Carrickfergus, and pushed rapidly to the south. His columns soon caught sight of the Irish forces, posted strongly behind the Boyne. "I am glad to see you, gentlemen," William cried with a burst of delight; "and if you escape me now the fault will be mine." Early next morning the whole English army plunged into the river. The Irish foot broke in a sudden panic, but the horse made so gallant a stand that Schomberg fell in repulsing its charge, and for a time the English centre was held in check. With the arrival of William, however, at the head of the left wing all was over. James, who had throughout been striving to secure the withdrawal of his troops rather than frankly to meet William's onset, forsook his troops as they fell back in retreat upon Dublin, and took ship at Kinsale for France.

But though the beaten army was forced by William's pursuit to abandon the capital, it was still resolute to fight. The incapacity



of the Stuart sovereign moved the scorn even of his followers. "Change kings with us," an Irish officer replied to an Englishman who taunted him with the panic of the Boyne, "change kings with us and we will fight you again." They did better in fighting without a king. The French, indeed, withdrew scornfully from the routed army as it stood at bay beneath the walls of Limerick. "Do you call these ramparts?" sneered Lauzun: "the English will need no cannon; they may batter them down with roasted apples." But twenty thousand men remained with Sarsfield, a brave and skilful officer who had seen service in England and abroad; and

SEC. VIII  
 THE GRAND  
 ALLIANCE  
 1689  
 TO  
 1697



KING JOHN'S CASTLE, LIMERICK.  
*After W. H. Bartlett.*

his daring surprise of the English ammunition train, his repulse of a desperate attempt to storm the town, and the approach of the winter, forced William to raise the siege. The course of the war abroad recalled him to England, and he left his work to one who was quietly proving himself a master in the art of war. Churchill, now Earl of Marlborough, had been recalled from Flanders to command a division which landed in the south of Ireland. Only a few days remained before the operations were interrupted by the coming of winter, but the few days were turned to good account. Cork, with five thousand men behind its walls, was taken

SEC. VIII

THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE

1689

TO

1697

*Ireland  
conquered*

Oct. 1691

in forty-eight hours. Kinsale a few days later shared the fate of Cork. Winter indeed left Connaught and the greater part of Munster in Irish hands; the French force remained untouched, and the coming of a new French general, St. Ruth, with arms and supplies encouraged the insurgents. But the summer of 1691 had hardly opened when Ginkell, the new English general, by his seizure of Athlone forced on a battle with the combined French and Irish forces at Aughrim, in which St. Ruth fell on the field and his army was utterly broken. The defeat left Limerick alone in its revolt, and even Sarsfield bowed to the necessity of a surrender. Two treaties were drawn up between the Irish and English generals. By the first it was stipulated that the Catholics of Ireland should enjoy such privileges in the exercise of their religion as were consistent with law, or as they had enjoyed in the reign of Charles the Second. The Crown pledged itself also to summon a Parliament as soon as possible, and to endeavour to procure to the good Roman Catholics security "from any disturbance upon the account of the said religion." By the military treaty those of Sarsfield's soldiers who would were suffered to follow him to France; and ten thousand men, the whole of his force, chose exile rather than life in a land where all hope of national freedom was lost. When the wild cry of the women who stood watching their departure was hushed, the silence of death settled down upon Ireland. For a hundred years the country remained at peace, but the peace was a peace of despair. The most terrible legal tyranny under which a nation has ever groaned avenged the rising under Tyrconnell. The conquered people, in Swift's bitter words of contempt, became "hewers of wood and drawers of water" to their conquerors. Though local risings of these serfs perpetually spread terror among the English settlers, all dream of a national revolt passed away; and till the eve of the French Revolution Ireland ceased to be a source of political danger to England.

**The  
Jacobite  
Plots**

Short as the struggle of Ireland had been, it had served Lewis well, for while William was busy at the Boyne a series of brilliant successes was restoring the fortunes of France. In Flanders the Duke of Luxembourg won the victory of Fleurus. In Italy Marshal Catinat defeated the Duke of Savoy. A success of even greater moment, the last victory which France was fated to win at

sea, placed for an instant the very throne of William in peril. William never showed a cooler courage than in quitting England to fight James in Ireland at a moment when the Jacobites were only looking for the appearance of a French fleet on the coast to rise in revolt. He was hardly on his way in fact when Tourville, the French admiral, put to sea with strict orders to fight. He was met by the English and Dutch fleet at Beachy Head, and the Dutch division at once engaged. Though utterly outnumbered, it fought stubbornly in hope of Herbert's aid ; but Herbert, whether from

SEC. VIII

THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE

1689

TO

1697

June 30,  
1690

MEDAL OF LOUIS XIV. COMMEMORATING VICTORY AT BEACHY HEAD.  
(Reverse.)

cowardice or treason, looked idly on while his allies were crushed and withdrew at nightfall to seek shelter in the Thames. The danger was as great as the shame, for Tourville's victory left him master of the Channel, and his presence off the coast of Devon invited the Jacobites to revolt. But whatever the discontent of Tories and Nonjurors against William might be, all signs of it vanished with the landing of the French. The burning of Teignmouth by Tourville's sailors called the whole coast to arms ; and the news of the Boyne put an end to all dreams of a rising in

*French  
descent on  
England*





MONS.

*Deschamps, 1800. Gravé par J. Goussier.*

favour of James. The natural reaction against a cause which looked for foreign aid gave a new strength for the moment to William in England; but ill luck still hung around the Grand Alliance. So urgent was the need for his presence abroad that William left, as we have seen, his work in Ireland undone, and crossed in the spring of 1691 to Flanders. It was the first time since the days of Henry the Eighth that an English king had appeared on the Continent at the head of an English army. But the slowness of the allies again baffled William's hopes. He was forced to look on with a small army while a hundred thousand Frenchmen closed suddenly around Mons, the strongest fortress of the Netherlands, and made themselves masters of it in the presence of Lewis. The humiliation was great, and for the moment all trust in William's fortune faded away. In England the blow was felt more heavily than elsewhere. The Jacobite hopes which had been crushed by the indignation at Tourville's descent woke up to a fresh life. Leading Tories, such as Lord Clarendon and Lord Dartmouth, opened communications with James; and some of the leading Whigs, with the Earl of Shrewsbury at their head, angered at what they regarded as William's ingratitude, followed them in their course. In Lord Marlborough's mind the state of affairs raised hopes of a double treason. His design was to bring about a revolt which would drive William from the throne without replacing James, and give the crown to his daughter Anne, whose affection for Marlborough's wife would place the real government of England in his hands. A yet greater danger lay in the treason of Admiral Russell, who had succeeded Torrington in command of the fleet. Russell's defection would have removed the one obstacle to a new attempt which James was resolved to make for the recovery of his throne, and which Lewis had been brought to support. In the beginning of 1692 an army of thirty thousand troops was quartered in Normandy in readiness for a descent on the English coast. Transports were provided for their passage, and Tourville was ordered to cover it with the French fleet at Brest. Though Russell had twice as many ships as his opponent, the belief in his purpose of betraying William's cause was so strong that Lewis ordered Tourville to engage the allied fleets at any disadvantage.

SEC. VIII

THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE1689  
TO  
1697*Intrigues  
in  
England*





# BATTLE OF LA HOGUE.

*From a contemporary engraving by Roumey de Hooge.*

Represents the final destruction of the French fleet at the close of the six days' fight.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p>A. Admiral Russell's squadron.<br/>         B. Light frigates to protect the fire-ships and schooners.<br/>         C. "Le Conquérant."<br/>         D. "Le Magnifique."<br/>         E. "Le Triomphant," and "Le Trident."<br/>         F. Schooners and skiffs, whence many English nobles themselves stop the fire in the French ships.<br/>         G. "L'Ambiteux."<br/>         H. "Le Tonnant."<br/>         I. "Le Terrible."<br/>         K. "Le St. Philippe."<br/>         L. "L'Amiable."<br/>         M. Small French frigates and transports, between the Continent and the islands of Marcou.<br/>         N. Remaining merchantmen, with stores and ammunition, also mostly burnt in the Bay.</p> | <p>O. Encampments of the late King James, the Marquis de Bellefonds, &amp;c., abandoned owing to the fire of our schooners and frigates.<br/>         P. Ste. Pernelle, second encampment where the powder-magazine exploded.<br/>         Q. St. Vas, with the platforms on both sides of the Bay, overshot with the Cape of Barleur.<br/>         R. The "Soleil Royal," Tourville's flagship.<br/>         S. "L'Admirable."<br/>         T. "Le Fort," with some smaller ones burnt by the schooners on Cape de Wyk.<br/>         V. Chevalier Delaval and his squadron (which burned the French flag-ship, &amp;c.)<br/>         W. Cherbourg.<br/>         X. Admiral Alloumonde destroying most of the remaining fugitives.<br/>         Y. Rear-Admiral Schey, with some French ships at Cape de La Hogue.<br/>         Z. Fosse d'Aumonville.</p> |
|--|--|



But whatever Russell's intrigues may have meant, he was no Herbert. "Do not think I will let the French triumph over us in our own seas," he warned his Jacobite correspondents. "If I meet them, I will fight them, even though King James were on board." When the allied fleets met the French off the heights of Barfleur his fierce attack proved Russell true to his word. Tourville's fifty vessels were no match for the ninety ships of the allies, and after five hours of a brave struggle the French were forced to fly along the rocky coast of the Cotentin. Twenty-two of their vessels

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697  
*Battle of  
La Hogue*



MEDAL COMMEMORATING VICTORY AT LA HOGUE.  
(Reverse.)

William's reply to Louis's medal for victory at Beachy Head.

reached St. Malo ; thirteen anchored with Tourville in the bays of Cherbourg and La Hogue ; but their pursuers were soon upon them, and in a bold attack the English boats burnt ship after ship under the eyes of the French army. All dread of the invasion was at once at an end ; and the throne of William was secured by the detection and suppression of the Jacobite conspiracy at home which the invasion was intended to support. But the overthrow of the Jacobite hopes was the least result of the victory of La Hogue. France ceased from that moment to exist as a great naval power ;

*The turn  
of the  
war*

SEC. VIII. for though her fleet was soon recruited to its former strength, the  
 THE GRAND confidence of her sailors was lost, and not even Tourville ventured  
 ALLIANCE again to tempt in battle the fortune of the seas. A new hope, too,  
 1689 TO dawned on the Grand Alliance. The spell of French triumph was  
 1697 broken. Namur indeed surrendered to Lewis, and the Duke of  
 1692 Luxembourg maintained the glory of the French army by a victory  
 over William at Steinkirk. But the battle was a useless butchery  
 in which the conquerors lost as many men as the conquered.  
 France felt herself disheartened and exhausted by the vastness of  
 her efforts. The public misery was extreme. "The country,"  
 Fénelon wrote frankly to Lewis, "is a vast hospital." In 1693 the  
 campaign of Lewis in the Netherlands proved a fruitless one, and  
 Luxembourg was hardly able to beat off the fierce attack of  
 William at Neerwinden. For the first time in his long career of  
 prosperity Lewis bent his pride to seek peace at the sacrifice of his  
 conquests, and though the effort was vain it told that the daring  
 hopes of French ambition were at an end, and that the work of the  
 Grand Alliance was practically done.

The First In outer seeming, the Revolution of 1688 had only transferred  
 English the sovereignty over England from James to William and Mary.  
 Ministry In actual fact it had given a powerful and decisive impulse to  
 the great constitutional progress which was transferring the  
 sovereignty from the King to the House of Commons. From  
 the moment when its sole right to tax the nation was established  
 by the Bill of Rights, and when its own resolve settled the practice  
 of granting none but annual supplies to the Crown, the House  
 of Commons became the supreme power in the State. It was  
 impossible permanently to suspend its sittings, or in the long run  
 to oppose its will, when either course must end in leaving the  
 Government penniless, in breaking up the army and navy, and in  
 suspending the public service. But though the constitutional  
 change was complete, the machinery of government was far from  
 having adapted itself to the new conditions of political life which  
 such a change brought about. However powerful the will of the  
 House of Commons might be, it had no means of bringing its will  
 directly to bear upon the conduct of public affairs. The Ministers  
 who had charge of them were not its servants, but the servants of  
 the Crown ; it was from the King that they looked for direction,

*The sov-  
 ereignty  
 of the  
 Commons*

and to the King that they held themselves responsible. By impeachment or more indirect means the Commons could force a King to remove a Minister who contradicted their will ; but they had no constitutional power to replace the fallen statesman by a Minister who would carry out their will. The result was the growth of a temper in the Lower House which drove William and his Ministers to despair. It became as corrupt, as jealous of power, as fickle in its resolves and factious in spirit, as bodies always become whose consciousness of the possession of power is untempered by a corresponding consciousness of the practical difficulties or the moral responsibilities of the power which they possess. It grumbled at the ill-success of the war, at the suffering of the merchants, at the discontent of the Churchmen : and it blamed the Crown and its Ministers for all at which it grumbled. But it was hard to find out what policy or measures it would have preferred. Its mood changed, as William bitterly complained, with every hour. It was, in fact, without the guidance of recognised leaders, without adequate information, and destitute of that organization out of which alone a definite policy can come. Nothing better proves the inborn political capacity of the English mind than that it should at once have found a simple and effective solution of such a difficulty as this. The credit of the solution belongs to a man whose political character was of the lowest type. Robert, Earl of Sunderland, had been a Minister in the later days of Charles the Second ; and he had remained Minister through almost all the reign of James. He had held office at last only by compliance with the worst tyranny of his master, and by a feigned conversion to the Roman Catholic faith ; but the ruin of James was no sooner certain than he had secured pardon and protection from William by the betrayal of the master to whom he had sacrificed his conscience and his honour. Since the Revolution Sunderland had striven only to escape public observation in a country retirement, but at this crisis he came secretly forward to bring his unequalled sagacity to the aid of the King. His counsel was to recognize practically the new power of the Commons by choosing the Ministers of the Crown exclusively from among the members of the party which was strongest in the Lower House. As yet no Ministry in the modern sense of the term had existed.

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697

*Lord Sun-  
derland*

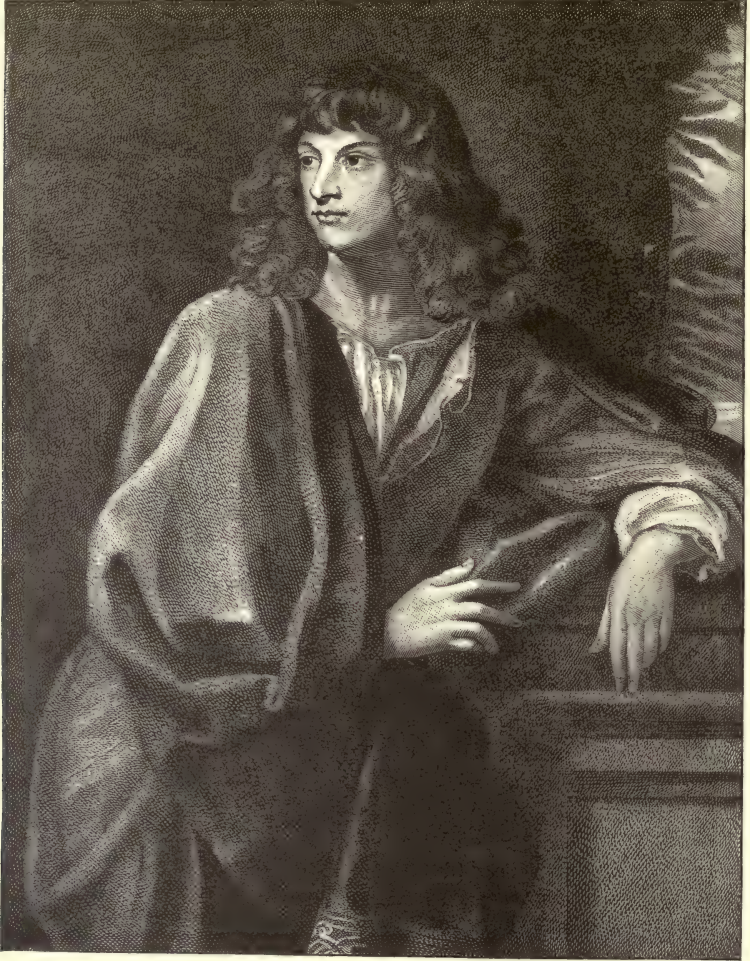
*The new  
minis-  
terial  
system*



## SEC. VIII

THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE1689  
TO  
1697

Each great officer of state, Treasurer or Secretary or Lord Privy Seal, had in theory been independent of his fellow-officers ; each was the "King's servant" and responsible for the discharge of his



ROBERT SPENCER, SECOND EARL OF SUNDERLAND.

*Picture by Carlo Maratta, at Althorpe.*

special duties to the King alone. From time to time one Minister, like Clarendon, might tower above the rest and give a general direction to the whole course of government, but the

predominance was merely personal and never permanent ; and even in such a case there were colleagues who were ready to oppose or even impeach the statesman who overshadowed them. It was common for a King to choose or dismiss a single Minister without any communication with the rest ; and so far was even William from aiming at ministerial unity, that he had striven to reproduce in the Cabinet itself the balance of parties which prevailed outside it. Sunderland's plan aimed at replacing these independent Ministers by a homogeneous Ministry, chosen from the same party, representing the same sentiments, and bound together for common action by a sense of responsibility and loyalty to the party to which it belonged. Not only would such a plan secure a unity of administration which had been unknown till then, but it gave an organization to the House of Commons which it had never had before. The Ministers who were representatives of the majority of its members became the natural leaders of the House. Small factions were drawn together into the two great parties which supported or opposed the Ministry of the Crown. Above all it brought about in the simplest possible way the solution of the problem which had so long vexed both King and Commons. The new Ministers ceased in all but name to be the King's servants. They became simply an executive Committee representing the will of the majority of the House of Commons, and capable of being easily set aside by it and replaced by a similar Committee whenever the balance of power shifted from one side of the House to the other.

Such was the origin of that system of representative government which has gone on from Sunderland's day to our own. But though William showed his own political genius in understanding and adopting Sunderland's plan, it was only slowly and tentatively that he ventured to carry it out in practice. In spite of the temporary reaction Sunderland believed that the balance of political power was really on the side of the Whigs. Not only were they the natural representatives of the principles of the Revolution, and the supporters of the war, but they stood far above their opponents in parliamentary and administrative talent. At their head stood a group of statesmen, whose close union in thought and action gained them the name of the Junto. Russell,

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697

The  
Junto



SEC. VIII as yet the most prominent of these, was the victor of La Hogue ;  
 THE GRAND ALLIANCE John Somers was an advocate who had sprung into fame by his  
 1689 defence of the Seven Bishops ; Lord Wharton was known as  
 TO the most dexterous and unscrupulous of party managers ; and  
 1697 Montague was fast making a reputation as the ablest of English  
 financiers. In spite of such considerations, however, it is doubtful  
 whether William would have thrown himself into the hands of a  
 purely Whig Ministry but for the attitude which the Tories took  
 1694 towards the war. Exhausted as France was the war still  
 languished, and the allies failed to win a single victory. Mean-  
 while English trade was all but ruined by the French privateers,  
 and the nation stood aghast at the growth of taxation. The  
 Tories, always cold in their support of the Grand Alliance, now  
 became eager for peace. The Whigs, on the other hand, remained  
 resolute in their support of the war. William, in whose mind the  
 contest with France was the first object, was thus driven slowly to  
 follow Sunderland's advice. Montague had already met the strain  
 of the war by bringing forward a plan which had been previously  
 suggested by a Scotchman, William Paterson, for the creation of  
 a National Bank. While serving as an ordinary bank for the  
 supply of capital, the Bank of England, as the new institution was  
 called, was in reality an instrument for procuring loans from the  
 people at large by the formal pledge of the State to repay the  
 money advanced on the demand of the lender. A loan of  
 £1,200,000 was thrown open to public subscription ; and the  
 subscribers to it were formed into a chartered company in whose  
 hands the negotiations of all after loans was placed. In ten days  
 the list of subscribers was full. The discovery of the resources  
 afforded by the national wealth revealed a fresh source of power ;  
 and the rapid growth of the National Debt, as the mass of these  
 loans to the State came to be called, gave a new security against  
 the return of the Stuarts, whose first work would have been the  
 repudiation of the claims of the lenders or "fundholders." The  
 evidence of the public credit gave strength to William abroad,  
 while at home a new unity of action followed the change which  
 Sunderland counselled and which was quietly carried out. One  
 by one the Tory Ministers, already weakened by Montague's  
 success, were replaced by members of the Junto. Russell went to

*The  
National  
Debt*  
1694



the Admiralty; Somers was named Lord Keeper; Shrewsbury, Secretary of State; Montague, Chancellor of the Exchequer. Even before this change was completed its effect was felt. The House of Commons took a new tone. The Whig majority of its members, united and disciplined, moved quietly under the direction of their natural leaders, the Whig Ministers of the Crown. It was this which enabled William to face the shock which was given to his position by the death of Queen Mary. The renewed attacks of the Tories showed what fresh hopes had been raised by William's lonely position. The Parliament, however, whom the King had just conciliated by assenting at last to the Triennial Bill,

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697

*Death of  
Mary*  
1694



MEDAL COMMEMORATING THE STORMING OF TOUBOCAN (DARIEN), 1700.

went steadily with the Ministry; and its fidelity was rewarded by triumph abroad. In 1695 the Alliance succeeded for the first time in winning a great triumph over France in the capture of Namur. The King skilfully took advantage of his victory to call a new Parliament, and its members at once showed their temper by a vigorous support of the war. The Houses, indeed, were no mere tools in William's hands. They forced him to resume prodigal grants of lands made to his Dutch favourites, and to remove his ministers in Scotland who had aided in a wild project for a Scotch colony on the Isthmus of Darien. They claimed a right to name members of the new Board of Trade, established for

1696

SEC. VIII the regulation of commercial matters. They rejected a proposal, never henceforth to be revived, for a censorship of the Press. But

THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE

1689

TO

1697



HOUSE AT BRISTOL, USED 1696—1697 AS THE MINT.  
*Seyer, "Memorials of Bristol."*

there was no factious opposition. So strong was the ministry that Montague was enabled to face the general distress that was caused for the moment by a reform of the currency, which had been

reduced by clipping to far less than its nominal value; and in spite of the financial embarrassments created by the reform, William was able to hold the French at bay.

SEC. VIII  
THE GRAND  
ALLIANCE  
1689  
TO  
1697

Peace of  
Ryswick

But the war was fast drawing to a close. Lewis was simply fighting to secure more favourable terms, and William, though he held that "the only way of treating with France is with our swords in our hands," was almost as eager as Lewis for a peace. The defection of Savoy made it impossible to carry out the original aim of the Alliance, that of forcing France back to its position at the Treaty of Westphalia, and the question of the Spanish succession was drawing closer every day. The obstacles which were thrown in the way of an accommodation by Spain and the Empire were set aside in a private negotiation between William and Lewis, and the year 1697 saw the conclusion of the Peace of Ryswick. In spite of failure and defeat in the field William's policy had won. The victories of France remained barren in the face of a United Europe; and her exhaustion forced her, for the first time since Richelieu's day, to consent to a disadvantageous peace. On the side of the Empire France withdrew from every annexation save that of Strassburg which she had made since the Treaty of Nimeguen, and Strassburg would have been restored but for the unhappy delays of the German negotiators. To Spain Lewis restored Luxemburg and all the conquests he had made during the war in the Netherlands. The Duke of Lorraine was replaced in his dominions. A far more important provision of the peace pledged Lewis to an abandonment of the Stuart cause and a recognition of William as King of England. For Europe in general the Peace of Ryswick was little more than a truce. But for England it was the close of a long and obstinate struggle and the opening of a new æra of political history. It was the final and decisive defeat of the conspiracy which had gone on between Lewis and the Stuarts ever since the Treaty of Dover, the conspiracy to turn England into a Roman Catholic country and into a dependency of France. But it was even more than this. It was the definite establishment of England as the centre of European resistance against all attempts to overthrow the balance of power.

1697





MARLBOROUGH.

*Drawing by Sir G. Kneller, in British Museum.*

## SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712



SILVER CALL-WHISTLE.

Seventeenth Century.

*In the possession of Lord Zouche.*

## Section IX.—Marlborough, 1698—1712

[*Authorities.*—Lord Macaulay's great work, which practically ends at the Peace of Ryswick, has been continued by Lord Stanhope ("History of England under Queen Anne") during this period. For Marlborough himself the main authority must be the Duke's biography by Archdeacon Coxe, with his "Despatches." The French side of the war and negotiations has been carefully given by M. Martin ("Histoire de France") in what is the most accurate and judicious portion of his work. Swift's Journal to Stella and his political tracts, and Bolingbroke's correspondence, show the character of the Tory opposition.]

What had bowed the pride of Lewis to the humiliating terms of the Peace of Ryswick was not so much the exhaustion of France as the need of preparing for a new and greater struggle. The death of the King of Spain, Charles the Second, was known to be at hand ; and with him ended the male line of the Austrian princes, who for two hundred years had occupied the Spanish throne. How strangely Spain had fallen from its high estate in Europe the wars of Lewis had abundantly shown, but so vast was the extent

The  
Spanish  
Success-  
sion

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

of its empire, so enormous the resources which still remained to it, that under a vigorous ruler men believed its old power would at once return. Its sovereign was still master of some of the noblest provinces of the Old World and the New, of Spain itself, of the Milanese, of Naples and Sicily, of the Netherlands, of Southern America, of the noble islands of the Spanish Main. To add such a dominion as this to the dominion either of Lewis or of the Emperor would be to undo at a blow the work of European independence which William had wrought ; and it was with a view to prevent either of these results that William freed his hands by the Peace of Ryswick. At this moment the claimants of the Spanish succession were three : the French Dauphin, a son of the Spanish King's elder sister ; the Electoral Prince of Bavaria, a grandson of his younger sister ; and the Emperor, who was a son of Charles's aunt. In strict law—if there had been any law really applicable to the matter—the claim of the last was the strongest of the three ; for the claim of the Dauphin was barred by an express renunciation of all right to the succession at his mother's marriage with Lewis the Fourteenth, a renunciation which had been ratified at the Treaty of the Pyrenees ; and a similar renunciation barred the claim of the Bavarian candidate. The claim of the Emperor was more remote in blood, but it was barred by no renunciation at all. William, however, was as resolute in the interests of Europe to repulse the claim of the Emperor as to repulse that of Lewis ; and it was the consciousness that the Austrian succession was inevitable if the war continued and Spain remained a member of the Grand Alliance, in arms against France, and leagued with the Emperor, which made him suddenly conclude the Peace of Ryswick. Had England and Holland shared William's temper he would have insisted on the succession of the Electoral Prince to the whole Spanish dominions. But both were weary of war. In England the peace was at once followed by the reduction of the army at the demand of the House of Commons to fourteen thousand men ; and a clamour had already begun for the disbanding even of these. It was necessary to bribe the two rival claimants to a waiver of their claims ; and by the First Partition Treaty, concluded in 1698, between England, Holland, and France, the succession of the

*First  
Partition  
Treaty*  
1698



Electoral Prince was recognized on condition of the cession by Spain of its Italian possessions to his two rivals. The Milanese was to pass to the Emperor ; the Two Sicilies, with the border province of Guipuzcoa, to France. But the arrangement was hardly concluded when the death of the Bavarian prince made the Treaty waste paper. Austria and France were left face to face, and a terrible struggle, in which the success of either would be equally fatal to the independence of Europe, seemed unavoidable. The peril was greater that the temper of England left William without the means of backing his policy by arms. The suffering which the war had caused to the merchant class, and the pressure of the debt and taxation it entailed, were waking every day a more bitter

SEC. IX  
MARLBOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712



MEDAL COMMEMORATING FIRST PARTITION TREATY, 1698.

resentment in the people, and the general discontent avenged itself on William and the party who had backed his policy. The King's natural partiality to his Dutch favourites, the confidence he gave to Sunderland, his cold and sullen demeanour, his endeavours to maintain the standing army, robbed him of popularity. In the elections held at the close of 1698 a Tory majority pledged to peace was returned to the House of Commons. The Junto lost all hold on the new Parliament. The resignation of Montague and Russell was followed by the dismissal of the Whig ministry, and Somers and his friends were replaced by an administration composed of moderate Tories, with Lords Rochester and Godolphin as its leading members. The fourteen thousand men

*Fall of  
the Junto*

SEC. IX  
MARL-  
BOROUGH

1698  
TO  
1712

Second  
Partition  
Treaty  
1700

who still remained in the army were cut down to seven. William's earnest entreaty could not turn the Parliament from its resolve to send his Dutch guards out of the country. The navy, which had numbered forty thousand sailors during the war, was cut down to eight. How much William's hands were weakened by this peace-temper of England was shown by the Second Partition Treaty which was concluded between the two maritime powers and France. The demand of Lewis that the Netherlands should



DUTCH GUARDS.

Temp. William III.

*From an engraving by Romeyn de Hooge.*

be given to the Elector of Bavaria, whose political position left him a puppet in the French King's hands, was resisted. Spain, the Netherlands, and the Indies were assigned to the second son of the Emperor, the Archduke Charles of Austria. But the whole of the Spanish territories in Italy were now granted to France; and it was provided that Milan should be exchanged for Lorraine, whose Duke was to be summarily transferred to the new Duchy. If the Emperor persisted in his refusal to come into the Treaty, the

share of his son was to pass to another unnamed prince, who was probably the Duke of Savoy.

The Emperor still protested, but his protest was of little moment so long as Lewis and the two maritime powers held

firmly together. Nor was the bitter resentment of Spain of more avail.

The Spaniards cared little whether a French or an Austrian prince sat on the throne of Charles the Second, but their pride revolted against the dismemberment of the monarchy by the loss of its Italian dependencies. Even the dying King shared the anger of his subjects, and a will wrested from him by the factions which wrangled over his death-bed bequeathed the whole monarchy of

Spain to a grandson of Lewis, the Duke of Anjou, the second son of the Dauphin. The Treaty of Partition was so recent, and the risk of accepting this bequest so great, that Lewis would hardly have resolved on it but for his belief that the temper of England must necessarily render William's opposition a fruitless one. Never in fact had England been so averse from war. So strong was the antipathy to William's foreign policy that men openly approved the French King's course. Hardly any one in England dreaded the succession of a boy who, French as he was, would as they believed soon be turned into a Spaniard by the natural course of events. The succession of the Duke of Anjou was generally looked upon as far better than the increase of power which France would have derived from the cessions of the last

SEC. IX

MARLB.

BOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

The  
Second  
Grand  
Alliance



MEDAL COMMEMORATING HOMAGE  
OF DUKE OF LORRAINE TO  
LOUIS XIV.



MEDAL COMMEMORATING NOMINA-  
TION OF DUKE OF ANJOU AS  
KING OF SPAIN.



## SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

Duke of  
Anjou in  
Spain  
1701

Treaty of Partition, cessions which would have turned the Mediterranean, it was said, into a French lake, imperilled the English trade with the Levant and America, and raised France into a formidable power at sea. "It grieves me to the heart," William wrote bitterly, "that almost every one rejoices that France has preferred the Will to the Treaty." Astonished and angered as he was at his rival's breach of faith, he had no means of punishing it. The Duke of Anjou entered Madrid,

and Lewis proudly boasted that henceforth there were no Pyrenees. The life-work of William seemed undone. He knew himself to be dying. His cough was incessant, his eyes sunk and dead, his frame so weak that he could hardly get into his coach. But never had he shown himself so great. His courage rose with every difficulty. His temper, which had been heated by the personal affronts lavished on him through English faction, was hushed by a supreme effort of his will. His large and



SATIRICAL PLAYING-CARD.  
Temp. War of the Spanish Succession.  
British Museum.

clear-sighted intellect looked through the temporary embarrassments of French diplomacy and English party strife to the great interests which he knew must in the end determine the course of European politics. Abroad and at home all seemed to go against him. For the moment he had no ally save Holland, for Spain was now united with Lewis, while the attitude of Bavaria

divided Germany and held the House of Austria in check. The Bavarian Elector indeed, who had charge of the Spanish Netherlands and on whom William had counted, openly joined the French side from the first and proclaimed the Duke of Anjou as King in Brussels. In England the new Parliament was crowded with Tories who were resolute against war. The Tory Ministry pressed him to acknowledge the new King of Spain; and as even Holland did this William was forced to submit. He could only count on the greed of Lewis to help him, and he did not count in vain. The approval of the French King's action had sprung from the belief that he intended to leave Spain to the Spaniards under their new King. Bitter too as the strife of Whig and Tory might be in England, there were two things on which Whig and Tory were agreed. Neither would suffer France to occupy the Netherlands. Neither would endure a French attack on

the Protestant succession which the Revolution of 1688 had established. But the arrogance of Lewis blinded him to the need of moderation in his hour of good-luck. In the name of his grandson he introduced French troops into the seven fortresses known as the Dutch barrier, and into Ostend and the coast towns of Flanders. Even the Peace-Parliament at once acquiesced in William's demand for their withdrawal, and authorized him to conclude a defensive

SEC. IX  
MARLBOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712



JOHN DRYDEN, DIED 1700.  
*Picture by Sir G. Kneller.*

*England  
and the  
war*

SEC. IX  
MARLBOROUGH

1698  
TO  
1712

*Death of  
James*

Sept. 1701

*Act of  
Settle-  
ment*  
1701

alliance with Holland. The King's policy indeed was bitterly blamed, while the late ministers, Somers, Russell, and Montague (now become peers), were impeached for their share in the treaties. But outside the House of Commons the tide of national feeling rose as the designs of Lewis grew clearer. He refused to allow the Dutch barrier to be re-established ; and a great French fleet gathered in the Channel to support, it was believed, a fresh Jacobite descent, which was proposed by the ministers of James in a letter intercepted and laid before Parliament. Even the House of Commons took fire at this, and the fleet was raised to thirty thousand men, the army to ten thousand. Kent sent up a remonstrance against the factious measures by which the Tories still struggled against the King's policy, with a prayer that addresses might be turned into Bills of Supply ; and William was encouraged by these signs of a change of temper to despatch an English force to Holland, and to conclude a secret treaty with the United Provinces for the recovery of the Netherlands from Lewis, and for their transfer with the Milanese to the house of Austria as a means of counter-balancing the new power added to France. But England was still clinging desperately to a hope of peace, when Lewis by a sudden act forced it into war. He had acknowledged William as King in the Peace of Ryswick, and pledged himself to oppose all attacks on his throne. He now entered the bed-chamber at St. Germain where James was breathing his last, and promised to acknowledge his son at his death as King of England, Scotland, and Ireland. The promise was in fact a declaration of war, and in a moment all England was at one in accepting the challenge. The issue Lewis had raised was no longer a matter of European politics, but the question whether the work of the Revolution should be undone, and whether Catholicism and despotism should be replaced on the throne of England by the arms of France. On such a question as this there was no difference between Tory and Whig. When the death, in 1700, of the last child of the Princess Anne had been followed by a new Act of Succession, not a voice had been raised for James or his son ; and the descendants of the daughter of Charles the First, Henrietta of Orleans, whose only child had married the Catholic Duke of Savoy, were passed over in the same silence. The Parliament fell back on the line of



James the First. His daughter Elizabeth had married the Elector Palatine, and her only surviving child, Sophia, was the wife of the late and the mother of the present Elector of Hanover. It was in Sophia and her heirs, being Protestants, that the Act of Settlement vested the Crown. It was enacted that every English sovereign must be in communion with the Church of England as by law established. All future kings were forbidden to leave England without consent of Parliament, and foreigners were excluded from all public posts. The independence of justice was established by a clause which provided that no judge should be removed from office save on an address from Parliament to the Crown. The two principles that the King acts only through his ministers, and that these ministers are responsible to Parliament, were asserted by a requirement that all public business should be formally done in the Privy Council, and all its decisions signed by its members—provisions which went far to complete the parliamentary Constitution which had been drawn up by the Bill of Rights. The national union which had already been shown in this action of the Tory Parliament, now showed itself in the King's welcome on his return from the Hague, where the conclusion of a new Grand Alliance between the Empire, Holland, and the United Provinces, had rewarded William's patience and skill. The Alliance was soon joined by Denmark, Sweden, the Palatinate, and the bulk of the German States. The Parliament of 1702, though still Tory in the main, replied to William's stirring appeal by voting forty thousand soldiers and as many sailors for the coming struggle. A Bill of Attainder was passed

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712



THE ELECTRESS SOPHIA.

Reverse of a medal struck to commemorate the Act of Succession, 1701.

SEC. IX

MARL-  
BOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

Marl-  
borough

against the new Pretender ; and all members of either House and all public officials were sworn to uphold the succession of the House of Hanover.

But the King's weakness was already too great to allow of his taking the field ; and he was forced to entrust the war in the

Netherlands to the one Englishman who had shown himself capable of a great command. John Churchill, Earl of Marlborough, was born in 1650, the son of a Devonshire Cavalier, whose daughter became at the Restoration mistress of the Duke of York. The shame of Arabella did more perhaps than her father's loyalty to win for her brother a commission in the royal Guards ; and, after five years' service abroad under Turenne, the young captain became colonel of an English regiment which was retained in the service of France. He had already shown some of the qualities of a great soldier, an unruffled courage, a bold and venturesome temper held in check by a cool and serene judgement, a vigilance and capacity for enduring fatigue which never forsook him.



**M.<sup>R</sup> DE MARLEBOROUGH.**

*From an engraving after Van der Meulen.*

In later years he was known to spend a whole day in reconnoitring, and at Blenheim he remained on horseback for fifteen hours. But courage and skill in arms did less for Churchill on his return to the English court than his personal beauty. In the French camp

he had been known as "the handsome Englishman;" and his manners were as winning as his person. Even in age his address was almost irresistible: "he engrossed the graces," says Chesterfield; and his air never lost the careless sweetness which won the favour of Lady Castlemaine. A present of £5,000 from the King's mistress laid the foundation of a fortune which grew rapidly to greatness, as the prudent forethought of the handsome young soldier hardened into the avarice of age. But it was to the Duke of York that Churchill looked mainly for advancement, and he earned it by the fidelity with which as a member of his household he clung to the Duke's fortunes during the dark days of the Popish Plot. He followed James to the Hague and to Edinburgh, and on his master's return he was rewarded with a peerage and the colonelcy of the Life Guards. The service he rendered James after his accession by saving the royal army from a surprise at Sedgemoor would have been yet more splendidly acknowledged but for the King's bigotry. In spite of his master's personal solicitations Churchill remained true to Protestantism; but he knew James too well to count on further favour. Luckily he had now found a new groundwork for his fortunes in the growing influence of his wife over the King's second daughter, Anne; and at the crisis of the Revolution the adhesion of Anne to the cause of Protestantism was of the highest value. No sentiment of gratitude to his older patron hindered Marlborough from corresponding with the Prince of Orange, from promising Anne's sympathy to William's effort, or from deserting the ranks of the King's army when it faced William in the field. His desertion proved fatal to the royal cause; but great as this service was it was eclipsed by a second. It was by his wife's persuasion that Anne was induced to forsake her father and take refuge in Danby's camp. Unscrupulous as his conduct had been, the services which he rendered to William were too great to miss their reward. He became Earl of Marlborough; he was put at the head of a force during the Irish war where his rapid successes won William's regard; and he was given high command in the army of Flanders. But the sense of his power over Anne soon turned Marlborough from plotting treason against James to plot treason against William. Great as was his greed of gold, he had

SEC. IX  
MARLBOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712

*Churchill  
and  
James*

*Churchill  
and  
William*



SEC. IX  
MARL-  
BOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712

married Sarah Jennings, a penniless beauty of Charles's court, in whom a violent and malignant temper was strangely combined with a power of winning and retaining love. Churchill's affection for her ran like a thread of gold through the dark web of his career. In the midst of his marches and from the very battle-field



JOHN CHURCHILL, DUKE OF MARLBOROUGH.  
*Picture by J. Closterman, in National Portrait Gallery.*

he writes to his wife with the same passionate tenderness. The composure which no danger or hatred could ruffle broke down into almost womanish depression at the thought of her coldness or at any burst of her violent humour. He never left her without a pang. "I did for a great while with a perspective glass look upon

the cliffs," he once wrote to her after setting out on a campaign, "in hopes that I might have had one sight of you." It was no wonder that the woman who inspired Marlborough with a love like this bound to her the weak and feeble nature of the Princess Anne. The two friends threw off the restraints of state, and

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712



SARAH, DUCHESS OF MARLBOROUGH.

*Picture by Sir Godfrey Kneller, in National Portrait Gallery.*

addressed each other as "Mrs. Freeman" and "Mrs. Morley." It was on his wife's influence over her friend that the Earl's ambition counted in its designs against William. His plan was to drive the King from the throne by backing the Tories in their opposition to the war as well as by stirring to frenzy the English

SEC. IX  
 MARLBOROUGH  
 1698  
 TO  
 1712

hatred of foreigners, and to seat Anne in his place. The discovery of his designs roused the King to a burst of unusual resentment. "Were I and my Lord Marlborough private persons," William exclaimed, "the sword would have to settle between us." As it was, he could only strip the Earl of his offices and command, and drive his wife from St. James's. Anne followed her favourite, and the court of the Princess became the centre of the Tory opposition; while Marlborough opened a correspondence with James. So notorious was his treason that on the eve of the



MEMORIAL OF WILLIAM III.  
*Unique gold medal in British Museum.*

French invasion of 1692 he was one of the first of the suspected persons sent to the Tower.

Marl-  
 borough  
 and the  
 Grand  
 Alliance

The death of Mary forced William to recall Anne, who became by this event his successor; and with Anne the Marlboroughs returned to court. The King could not bend himself to trust the Earl again; but as death drew near he saw in him the one man whose splendid talents fitted him, in spite of the baseness and treason of his life, to rule England and direct the Grand Alliance in his stead. He employed Marlborough therefore to negotiate the treaty of alliance with the Emperor, and put him at the head of the army in Flanders. But the Earl had only just taken the



command when a fall from his horse proved fatal to the broken frame of the King. "There was a time when I should have been glad to have been delivered out of my troubles," the dying man whispered to Portland, "but I own I see another scene, and could wish to live a little longer." He knew, however, that the wish was vain, and commended Marlborough to Anne as the fittest person to lead her armies and guide her counsels. Anne's zeal needed no quickening. Three days after her accession the Earl was named Captain-General of the English forces at home and abroad, and entrusted with the entire direction of the war. His supremacy over home affairs was secured by the construction of a purely Tory administration with Lord Godolphin, a close friend of Marlborough's, as Lord Treasurer at its head. The Queen's affection for his wife ensured him the support of the Crown at a moment when Anne's personal popularity gave the Crown a new weight with the nation. In England, indeed, party feeling for the moment died away. All save the extreme Tories were won over to the war now that it was waged on behalf of a Tory queen by a Tory general, while the most extreme of the Whigs were ready to back even a Tory general in waging a Whig war. Abroad, however, William's death shook the Alliance to its base; and even Holland wavered in dread of being deserted by England in the coming struggle. But the decision of Marlborough soon did away with this distrust. Anne was made to declare from the throne her resolve to pursue with energy the policy of her predecessor. The Parliament was brought to sanction vigorous measures for the prosecution of the war. The new general hastened to the Hague, received the command of the Dutch as well as of the English forces, and drew the German powers into the Confederacy with a skill and adroitness which even William might have envied. Never was greatness more quickly recognized than in the case of Marlborough. In a few months he was regarded by all as the guiding spirit of the Alliance, and princes whose jealousy had worn out the patience of the King yielded without a struggle to the counsels of his successor. His temper fitted him in an especial way to be the head of a great confederacy. Like William, he owed little of his power to any early training. The trace of his neglected education was seen to the last in his reluctance to write.

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

*Death of  
William  
Mar. 1702*

## SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

"Of all things," he said to his wife, "I do not love writing." To pen a despatch indeed was a far greater trouble to him than to plan a campaign. But nature had given him qualities which in other men spring specially from culture. His capacity for business was immense. During the next ten years he assumed the general direction of the war in Flanders and in Spain. He managed every negotiation with the courts of the allies. He watched over the shifting phases of English politics. He crossed the Channel to win over Anne to a change in the Cabinet, or hurried to Berlin to secure the due contingent of Electoral troops from Brandenburg. At one and the same moment men saw him reconciling the Emperor with the Protestants of Hungary, stirring the Calvinists of the Cévennes into revolt, arranging the affairs of Portugal, and providing for the protection of the Duke of Savoy. But his air showed no trace of fatigue or haste or vexation. He retained to the last the indolent grace of his youth. His natural dignity was never ruffled by an outbreak of temper. Amidst the storm of battle his soldiers saw their leader "without fear of danger or in the least hurry, giving his orders with all the calmness imaginable." In the cabinet he was as cool as on the battle-field. He met with the same equable serenity the pettiness of the German princes, the phlegm of the Dutch, the ignorant opposition of his officers, the libels of his political opponents. There was a touch of irony in the simple expedients by which he sometimes solved problems which had baffled Cabinets. The touchy pride of the King of Prussia made him one of the most vexatious among the allies, but all difficulty with him ceased when Marlborough rose at a state banquet and handed him a napkin. Churchill's composure rested partly indeed on a pride which could not stoop to bare the real self within to the eyes of meaner men. In the bitter moments before his fall he bade Godolphin burn some querulous letters which the persecution of his opponents had wrung from him. "My desire is that the world may continue in their error of thinking me a happy man, for I think it better to be envied than pitied." But in great measure it sprang from the purely intellectual temper of his mind. His passion for his wife was the one sentiment which tinged the colourless light in which his understanding moved. In all else he was without love or hate, he

knew neither doubt nor regret. In private life he was a humane and compassionate man ; but if his position required it he could betray Englishmen to death, or lead his army to a butchery such as that of Malplaquet. Of honour or the finer sentiments of mankind he knew nothing ; and he turned without a shock from guiding Europe and winning great victories to heap up a matchless fortune by peculation and greed. He is perhaps the only instance

SEC. IX.

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712



SATIRICAL PLAYING-CARD.

Temp. Marlborough.

British Museum.

management a more decided influence than high birth, confirmed authority, and even the crown of Great Britain, had given to King William." But great as he was in the council, he was even greater in the field. He stands alone amongst the masters of the art of war as a captain whose victories began at an age when the work of most men is done. Though he served as a young officer under Turenne and for a few months in Ireland and the Netherlands, he had held

of a man of real greatness who loved money for money's sake. The passions which stirred the men around him, whether noble or ignoble, were to him simply elements in an intellectual problem which had to be solved by patience. "Patience will overcome all things," he writes again and again. "As I think most things are governed by destiny, having done all things we should submit with patience."

As a statesman the high qualities of Marlborough were owned by his bitterest foes. "Over the Confederacy," says Bolingbroke, "he, a new, a private man, acquired by merit and

Marl-  
borough  
and the  
War



SEC. IX  
MARLBOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712

no great command till he took the field in Flanders at the age of fifty-two. He stands alone, too, in his unbroken good fortune. Voltaire notes that he never besieged a fortress which he did not take,



THE DUKE OF MARLBOROUGH'S RUNNING FOOTMEN.  
*Tapestry at Blenheim Palace, representing the Battle of Blenheim.*

or fought a battle which he did not win. His difficulties came not so much from the enemy, as from the ignorance and timidity of his own allies. He was never defeated in the field, but victory after victory was snatched from him by the incapacity of his officers or

the stubbornness of the Dutch. What startled the cautious strategists of his day was the vigour and audacity of his plans. Old as he was, Marlborough's designs had from the first all the dash and boldness of youth. On taking the field in 1702 he at once resolved to force a battle in the heart of Brabant. The plan was foiled by the timidity of the Dutch deputies. But his resolute

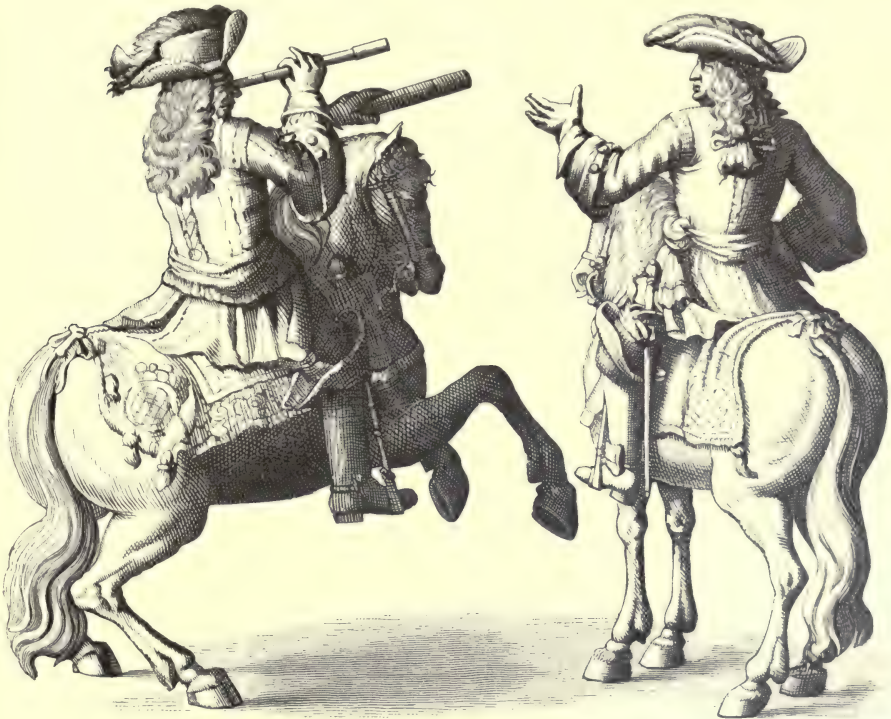
SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

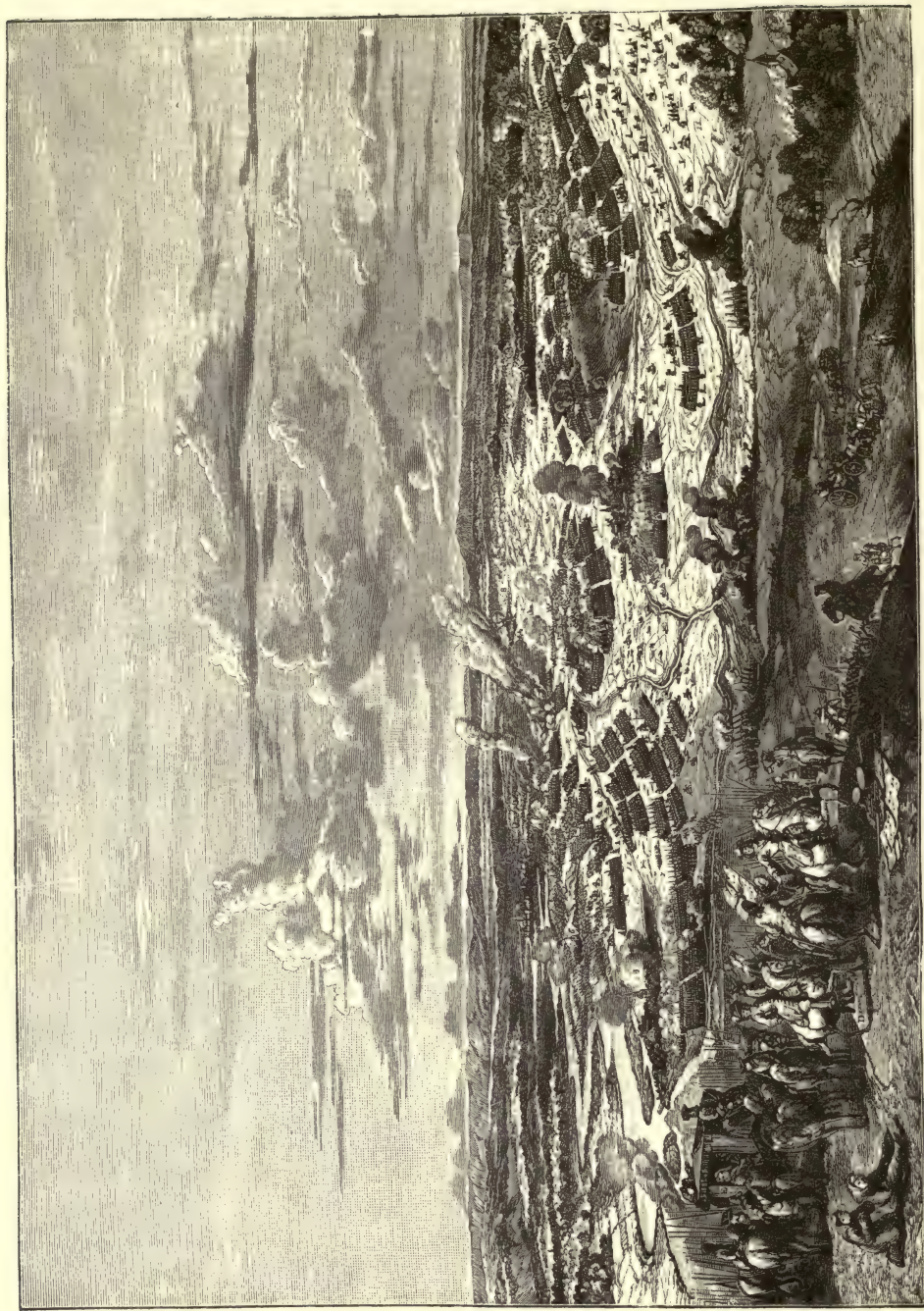
*Opening  
of the  
war*

EUGENE AND MARLBOROUGH RECONNOITRING.

*From an engraving by Camille.*

advance across the Meuse drew the French forces from that river, and enabled him to reduce fortress after fortress in a series of sieges, till the surrender of Liège closed a campaign which cut off the French from the Lower Rhine, and freed Holland from all danger of an invasion. The successes of Marlborough had been brought into bolder relief by the fortunes of the war in other quarters. Though the Imperialist general, Prince Eugene





BATTLE OF HOCHSTÄDT (OR BLENHEIM).  
*From an engraving by J. van Huchtenburg.*



of Savoy, showed his powers by a surprise of the French army at Cremona, no real successes had been won in Italy. An English descent on the Spanish coast ended in failure. In Germany the Bavarians joined the French, and the united armies defeated the forces of the Empire. It was in this quarter that Lewis resolved to push his fortunes. In the spring of 1703 a fresh army under Marshal Villars again relieved the Bavarian Elector from the pressure of the Imperial forces, and only a strife which arose between the two commanders hindered the joint armies from marching on Vienna. Meanwhile the timidity of the Dutch deputies served Lewis well in the Low Countries. The hopes of Marlborough, who had been raised to a Dukedom for his services in the previous year, were again foiled by the deputies of the States-General. Serene as his temper was, it broke down before their refusal to co-operate in an attack on Antwerp and French Flanders; and the prayers of Godolphin and of the pensionary Heinsius alone induced him to withdraw his offer of resignation. But in spite of his victories on the Danube, of the blunders of his adversaries on the Rhine, and the sudden aid of an insurrection which broke out in Hungary, the difficulties of Lewis were hourly increasing. The accession of Savoy to the Grand Alliance threatened his armies in Italy with destruction. That of Portugal gave the allies a base of operations against Spain. The French King's energy however rose with the pressure; and while the Duke of Berwick, a natural son of James the Second, was despatched against Portugal, and three small armies closed round Savoy, the flower of the French troops joined the army of Bavaria on the Danube; for the bold plan of Lewis was to decide the fortunes of the war by a victory which would wrest peace from the Empire under the walls of Vienna.

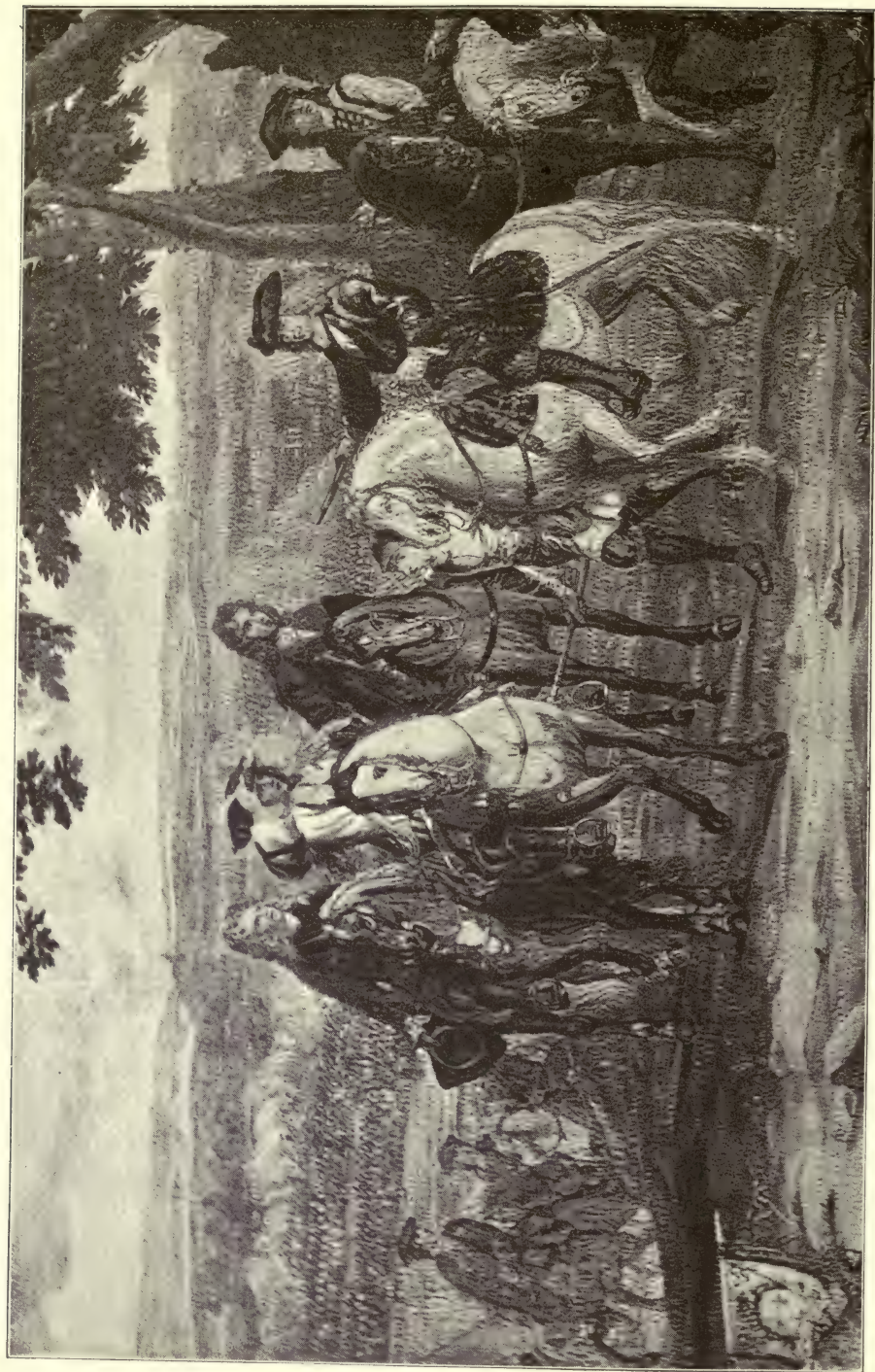
The master-stroke of Lewis roused Marlborough at the opening of 1704 to a master-stroke in return; but the secrecy and boldness of the Duke's plans deceived both his enemies and his allies. The French army in Flanders saw in his march upon Maintz only a design to transfer the war into Elsass. The Dutch were lured into suffering their troops to be drawn as far from Flanders as Coblenz by proposals for an imaginary campaign on the Moselle. It was only when Marlborough crossed the Neckar and struck

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

1712



SURRENDER OF MARSHAL TALLARD.  
*Tapestry at Blenheim Palace, representing the Battle of Blenheim.*



through the centre of Germany for the Danube that the true aim of his operations was revealed. After struggling through the hill country of Würtemberg, he joined the Imperial army under the Prince of Baden, stormed the heights of Donauwerth, crossed the Danube and the Lech, and penetrated into the heart of Bavaria. The crisis drew the two armies which were facing one another on the Upper Rhine to the scene. The arrival of Marshal Tallard with thirty thousand French troops saved the Elector of Bavaria for the moment from the need of submission ; but the junction of his opponent, Prince Eugene, with Marlborough raised the contending forces again to an equality. After a few marches the armies met on the north bank of the Danube, near the little town of Hochstädt and the village of Blindheim or Blenheim, which have given their names to one of the most memorable battles in the history of the world. In one respect the struggle which followed stands almost unrivalled, for the whole of the Teutonic race was represented in the strange medley of Englishmen, Dutchmen, Hanoverians, Danes, Würtembergers, and Austrians who followed Marlborough and Eugene. The French and Bavarians, who numbered like their opponents some fifty thousand men, lay behind a little stream which ran through swampy ground to the Danube. Their position was a strong one, for its front was covered by the swamp, its right by the Danube, its left by the hill-country in which the stream rose ; and Tallard had not only entrenched himself, but was far superior to his rival in artillery. But for once Marlborough's hands were free. "I have great reason," he wrote calmly home, "to hope that everything will go well, for I have the pleasure to find all the officers willing to obey without knowing any other reason than that it is my desire, which is very different from what it was in Flanders, where I was obliged to have the consent of a council of war for everything I undertook." So formidable were the obstacles, however, that though the allies were in motion at sunrise, it was not till midday that Eugene, who commanded on the right, succeeded in crossing the stream. The English foot at once forded it on the left and attacked the village of Blindheim in which the bulk of the French infantry were entrenched ; but after a furious struggle the attack was repulsed, while as gallant a resistance at the other end of the line held

SEC. IX  
MARLBOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712

Aug. 13,  
1704





"MALBOROUK."

Illustration, Early Nineteenth Century, to French song (broadside), Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris.

Eugene in check. The centre, however, which the French believed to be unassailable, had been chosen by Marlborough for the chief point of attack; and by making an artificial road across the morass he was at last enabled to throw his eight thousand horsemen on the French cavalry which occupied this position. Two desperate charges which the Duke headed in person decided the day. The French centre was flung back on the Danube and forced to surrender. Their left fell back in confusion on Höchstädt: while their right, cooped up in Blindheim and cut off from retreat, became prisoners of war. Of the defeated army only twenty thousand escaped. Twelve thousand were slain, fourteen thousand were captured. Germany was finally freed from the French; and Marlborough, who followed the wreck of the French host in its flight to Elsass, soon made himself master of the Lower Moselle. But the loss of France could not be measured by men or fortresses. A hundred victories since Rocroi had taught the world to regard the French army as invincible, when Blenheim and the surrender of the flower of the French soldiery broke the spell. From that moment the terror of victory passed to the side of the allies, and "Malbrook" became a name of fear to every child in France.

SEC. IX  
MARL-  
BOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712

In England itself the victory of Blenheim aided to bring about a great change in the political aspect of affairs. The Tories were resolved to create a permanent Tory majority in the Commons by excluding Nonconformists from the municipal corporations, which returned the bulk of the borough members. The Protestant Dissenters, while adhering to their separate congregations, in which they were now protected by the Toleration Act, "qualified for office" by the "occasional conformity" of receiving the sacrament at Church once in the year. It was against this "occasional conformity" that the Tories introduced a test to exclude the Nonconformists; and this test at first received Marlborough's support. But it was steadily rejected by the Lords as often as it was sent up to them, and it was soon guessed that their resistance was secretly backed by both Marlborough and Godolphin. Tory as he was, in fact, Marlborough had no mind for an unchecked Tory rule, or for a revival of religious strife which would be fatal to the war. But he strove in vain to propitiate his party by inducing the Queen to set aside the tenths and first-fruits hitherto

Ramillies

*Occasional  
conform-  
ity*



## SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

*The  
Coalition  
Ministry*

paid by the clergy to the Crown as a fund for the augmentation of small benefices, a fund which still bears the name of Queen Anne's Bounty. The Commons showed their resentment by refusing to add a grant of money to the grant of a Dukedom after his first campaign; and the higher Tories, with Lord Nottingham at their head, began to throw every obstacle they could in the way of the continuance of the war. At last they quitted office in 1704, and Marlborough replaced them by Tories of a more moderate stamp who were still in favour of the war: by Robert Harley, who became Secretary of State, and Henry St. John, a man of splendid talents, who was named Secretary at War. The Duke's march into Germany, which pledged England to a struggle in the heart of the Continent, embittered the political strife. The high Tories and Jacobites threatened, if Marlborough failed, to bring his head to the block, and only the victory of Blenheim saved him from political ruin. Slowly and against his will the Duke drifted from his own party to the party which really backed his policy. He availed himself of the national triumph over Blenheim to dissolve Parliament; and when the election of 1705, as he hoped, returned a majority in favour of the war, his efforts brought about a coalition between the moderate Tories who still clung to him and the Whig Junto, whose support was purchased by making a Whig, William Cowper, Lord Keeper, and by sending Lord Sunderland as envoy to Vienna. The bitter attacks of the peace party were entirely foiled by this union, and Marlborough at last felt secure at home. But he had to bear disappointment abroad. His plan of attack along the line of the Moselle was defeated by the refusal of the Imperial army to join him. When he entered the French lines across the Dyle, the Dutch generals withdrew their troops; and his proposal to attack the Duke of Villeroy in the field of Waterloo was rejected in full council of war by the deputies of the States with cries of "murder" and "massacre." Even Marlborough's composure broke into bitterness at the blow. "Had I had the same power I had last year," he wrote home, "I could have won a greater victory than that of Blenheim." On his complaint the States recalled their commissaries, but the year was lost; nor had greater results been brought about in Italy or on the Rhine. The spirits of the allies were only sustained by the



romantic exploits of Lord Peterborough in Spain. Profligate, unprincipled, flighty as he was, Peterborough had a genius for war, and his seizure of Barcelona with a handful of men, his recognition of the old liberties of Aragon, roused that province to support the cause of the second son of the Emperor, who had been acknow-

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO  
1712

CHARLES MORDAUNT, EARL OF PETERBOROUGH.

*From a mezzotint by J. Simon of a picture by M. Dahl.*

ledged as King of Spain by the allies under the title of Charles the Third. Catalonia and Valencia soon joined Aragon in declaring for Charles: while Marlborough spent the winter of 1705 in negotiations at Vienna, Berlin, Hanover, and the Hague, and in preparations for the coming campaign. Eager for freedom of

SEC. IX  
MARLBOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712

action, and sick of the Imperial generals as of the Dutch, he planned a march over the Alps and a campaign in Italy; and though his designs were defeated by the opposition of the allies, he found himself unfettered when he again appeared in Flanders in 1706. The French marshal Villeroy was as eager as Marlborough for an engagement; and the two armies met on the 23rd of May at the village of Ramillies on the undulating plain which forms the highest ground in Brabant. The French were drawn up in a wide curve with morasses covering their front. After a feint on their left, Marlborough flung himself on their right wing at Ramillies, crushed it in a brilliant charge that he led in person, and swept along their



MEDAL TO COMMEMORATE BATTLE OF RAMILLIES.

whole line till it broke in a rout which only ended beneath the walls of Louvain. In an hour and a half the French had lost fifteen thousand men, their baggage, and their guns; and the line of the Scheldt, Brussels, Antwerp and Bruges became the prize of the victors. It only needed four successful sieges which followed the battle of Ramillies to complete the deliverance of Flanders.

The  
Union  
with  
Scotland

The year which witnessed the victory of Ramillies remains yet more memorable as the year which witnessed the final Union of England with Scotland. As the undoing of the earlier union had been the first work of the Government of the Restoration, its revival was one of the first aims of the Government which followed

the Revolution. But the project was long held in check by religious and commercial jealousies. Scotland refused to bear any part of the English debt. England would not yield any share in her monopoly of trade with the colonies. The English Churchmen longed for a restoration of Episcopacy north of the border, while the Scotch Presbyterians would not hear even of the legal toleration of Episcopalians. In 1703, however, an Act of Settlement which passed through the Scotch Parliament at last brought home to English statesmen the dangers of further delay. In dealing with this measure the Scotch Whigs, who cared only for the independence of their country, joined hand in hand with the Scotch Jacobites, who looked only to the interests of the Pretender. The Jacobites excluded from the Act the name of the Princess Sophia ; the Whigs introduced a provision that no sovereign of England should be recognized as sovereign of Scotland save upon security given to the religion, freedom, and trade of the Scottish people. Great as the danger arising from such a measure undoubtedly was, for it pointed to a recognition of the Pretender in Scotland on the Queen's death, and such a recognition meant war between Scotland and England, it was only after three years' delay that the wisdom and resolution of Lord Somers brought the question to an issue. The Scotch proposals of a federative rather than a legislative union were set aside by his firmness ; the commercial jealousies of the English trader were put by ; and the Act of Union provided that the two kingdoms should be united into one under the name of Great Britain, and that the succession to the crown of this United Kingdom should be ruled by the provisions of the English Act of Settlement. The Scotch Church and the Scotch law were left untouched : but all rights of trade were thrown open, and a uniform system of coinage adopted. A single Parliament was henceforth to represent the United Kingdom, and for this purpose forty-five Scotch members were added to the five hundred and thirteen English members of the House of Commons, and sixteen representative peers to the one hundred and eight who formed the English House of Lords. In Scotland the opposition was bitter and almost universal. The terror of the Presbyterians indeed was met by an Act of Security which became part of the Treaty of Union and which required an oath to support the Presbyterian

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO  
1712

1706



SEC. IX  
MARL-  
BOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712

Church from every sovereign on his accession. But no securities could satisfy the enthusiastic patriots or the fanatical Cameronians. The Jacobites sought troops from France and plotted a Stuart



SECOND GREAT SEAL OF ANNE, 1707, COMMEMORATING THE UNION WITH SCOTLAND.  
(Obverse.)

restoration. The nationalists talked of seceding from the Houses which voted for the Union, and of establishing a rival Parliament. In the end, however, good sense and the loyalty of the trading classes to the cause of the Protestant succession won their way.

The measure was adopted by the Scotch Parliament, and the Treaty of Union became in 1707 a legislative act to which Anne gave her assent in noble words. "I desire," said the Queen, "and

SEC. IX

MARL-  
BIBLIOTHECA

1698

TO

1712

*Its results*

SECOND GREAT SEAL OF ANNE, 1707, COMMEMORATING THE UNION WITH SCOTLAND.  
(Reverse.)

expect from my subjects of both nations that from henceforth they act with all possible respect and kindness to one another, that so it may appear to all the world they have hearts disposed to become one people." Time has more than answered these hopes. The



## SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712

two nations whom the Union brought together have ever since remained one. England gained in the removal of a constant danger of treason and war. To Scotland the Union opened up new avenues of wealth which the energy of its people turned to wonderful account. The farms of Lothian have become models of agricultural skill. A fishing town on the Clyde has grown into the rich and populous Glasgow. Peace and culture have changed the wild clansmen of the Highlands into herdsmen and farmers. Nor was the change followed by any loss of national spirit. The world has hardly seen a mightier and more rapid development of national energy than that of Scotland after the Union. All that passed away was the jealousy which had parted since the days of Edward the First two peoples whom a common blood and common speech proclaimed to be one. The Union between Scotland and England has been real and stable simply because it was the legislative acknowledgement and enforcement of a national fact.

Marlborough  
and the  
Whigs

1706

With the defeat of Ramillies the fortunes of France reached their lowest ebb. The loss of Flanders was followed by the loss of Italy after a victory by which Eugene relieved Turin; and not only did Peterborough hold his ground in Spain, but Charles the Third with an army of English and Portuguese entered Madrid. Marlborough was at the height of his renown. Ramillies gave him strength enough to force Anne, in spite of her hatred of the Whigs, to fulfil his compact with them by admitting Lord Sunderland, the bitterest leader of their party, to office. But the system of political balance which he had maintained till now began at once to break down. Constitutionally, Marlborough's was the last attempt to govern England on other terms than those of party government, and the union of parties to which he had clung ever since his severance from the extreme Tories soon became impossible. The growing opposition of the Tories to the war threw the Duke more and more on the support of the Whigs, and the Whigs sold their support dearly. Sunderland, who had inherited his father's conceptions of party government, was resolved to restore a strict party administration on a purely Whig basis, and to drive the moderate Tories from office in spite of Marlborough's desire to retain them. The Duke wrote hotly home at the news of the pressure which the Whigs were putting on him. "England," he said,

1706



"will not be ruined because a few men are not pleased." Nor was Marlborough alone in his resentment. Harley foresaw the danger of his expulsion from office, and began to intrigue at court, through Mrs. Masham, a bedchamber woman of the Queen, who was supplanting the Duchess in Anne's favour, against the Whigs and against Marlborough. St. John, who owed his early promotion to office to the Duke's favour, was driven by the same fear to share Harley's schemes. Marlborough strove to win both of them back, but he was helpless in the hands of the only party that steadily supported the war. A factious union of the Whigs with their

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH, 11

1698

TO  
1712

JOSEPH ADDISON.

*Picture by Sir Godfrey Kneller.*

opponents, though it roused the Duke to a burst of unusual passion in Parliament, effected its end by convincing him of the impossibility of further resistance. The opposition of the Queen indeed was stubborn and bitter. Anne was at heart a Tory, and her old trust in Marlborough died with his submission to the Whig demands. It was only by the threat of resignation that he had forced her to admit Sunderland to office ; and the violent outbreak of temper with which the Duchess enforced her husband's will changed the Queen's friendship for her into a bitter resentment. Marlborough was driven to increase this resentment by fresh compliances with



ENGLISH SQUADRON CARRYING TROOPS TO TAKE POSSESSION OF DUNKIRK.  
*"History of Queen Anne," 1740.*



the conditions which the Whigs imposed on him, by removing Peterborough from his command as a Tory general, and by wresting from Anne her consent to the dismissal from office of Harley and St. John with the moderate Tories whom they headed. Their removal was followed by the complete triumph of the Whigs. Somers became President of the Council, Wharton Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, while lower posts were occupied by men destined to play a great part in our later history, such as the young Duke of Newcastle and Robert Walpole. Meanwhile, the great struggle abroad went on, with striking alternations of success. France rose with singular rapidity from the crushing blow of Ramillies. Spain was recovered for Philip by a victory of Marshal Berwick at Almanza. Villars won fresh triumphs on the Rhine, while Eugene, who had penetrated into Provence, was driven back into Italy. In Flanders, Marlborough's designs for taking advantage of his great victory were foiled by the strategy of the Duke of Vendôme and by the reluctance of the Dutch, who were now wavering towards peace. In the campaign of 1708, however, Vendôme, in spite of his superiority in force, was attacked and defeated at Oudenarde; and though Marlborough was hindered from striking at the heart of France by the timidity of the English and Dutch statesmen, he reduced Lille, the strongest of its frontier fortresses, in the face of an army of relief which numbered a hundred thousand men. The pride of Lewis was at last broken by defeat and by the terrible suffering of France. He offered terms of peace which yielded all that the allies had fought for. He consented to withdraw his aid from Philip of Spain, to give up ten Flemish fortresses to the Dutch, and to surrender to the Empire all that France had gained since the Treaty of Westphalia. He offered to acknowledge Anne, to banish the Pretender from his dominions, and to demolish the fortifications of Dunkirk, a port hateful to England as the home of the French privateers.

To Marlborough peace now seemed secure; but in spite of his counsels, the allies and the Whig Ministers in England demanded that Lewis should with his own troops compel his grandson to give up the crown of Spain. "If I must wage war," replied the King, "I had rather wage it against my enemies than against my children." In a bitter despair he appealed to France; and

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

*Triumph  
of the  
Whigs*

1708

1707

*Oudenarde***England  
and the  
War**





BATTLE OF MALPLAQUET.  
*"History of Queen Anne," 1740.*

exhausted as it was, the campaign of 1709 proved how nobly France answered his appeal. The terrible slaughter which bears the name of the battle of Malplaquet showed a new temper in the French soldiers. Starving as they were, they flung away their rations in their eagerness for the fight, and fell back at its close in serried masses that no efforts of Marlborough could break. They had lost twelve thousand men, but the forcing their lines of entrenchment had cost the allies a loss of double that number. Horror at such a "deluge of blood" increased the growing weariness of the war; and the rejection of the French offers was unjustly attributed to a desire on the part of Marlborough of lengthening out a contest which brought him profit and power. A storm of popular passion burst suddenly on the Whigs. Its occasion was a dull and silly sermon in which a High Church divine, Dr. Sacheverell,

maintained the doctrine of non-resistance at St. Paul's. His boldness challenged prosecution; but in spite of the warning of Marlborough and of Somers the Whig Ministers resolved on his impeachment before the Lords, and the trial at once widened into a great party struggle. An outburst of popular enthusiasm in Sacheverell's favour showed what a storm of hatred had gathered against the Whigs and the war. The most eminent of the Tory Churchmen stood by his side at the bar, crowds escorted him to the court and back again, while the streets rang

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

Malplaquet



SACHEVERELL'S TRIUMPH.

Design for Playing-Card, 1710.

British Museum.

Sacheverell



## SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712

Fall of  
Marlborough

with cries of "The Church and Dr. Sacheverell." A small majority of the peers found the preacher guilty, but the light sentence they inflicted was in effect an acquittal, and bonfires and illuminations over the whole country welcomed it as a Tory triumph.

The party whom the Whigs had striven to crush were roused to new life. The expulsion of Harley and St. John from the Ministry had given the Tories leaders of a more subtle and vigorous

stamp than the High Churchmen who had quitted office in the first years of the war, and St. John brought into play a new engine of political attack whose powers soon made themselves felt. In the *Examiner* and in a crowd of pamphlets and periodicals which followed in its train, the humour of Prior, the bitter irony of Swift, and St. John's own brilliant sophistry spent themselves on the abuse of the war and of its general. "Six millions of supplies and almost fifty millions of debt!" Swift wrote bitterly ;

"the High Allies have been the ruin of us!" Marlborough was ridiculed and reviled, he was accused of insolence, cruelty and ambition, of corruption and greed. Even his courage was called in question. The turn of popular feeling freed Anne at once from the pressure beneath which she had bent : and the subtle intrigue of Harley was busy in undermining the Ministry. The Whigs, who knew the Duke's alliance with them had simply been forced on him by the war, were easily persuaded that the Queen had no aim but



Design for Playing-Card, 1710.  
British Museum.



to humble him, and looked coolly on at the dismissal of his son-in-law, Sunderland, and his friend, Godolphin. Marlborough on his part was lured by hopes of reconciliation with his old party, and looked on as coolly while Anne dismissed the Whig Ministers and appointed a Tory Ministry in their place, with Harley and St. John at its head. But the intrigues of Harley paled before the subtle treason of St. John. Resolute to drive Marlborough from his command, he fed the Duke's hopes of reconciliation with the Tories, till he led him to acquiesce in his wife's dismissal, and to pledge himself to a co-operation with the Tory policy. It was the Duke's belief that a reconciliation with the Tories was effected that led him to sanction the despatch of troops which should have strengthened his army in Flanders on a fruitless expedition against Canada, though this left him too weak to carry out a masterly plan which he had formed for a march into the heart of France in the opening of 1711. He was unable even to risk a battle or to do more than to pick up a few seaboard towns, and St. John at once turned the small results of the campaign into an argument for the conclusion of peace. In defiance of an article of the Grand Alliance which pledged its members not to carry on separate negotiations with France, St. John, who now became Lord Bolingbroke, pushed forward a secret accommodation between England and France. It was for this negotiation that he had

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

*Dismissal  
of the  
Whigs*

1710



Design for Playing-Card, 1710  
*British Museum.*

1711

## SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO  
1712

crippled Marlborough's campaign ; and it was the discovery of his perfidy which revealed to the Duke how utterly he had been betrayed, and forced him at last to break with the Tory Ministry. He returned to England ; and his efforts induced the House of Lords to denounce the contemplated peace ; but the support of the Commons and the Queen, and the general hatred of the war among the people, enabled Harley to ride down all resistance. At the opening of 1712 the Whig majority in the House of Lords was swamped by the creation of twelve Tory peers. Marlborough was dismissed from his command, charged with peculation, and condemned as guilty by a vote of the House of Commons. The Duke at once withdrew from England, and with his withdrawal all opposition to the peace was at an end.

Treaty of  
Utrecht  
1713

Marlborough's flight was followed by the conclusion of a Treaty at Utrecht between France, England, and the Dutch ; and the desertion of his allies forced the Emperor at last to make peace at Rastadt. By these treaties the original aim of the war, that of preventing the possession of France and Spain by the House of Bourbon, was abandoned. No precaution was taken against the dangers it involved to the "balance of power," save by a provision that the two crowns should never be united on a single head, and by Philip's renunciation of all right of succession to the throne of France. The principle on which the Treaties were based was in fact that of the earlier Treaties of Partition. Philip retained Spain and the Indies : but he ceded his possessions in Italy and the Netherlands with the island of Sardinia to Charles of Austria, who had now become Emperor, in satisfaction of his claims ; while he handed over Sicily to the Duke of Savoy. To England he gave up not only Minorca but Gibraltar, two positions which secured her the command of the Mediterranean. France had to consent to the re-establishment of the Dutch barrier on a greater scale than before ; to pacify the English resentment against the French privateers by the dismantling of Dunkirk ; and not only to recognize the right of Anne to the crown, and the Protestant succession in the House of Hanover, but to consent to the expulsion of the Pretender from her soil. The failure of the Queen's health made the succession the real question of the day, and it was a question which turned all politics into faction and intrigue. The Whigs,

who were still formidable in the Commons, and who showed the strength of their party in the Lords by defeating a Treaty of Commerce, in which Bolingbroke anticipated the greatest financial triumph of William Pitt and secured freedom of trade between England and France, were zealous for the succession of the

SEC. IX  
MARLBOROUGH  
1698  
TO  
1712

*Harley  
and  
Boling-  
broke*



HENRY ST. JOHN, VISCOUNT BOLINGBROKE.

*Picture by Sir G. Kneller, at Petworth.*

Elector; nor did the Tories really contemplate any other plan. But on the means of providing for his succession Harley and Bolingbroke differed widely. Harley inclined to an alliance between the moderate Tories and the Whigs. The policy of Bolingbroke, on the other hand, was so to strengthen the Tories by



## SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

the utter overthrow of their opponents, that whatever might be the Elector's sympathies they could force their policy on him as King. To ruin his rival's influence he introduced a Schism Bill, which



ROBERT HARLEY, EARL OF OXFORD.  
*From an engraving by J. van Huchtenburg.*

hindered any Nonconformist from acting as a schoolmaster or a tutor ; and which broke Harley's plans by creating a more bitter division than ever between Tory and Whig. But its success went

beyond his intentions. The Whigs regarded the Bill as the first step in a Jacobite restoration. The Electress Sophia was herself alarmed, and the Hanoverian ambassador demanded for the son of the Elector, the future George the Second, who had been created Duke of Cambridge, a summons as peer to the coming Parliament, with the aim of securing the presence in England of a Hanoverian Prince in case of the Queen's death. The Queen's anger, fanned

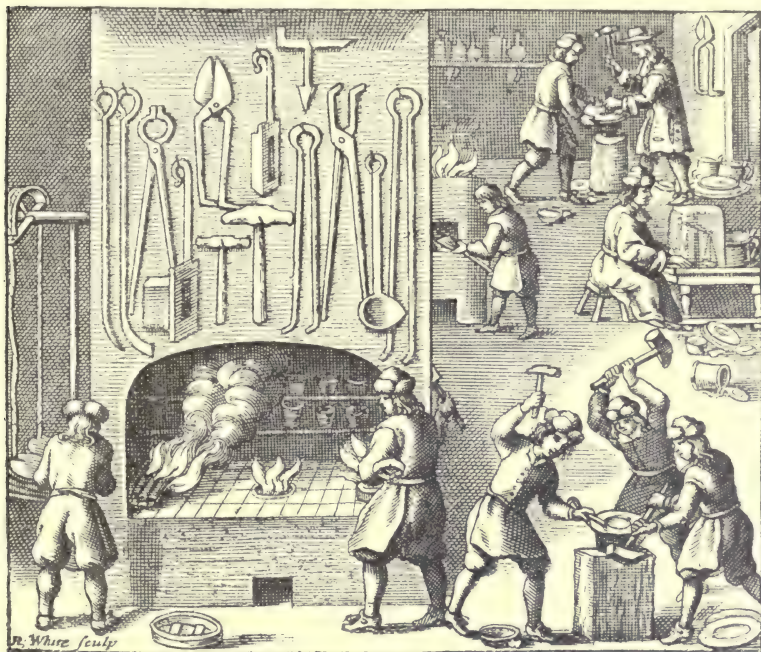
SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

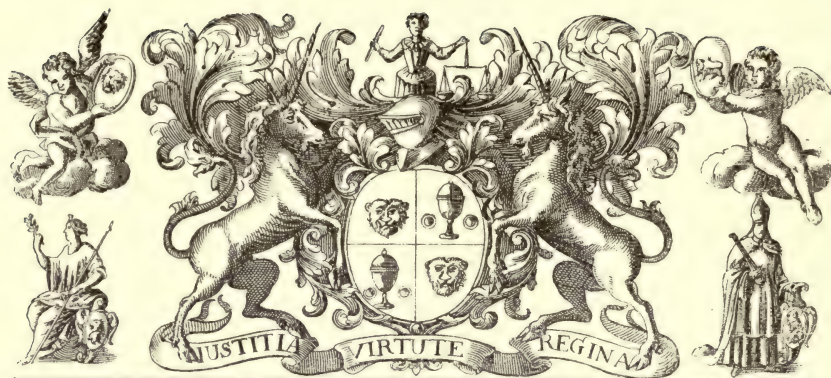


EMBLEMS OF THE SILVERSMITHS' CRAFT, 1700.

*Bagford Collection, British Museum.*

by Bolingbroke, broke out in a letter to the Electress which warned her that "such conduct may imperil the succession itself;" and in July Anne was brought to dismiss Harley, now Earl of Oxford, and to construct a strong and united Tory Ministry which would back her in her resistance to the Elector's demand. As the crisis grew nearer, both parties prepared for civil war. In the beginning of 1714 the Whigs had made ready for a rising on the Queen's death, and invited Marlborough from Flanders to head





*Ye* You are desired to meet the Rest of the *Mistry* of  
*Goldsmiths* at the *Danish Church* of *S. Lawrence* near *Guildhall* on  
*Friday* the *Sixth* day of *February* 1707 at nine of the *Clock* in  
the *Morning* precisely there to hear a *Sermon* & from thence to Accom-  
pany y<sup>e</sup> *Goldsmiths* hall in *Fosterlane* to *Dine* with  
Your *Friends* and *Servants*

*Gabriel Player*  
*Lewis Meltayer*  
*Robert Balme*

*John East*  
*Edward Lammas*  
*Thomas Morrey*  
*STEWARDS* } *pray pay y<sup>e</sup> Bearer four shillings*

INVITATION TO A MEETING OF THE GOLDSMITHS' COMPANY, 1707.  
*Bagford Collection, British Museum.*



them, in the hope that his name would rally the army to their cause. Bolingbroke, on the other hand, intent on building up a strong Tory party, made the Duke of Ormond, whose sympathies were known to be in favour of the Pretender's succession, Warden of the Cinque Ports, the district in which either claimant of the crown must land, while he gave Scotland in charge to the Jacobite

SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

1698

TO

1712

THE  
ROYAL SOCIETY'S  
LETTER.

I Have (by Order of the Royal Society) seen and examined the Method used by Mr JOHN MARSHALL, for grinding Glasses; and find that he performs the said Work with greater Ease and Certainty than hitherto has been practised; by means of an Invention which I take to be his own, and New and whereby he is enabled to make a great number of Optick-Glasses at one time, and all exactly alike; which having reported to the Royal Society, they were pleased to approve thereof, as an Invention of great use; and highly to deserve Encouragement.

London, Jan. 18.  
1693, 4.

By the Command of the  
Royal Society;

EDM. HALLEY.



*Note, There are several Persons who pretend to have the Approbation of the ROYAL SOCIETY; but none has, or ever had it, but my self; as my Letter can testify.*

ADVERTISEMENT OF JOHN MARSHALL, OPTICIAN, 1694.

*Bagford Collection, British Museum.*

Earl of Mar. But events moved faster than his plans. Anne was suddenly struck with apoplexy. The Privy Council at once assembled, and at the news the Whig Dukes of Argyll and Somerset entered the Council Chamber without summons and took their places at the board. The step had been taken in secret concert with the Duke of Shrewsbury, who was President of the Council in the Tory Ministry, but a rival of Bolingbroke and an

*Death of  
Anne*

## SEC. IX

MARLBOROUGH

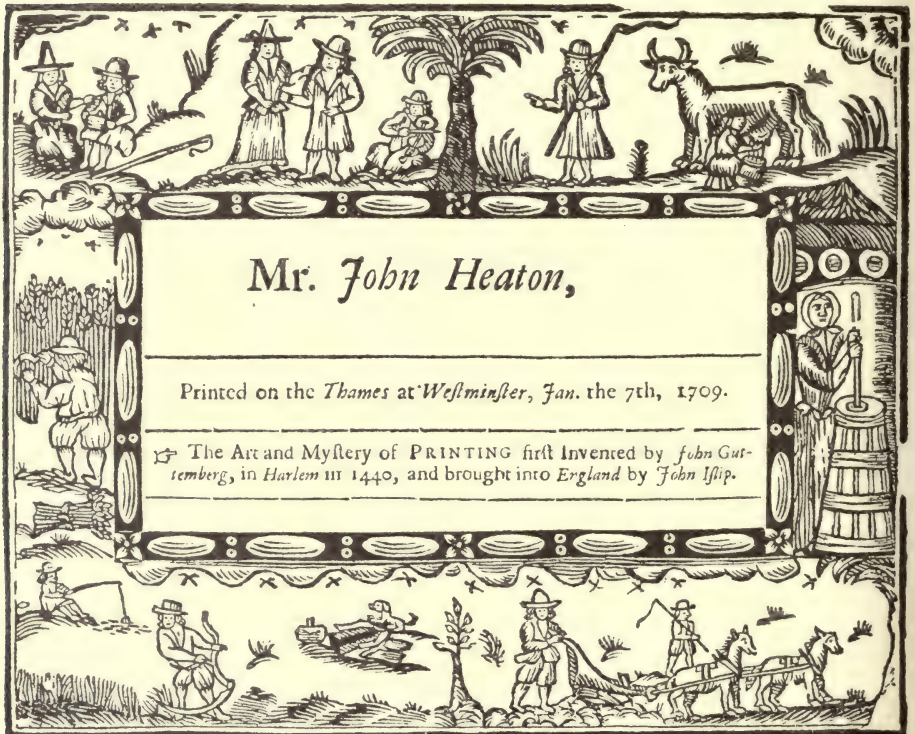
1698

TO

1712

Aug. 10  
1714

adherent of the Hanoverian succession. The act was a decisive one. The right of the House of Hanover was at once acknowledged, Shrewsbury was nominated as Lord Treasurer by the Council, and the nomination was accepted by the dying Queen. Bolingbroke, though he remained Secretary of State, suddenly found himself powerless and neglected, while the Council took steps to provide for the emergency. Four regiments were summoned to the capital in the expectation of a civil war. But the Jacobites were hopeless and unprepared; and on the death of Anne the Elector George of Hanover, who had become heir to the throne by his mother's death, was proclaimed King of England without a show of opposition.



ADVERTISEMENT OF JOHN HEATON, PRINTER, 1709.

Crowle Collection, British Museum.



PRINTING OFFICE, c. 1710.

*Engraving in Bagford Collection, British Museum.*

## Section X.—Walpole, 1712—1742

[*Authorities.*—Coxe's *Life of Sir Robert Walpole*, Horace Walpole's "*Memoirs of the Reign of George II.*," and Lord Hervey's amusing *Memoirs* from the accession of George II. to the death of Queen Caroline, give the main materials on one side; Bolingbroke's *Letter to Sir William Wyndham*, his "*Patriot King*," and his correspondence afford some insight into the other. Horace Walpole's *Letters to Sir Horace Mann* give a minute account of his father's fall. A sober and judicious account of the whole period may be found in Lord Stanhope's "*History of England from the Peace of Utrecht*."]

The accession of George the First marked a change in the position of England in the European Commonwealth. From the age of the Plantagenets the country had stood apart from more than passing contact with the fortunes of the Continent. But the Revolution had forced her to join the Great Alliance of the European peoples; and shameful as were some of its incidents, the Peace of Utrecht left her the main barrier against the ambition of the House of Bourbon. And not only did the Revolution set England irrevocably among the powers of Europe, but it assigned her a special place among them. The result of the alliance and the war had been to establish what was then called a "balance of

*England  
and  
Europe*



SEC. X

WALPOLE

1712

TO

1742

power" between the great European states; a balance which rested indeed not so much on any natural equilibrium of forces as on a compromise wrung from warring nations by the exhaustion of a great struggle; but which, once recognized and established, could be adapted and readjusted, it was hoped, to the varying political conditions of the time. Of this balance of power, as recognized and defined in the Treaty of Utrecht and its successors, England became the special guardian. The stubborn policy of

the Georgian statesmen has left its mark on our policy ever since. In struggling for peace and for the sanctity of treaties, even though the struggle was one of selfish interest, England took a ply which she has never wholly lost. Warlike and imperious as is her national temper, she has never been able to free herself from a sense that her business in the world is to seek peace alike for herself and for the nations about her, and that the best security for peace lies in her recognition, amidst whatever difficulties and



Ha Ha! In Door! Ich!

*Tempest's "Cries of London," 1688—1702.*

seductions, of the force of international engagements and the sanctity of treaties.

England  
and the  
House of  
Hanover

At home the new King's accession was followed by striking political results. Under Anne the throne had regained much of the older influence which it lost through William's unpopularity; but under the two sovereigns who followed Anne the power of the Crown lay absolutely dormant. They were strangers, to whom loyalty in its personal sense was impossible; and their character

as nearly approached insignificance as it is possible for human character to approach it. Both were honest and straightforward men, who frankly accepted the irksome position of constitutional kings. But neither had any qualities which could make their honesty attractive to the people at large. The temper of George the First was that of a gentleman usher; and his one care was to get money for his favourites and himself. The temper of George the Second was that of a drill-sergeant, who believed himself master of his realm while he repeated the lessons he had learnt from his wife, and which his wife had learnt from the Minister. Their Court is familiar enough in the witty memoirs of the time; but as political figures the two Georges are almost absent from our history. William of Orange had not only used the power of rejecting bills passed by the two Houses, but had kept in his own hands the control of foreign affairs. Anne had never yielded even to Marlborough her exclusive right of dealing with Church preferment

and had presided to the last at the Cabinet Councils of her ministers. But with the accession of the Georges these reserves passed away. No sovereign since Anne's death has appeared at a Cabinet Council, or has ventured to refuse his assent to an Act of Parliament. As Elector of Hanover indeed the King still dealt with Continental affairs: but his personal interference roused an increasing jealousy, while it affected in a very slight degree the foreign policy of his English counsellors. England, in short, was

SE — X

WALISSE

1712

1712

1712

*Decline of  
the royal  
influence*



Chimney Sweep

*Tempest's "Cries of London," 1688—1702.*

SEC. X

WALPOLE

1712

TO

1742

*With-  
drawal of  
the Tories*

governed not by the King, but by the Whig ministers of the Crown. Nor had the Whigs to fear any effective pressure from their political opponents. "The Tory party," Bolingbroke wrote after Anne's death, "is gone." In the first House of Commons indeed which was called by the new King, the Tories hardly numbered fifty members; while a fatal division broke their strength in the country at large. In their despair the more vehement among them turned to the Pretender. Lord Oxford was impeached and sent



A Merry new Song;

*Tempest's "Cries of London," 1688—1702*

to the Tower; Bolingbroke and the Duke of Ormond fled from England to take office under the son of King James. At home Sir William Wyndham seconded their efforts by building up a Jacobite faction out of the wreck of the Tory party. The Jacobite secession gave little help to the Pretender, while it dealt a fatal blow to the Tory cause. England was still averse from a return of the Stuarts; and the suspicion of Jacobite designs not only alienated the trading

classes, who shrank from the blow to public credit which a Jacobite repudiation of the debt would bring about, but deadened the zeal even of the parsons and squires; while it was known to have sown a deep distrust of the whole Tory party in the heart of the new sovereign. The Crown indeed now turned to the Whigs; while the Church, which up to this time had been the main stumbling-block of their party, was sinking into political insignificance, and was no longer a formidable enemy. For more than thirty years the Whigs ruled England. But the length of their rule was not wholly due to the support of the Crown or the

*Rule of  
the Whigs*



secession of the Tories. It was in some measure due to the excellent organization of their party. While their adversaries were divided by differences of principle and without leaders of real eminence, the Whigs stood as one man on the principles of the Revolution and produced great leaders who carried them into effect. They submitted with admirable discipline to the guidance of a knot of great nobles, to the houses of Bentinck, Manners, Campbell, and Cavendish, to the Fitzroys and Lennoxes, the Russells and Grenvilles, families whose resistance to the Stuarts, whose share in the Revolution, whose energy in setting the line of Hanover on the throne, gave them a claim to power. It was due yet more largely to the activity with which the Whigs devoted themselves to the gaining and preserving an ascendancy in the House of Commons. The support of the commercial classes and of the great towns was secured not only by a resolute maintenance of public credit, but by the special attention which each ministry paid to questions of trade and finance. Peace and the reduction of the land-tax conciliated the farmers and the landowners, while the Jacobite sympathies of the bulk of the squires, and their consequent withdrawal from all share in politics, threw even the representation of the shires for a time into Whig hands. Of the county members, who formed the less numerous but the weightier part of the lower House, nine-tenths were for some years relatives and dependents of the great Whig families. Nor were coarser means of controlling Parliament neglected. The wealth of the Whig

SEC. X  
WALPOLE  
1712  
TO  
1742  
—



Lilly white Vinegar 3 pence a quart  
*Tempest's "Cries of London," 1633-1702.*

*The  
Whigs  
and Par-  
liament*

SEC. X

WALPOLE

1712

TO

1742

houses was lavishly spent in securing a monopoly of the small and corrupt constituencies which made up a large part of the borough representation. It was spent yet more unscrupulously in Parliamentary bribery. Corruption was older than Walpole or the Whig Ministry, for it sprang out of the very transfer of power to the House of Commons which had begun with the Restoration. The transfer was complete, and the House was supreme in the State; but while freeing itself from the control of the Crown, it was as yet imperfectly responsible to the people. It was only at election time that a member felt the pressure of public opinion. The secrecy of parliamentary proceedings, which had been needful as a safeguard against royal interference with debate, served as a safeguard against interference on the part of constituencies. This strange union of immense power with absolute freedom from responsibility brought about its natural results in the bulk of members. A vote was too valuable to be given without recompense; and parliamentary support had to be bought by places, pensions, and bribes in hard cash. But dexterous as was their management, and compact as was their organization, it was to nobler qualities than these that the Whigs owed their long rule over England. They were true throughout to the principles on which they had risen into power, and their unbroken administration converted those principles into national habits. Before their long rule was over, Englishmen had forgotten that it was possible to persecute for difference of opinion, or to put down the liberty of the press, or to tamper with the administration of justice, or to rule without a Parliament.

Walpole

That this policy was so firmly grasped and so steadily carried out was due above all to the genius of Robert Walpole. Born in 1676, he entered Parliament two years before William's death as a young Norfolk landowner of fair fortune, with the tastes and air of the class from which he sprang. His big square figure, his vulgar good-humoured face were those of a common country squire. And in Walpole the squire underlay the statesman to the last. He was ignorant of books, he "loved neither writing nor reading," and if he had a taste for art, his real love was for the table, the bottle, and the chase. He rode as hard as he drank. Even in moments of political peril, the first despatch he would

open was the letter from his gamekeeper. There was the temper of the Norfolk fox-hunter in the "doggedness" which Marlborough noted as his characteristic, in the burly self-confidence which declared "If I had not been Prime Minister I should have been Archbishop of Canterbury," in the stubborn courage which conquered the awkwardness of his earlier efforts to speak, or met single-handed at the last the bitter attacks of a host of enemies.

SEC. X  
WALPOLE  
1712  
TO  
1742



SIR ROBERT WALPOLE.

*Picture by J. B. Van Loo, in the National Portrait Gallery.*

There was the same temper in the genial good-humour which became with him a new force in politics. No man was ever more fiercely attacked by speakers and writers, but he brought in no "gagging Act" for the press; and though the lives of most of his assailants were in his hands through their intrigues with the Pretender, he made little use of his power over them. Where his country breeding showed itself most, however, was in the shrewd, narrow, honest character of his mind. Though he saw very



SEC. X  
WALPOLE  
1712  
TO  
1742

clearly, he could not see far, and he would not believe what he could not see. He was thoroughly straightforward and true to his own convictions, so far as they went. "Robin and I are two honest men," the Jacobite Shippen owned in later years, when contrasting him with his factious opponents: "he is for King George and I am for King James, but those men with long cravats only desire place either under King George or King James." He saw the value of the political results which the Revolution had won, and he carried out his "Revolution principles" with a rare fidelity through years of unquestioned power. But his prosaic good sense turned sceptically away from the poetic and passionate sides of human feeling. Appeals to the loftier or purer motives of action he laughed at as "school-boy flights." For young members who talked of public virtue or patriotism he had one good-natured answer: "You will soon come off that and grow wiser."

The  
Jacobite  
Revolt

How great a part Walpole was to play no one could as yet foresee. Though his vigour in the cause of his party had earned him the bitter hostility of the Tories in the later years of Anne, and a trumped-up charge of peculation had served in 1712 as a pretext for expelling him from the House and committing him to the Tower, at the accession of George the First Walpole was far from holding the commanding position he was soon to assume. The first Hanoverian Ministry was drawn wholly from the Whig party, but its leaders and Marlborough found themselves alike set aside. The direction of affairs was entrusted to the new Secretary of State, Lord Townshend; his fellow Secretary was General Stanhope, who was raised to the peerage. It was as Townshend's brother-in-law, rather than from a sense of his actual ability, that Walpole successively occupied the posts of Paymaster of the Forces, Chancellor of the Exchequer, and First Lord of the Treasury, in the new administration. The first work of the Ministry was to meet a desperate attempt of the Pretender to gain the throne. There was no real prospect of success, for the active Jacobites in England were few, and the Tories were broken and dispirited by the fall of their leaders. The death of Lewis ruined all hope of aid from France; the hope of Swedish aid proved as fruitless; but in spite of Bolingbroke's counsels James Stuart resolved to act alone. Without informing his new minister, he

The  
Townshend  
Ministry

ordered the Earl of Mar to give the signal for revolt in the North. In Scotland the triumph of the Whigs meant the continuance of the House of Argyll in power, and the rival Highland clans were as ready to fight the Campbells under Mar as they had been ready to fight them under Dundee or Montrose. But Mar was a leader of different stamp from these. Six thousand Highlanders joined him at Perth, but his cowardice or want of conduct kept his army idle, till Argyll had gathered forces to meet it in an indecisive engagement at Sheriffmuir. The Pre-

SEC. X  
 WALPOLE  
 1712  
 TO  
 1742  
*The  
 Rising  
 of 1715*



*Contemporary Print.*

tender, who arrived too late for the action, proved a yet more sluggish and incapable leader than Mar: and at the close of 1715 the advance of fresh forces drove James over-sea again and dispersed the clans to their hills. In England the danger passed away like a dream. The accession of the new King had been followed by some outbreaks of riotous discontent; but at the talk of Highland risings and French invasions Tories and Whigs alike rallied round the throne; while the army went hotly for King George. The suspension of the Habeas Corpus Act, and the arrest of their leader, Sir William

SEC. X  
—  
WALPOLE

1712  
TO  
1742  
—

*The  
Septenn-  
nial Bill*

Wyndham, cowed the Jacobites ; and not a man stirred in the west when Ormond appeared off the coast of Devon, and called on his party to rise. Oxford alone, where the University was a hotbed of Jacobitism, showed itself restless ; and a few of the Catholic gentry rose in Northumberland, under Lord Derwentwater and Mr. Forster. The arrival of two thousand Highlanders who had been sent to join them by Mar spurred them to a march into Lancashire, where the Catholic party was strongest ; but they were soon cooped up in Preston, and driven to a surrender. The Ministry availed itself of its triumph to gratify the Nonconformists by a repeal of the Schism and Occasional Conformity Acts, and to



LORD NITHSDALE'S ESCAPE, 1716.  
*Contemporary Print.*

venture on a great constitutional change. Under the Triennial Bill in William's reign the duration of a Parliament was limited to three years. Now that the House of Commons however was become the ruling power in the State, a change was absolutely required to secure steadiness and fixity of political action ; and in 1716 this necessity coincided with the desire of the Whigs to maintain in power a thoroughly Whig Parliament. The duration of Parliament

was therefore extended to seven years by the Septennial Bill. But the Jacobite rising brought about a yet more momentous change in English policy abroad. At the moment when the landing of James in Scotland had quickened the anxiety of King George that France should be wholly detached from his cause, the actual state of European politics aided to bring about a new triple alliance between France, England, and Holland.

*The  
Whigs  
and  
Europe*

Since the death of Lewis the Fourteenth in 1715 France had been ruled by the Duke of Orleans as Regent for the young King, Lewis the Fifteenth. The Duke stood next in the succession to the crown, if Philip of Spain observed the renunciation of his rights which he had made in the Treaty of Utrecht. It was well known,



however, that Philip had no notion of observing this renunciation, and the constant dream of every Spaniard was to recover all that Spain had given up. To attempt this was to defy Europe; for Savoy had gained Sicily: the Emperor held the Netherlands, Naples, and the Milanese; Holland looked on the Barrier fortresses as vital to its own security; while England clung tenaciously to the American trade. But the boldness of Cardinal Alberoni, who was now the Spanish Minister, accepted the risk; and while his master was intriguing against the Regent in France, Alberoni promised aid to the Jacobite cause as a means of preventing the interference of England with his designs. His first attempt was to recover the Italian provinces which Philip had lost, and armaments

SEC. X  
WALPOLE  
1712  
TO  
1742



"Old Cloaks, suits or coats."  
*Tempest's "Cries."*



"Small Coale."  
*Tempest's "Cries."*

greater than Spain had seen for a century reduced Sardinia in 1717. England and France at once drew together and entered into a compact by which France guaranteed the succession of the House of Hanover in England, and England the succession of the House of Orleans, should Lewis the Fifteenth die without heirs; and the two powers were joined, though unwillingly, by Holland. When in the summer of 1718 a strong Spanish force landed in Sicily, and made itself master of the island, the appearance of an English squadron in the Straits of Messina was followed by an engage-

*Alliance  
against  
Spain*

ment in which the Spanish fleet was all but destroyed. Alberoni strove to avenge the blow by fitting out an armament which the

SEC. X  
WALPOLE  
1712  
TO  
1742

Duke of Ormond was to command for a revival of the Jacobite rising in Scotland. But the ships were wrecked in the Bay of Biscay; and the accession of Austria with Savoy to the Triple Alliance left Spain alone in the face of Europe. The progress of the French armies in the north of Spain forced Philip at last to give way. Alberoni was dismissed; and the Spanish forces were withdrawn from Sardinia and Sicily. The last of these islands now passed to the Emperor, Savoy being compensated for its loss by the acquisition of Sardinia, from which its Duke took the title of King; while the work of the Treaty of Utrecht was completed by the Emperor's renunciation of his claims on the crown of Spain and Philip's

renunciation of his claims on the Milanese and the two Sicilies.

The  
Stanhope  
Ministry

The struggle however had shown the difficulties which the double position of its sovereign was to bring on England. In his own mind George cared more for the interests of his Electorate of Hanover than of his kingdom; and these were now threatened by Charles XII. of Sweden, whose anger had been roused at the cession to Hanover of the Swedish possessions of Bremen and Verden by the King of Denmark, who had seized them while Charles was absent in Turkey. The despatch of a British fleet into the Baltic to overawe Sweden identified England with the policy of Hanover, and Charles retorted by joining with Alberoni, and by concluding an alliance with the Czar,



"London's Gazette here."  
*Tempest's "Cries."*



"Long threed laces, long and strong."  
*Tempest's "Cries."*

Peter the Great, for a restoration of the Stuarts. Luckily for the new dynasty his plans were brought to an end by his death at the siege of Frederickshall; but the policy which provoked them had already brought about the dissolution of the Ministry. In assenting to a treaty of alliance with Hanover against Sweden, they had yielded to the fact that Bremen and Verden were not only of the highest importance to Hanover, which was thus brought into contact with the sea, but of hardly less value to England, as they secured the mouths of the Elbe and the Weser, the chief inlets for British commerce into Germany, in the hands of a friendly state. But they refused to go further in carrying out a Hanoverian policy; the anger of the King was seconded by intrigues among the ministers; and in 1717 Townshend and Walpole had been forced to resign their

SEC. X  
 WALPOLE  
 1712  
 TO  
 1742  
 1718  
*England  
 and  
 Hanover*



"New River Water."  
*Tempest's "Cries."*



"A brass Pott or an iron Pott to mend."

*Tempest's "Cries."*

posts. In the reconstituted cabinet Lords Sunderland and Stanhope remained supreme; and their first aim was to secure the maintenance of the Whig power by a constitutional change. Harley's creation of twelve peers to ensure the sanction of the Lords to the Treaty of Utrecht showed that the Crown possessed a power of swamping the majority in the House of Peers. In 1720 therefore the Ministry introduced a bill, suggested as was believed by Sunderland, which professed to secure the liberty of the Upper House by limiting the power of the Crown in the creation of fresh Peers. The number of

*The  
 Peerage  
 Bill*

Peers was permanently fixed at the number then sitting in the House; and creations could only be made when vacancies occurred.



## SEC. X

WALPOLE

1712

TO

1742

Twenty-five hereditary Scotch Peers were substituted for the sixteen elected Peers for Scotland. The bill however was strenuously opposed by Walpole. It would

in fact have rendered representative government impossible. For representative government was now coming day by day more completely to mean government by the will of the House of Commons, carried out by a Ministry which served as the mouthpiece of that will. But it was only through the prerogative of the Crown, as exercised under the advice of such a Ministry, that the Peers could be forced to bow to the will of the Lower House in matters where their opinion was adverse to it; and the proposal of Sunderland would have brought legislation and government to a dead



"Buy my Dutch Biskets."  
*Tempest's "Cries."*

lock. The Peerage Bill owed its defeat to Walpole's opposition; and his rivals were forced to admit him, with Townshend, into the Ministry, though they held subordinate places. But this soon gave way to a more natural arrangement.

*South Sea  
Bubble*

The sudden increase of English commerce begot at this moment the mania of speculation. Ever since the age of Elizabeth the unknown wealth of Spanish America had acted like a spell upon the imagination of Englishmen; and Harley gave countenance to a South Sea Company, which promised a reduction of the public debt as the price of a monopoly of the Spanish trade. Spain however clung jealously to her old prohibitions of all foreign commerce; and the Treaty of Utrecht only won for England the right of engaging in the negro slave-trade, and of despatching a single ship to the



"Fine Writeing Inke."  
*Tempest's "Cries."*

coast of Spanish America. But in spite of all this, the Company again came forward, offering in exchange for new privileges to pay off national burdens which amounted to nearly a million a year. It

SEC. X  
WALPOLE  
1712  
TO  
1742



TRADE LABEL OF THE SOUTH SEA COMPANY.  
Guildhall Museum.

was in vain that Walpole warned the Ministry and the country against this "dream." Both went mad; and in 1720 bubble Company followed bubble Company, till the inevitable reaction brought a general ruin in its train. The crash brought Stanhope to the

SEC X

WALPOLE

1712

TO

1742

*Walpole's  
Ministry*

grave. Of his colleagues, many were found to have received bribes from the South Sea Company to back its frauds. Craggs, the Secretary of State, died of terror at the investigation; Aislabie, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, was sent to the Tower; and in the general wreck of his rivals Walpole mounted again into power. In 1721 he became First Lord of the Treasury, while Townshend returned to his post of Secretary of State. But their relative position was now reversed. Townshend had been the head in their earlier administration: in this Walpole was resolved, to use his own characteristic phrase, that "the firm should be Walpole and Townshend and not Townshend and Walpole."

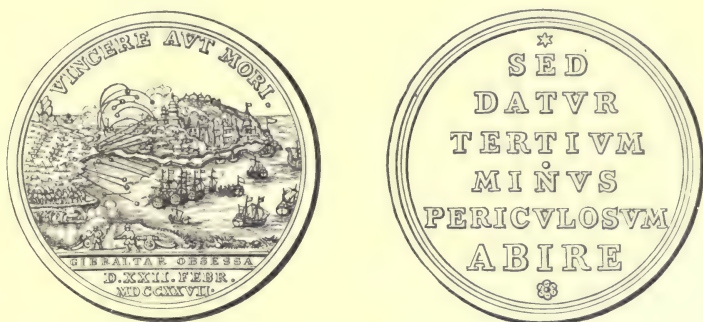
*Walpole's  
Peace  
Policy*

If no Minister has fared worse at the hands of poets and historians, there are few whose greatness has been more impartially recognized by practical statesmen. The years of his power indeed are years without parallel in our history for political stagnation. His long administration of more than twenty years is almost without a history. All legislative and political activity seemed to cease with his entry into office. Year after year passed by without a change. In the third year of his Ministry there was but one division in the House of Commons. The Tory members were so few that for a time they hardly cared to attend its sittings; and in 1722 the loss of Bishop Atterbury of Rochester, who was convicted of correspondence with the Pretender, deprived of his bishopric, and banished by Act of Parliament, deprived the Jacobites of their only remaining leader. Walpole's one care was to maintain the quiet which was reconciling the country to the system of the Revolution. But this inaction fell in with the temper of the nation at large. It was popular with the class which commonly presses for political activity. The energy of the trading class was absorbed in the rapid extension of commerce and accumulation of wealth. So long as the country was justly and temperately governed the merchant and shopkeeper were content to leave government in the hands that held it. All they asked was to be let alone to enjoy their new freedom, and develop their new industries. And Walpole let them alone. Progress became material rather than political, but the material progress of the country was such as England had never seen before. The work of keeping England quiet and of giving quiet to Europe, was in itself



a noble one ; and it is the temper with which he carried on this work which gives Walpole his place among English statesmen. He was the first and he was the most successful of our Peace Ministers. "The most pernicious circumstances," he said, "in which this country can be are those of war ; as we must be losers while it lasts, and cannot be great gainers when it ends." It was not that the honour or influence of England suffered in his hands, for he won victories by the firmness of his policy and the skill of his negotiations as effectual as any which are won by arms. But in spite of the complications of foreign affairs, and the pressure from the Court and the Opposition, it is the glory of Walpole that he resolutely kept England at peace. Peace indeed was hard to maintain. The Emperor Charles the Sixth had issued a Pragmatic

SEC. X  
WALPOLE  
1712  
TO  
1742



MEDAL COMMEMORATING THE SIEGE OF GIBRALTAR, 1727.

Sanction, by which he provided that his hereditary dominions should descend unbroken to his daughter, Maria Theresa ; but no European State had yet consented to guarantee her succession. Spain, still resolute to regain her lost possessions, and her old monopoly of trade with her American colonies, seized the opportunity of detaching the Emperor from the alliance of the Four Powers, which left her isolated in Europe. She promised to support the Pragmatic Sanction in return for a pledge from Charles to aid in wresting Gibraltar and Minorca from England, and in securing to a Spanish prince the succession to Parma, Piacenza, and Tuscany. A grant of the highest trading privileges in her American dominions to a commercial company which the Emperor had established at Ostend, in defiance of the Treaty of Westphalia

*Fresh  
efforts of  
Spain*

SEC. X

WALPOLE

1712

TO

1742

1725

and the remonstrances of England and Holland, revealed this secret alliance ; and there were fears of the adhesion of Russia. The danger was met for a while by an alliance of England, France, and Prussia ; but the withdrawal of the last Power again gave courage to the confederates, and in 1727 the Spaniards besieged Gibraltar, while Charles threatened an invasion of Holland. The moderation of Walpole alone averted a European war. While sending British squadrons to the Baltic, the Spanish coast, and America, he succeeded by diplomatic pressure in again forcing the Emperor to inaction ; Spain was at last brought to sign the Treaty of Seville, and to content herself with a promise of the succession of a Spanish prince to the Duchies of Parma and Tuscany ; and the discontent of Charles at this concession was allayed in 1731 by giving the guarantee of England to the Pragmatic Sanction.

1729

Walpole's  
Finance

As Walpole was the first of our Peace Ministers, so he was the first of our Financiers. He was far indeed from discerning the powers which later statesmen have shown to exist in a sound finance, but he had the sense to see, what no minister had till then seen, that the wisest course a statesman can take in presence of a great increase in national industry and national wealth is to look quietly on and let it alone. At the outset of his rule he declared in a speech from the Throne that nothing would more conduce to the extension of commerce "than to make the exportation of our own manufactures, and the importation of the commodities used in the manufacturing of them, as practicable and easy as may be." The first act of his financial administration was to take off the duties from more than a hundred British exports, and nearly forty articles of importation. In 1730 he broke in the same enlightened spirit through the prejudice which restricted the commerce of the colonies to the mother-country alone, by allowing Georgia and the Carolinas to export their rice directly to any part of Europe. The result was that the rice of America soon drove that of Italy and Egypt from the market. His Excise Bill, defective as it was, was the first measure in which an English Minister showed any real grasp of the principles of taxation. The wisdom of Walpole was rewarded by a quick upgrowth of prosperity. Our exports, which were six millions in value at the beginning of the century, had doubled by the middle of it. The rapid developement of the

Colonial trade gave England a new wealth. In Manchester and Birmingham, whose manufactures were now becoming of importance, population doubled in thirty years. Bristol, the chief seat of the West Indian trade, rose into new prosperity. Liverpool, which owes its creation to the new trade with the West, sprang

SEC. X  
 WALPOLE  
 1712  
 TO  
 1742



JONATHAN SWIFT, DEAN OF S. PATRICK'S, DUBLIN.  
*From an engraving by E. Scriven, after F. Bindon.*

up from a little country town into the third port of the kingdom. With peace and security, and the wealth that they brought with them, the value of land, and with it the rental of every country gentleman, rose fast. But this up-growth of wealth around him never made Walpole swerve from a rigid economy, from the



## SEC. X

WALPOLE

1712

TO

1742

Walpole  
and the  
Parlia-  
ment

steady reduction of the debt, or the diminution of fiscal duties. Even before the death of George the First the public burdens were reduced by twenty millions.

The accession of George the Second in 1727 seemed to give a fatal shock to Walpole's power ; for the new King was known to have hated his father's Minister hardly less than he had hated his father. But hate Walpole as he might, the King was absolutely guided by the adroitness of his wife, Caroline of Anspach ; and Caroline had resolved that there should be no change in the



ALEXANDER POPE.  
*Picture at Chiswick House.*

Ministry. The years which followed were in fact those in which Walpole's power reached its height. He gained as great an influence over George the Second as he had gained over his father. His hold over the House of Commons remained unshaken. The country was tranquil and prosperous. The prejudices of the landed gentry were met by a steady effort to reduce the land-tax. The Church was quiet. The Jacobites were too hopeless to stir. A few trade measures and social reforms crept quietly through the Houses. An inquiry into the state of the gaols showed that social thought was not utterly dead. A bill of great

*George the  
Second*

value enacted that all proceedings in courts of justice should henceforth be in the English language. Only once did Walpole break this tranquillity by an attempt at a great measure of statesmanship. No tax had from the first moment of its introduction been more unpopular than the Excise. Its origin was due to Pym and the Long Parliament, who imposed duties on beer, cyder, and perry, which at the Restoration produced an annual income of more than six hundred thousand pounds. The war with France brought with it the malt-tax, and additional duties on spirits, wine, tobacco, and other articles. So great had been the increase in the public wealth that the return from the Excise amounted at the death of George the First to nearly two millions and a half a year. But its unpopularity remained unabated, and even philosophers like Locke contended that the whole public revenue should be drawn from direct taxes upon the land. Walpole, on the other hand, saw in the growth of indirect taxation a means of winning over the country gentry to the new dynasty of the Revolution by freeing the land from all burdens whatever. Smuggling and fraud diminished the revenue by immense sums. The loss on tobacco alone amounted to a third of the whole duty. The Excise Bill of 1733 met this evil by the establishment of bonded warehouses, and by the collection of the duties from the inland dealers in the form of Excise and not of Customs. The first measure would have made London a free port, and doubled English trade. The second would have so largely increased the revenue, without any loss to the consumer, as to enable Walpole to repeal the land-tax. In the case of tea and coffee alone, the change in the mode of levying the duty was estimated to bring in an additional hundred thousand pounds a year. The necessities of life and the raw materials of manufacture were in Walpole's plan to remain absolutely untaxed. The scheme was an anticipation of the principles which have guided English finance since the triumph of free trade; but in 1733 Walpole stood ahead of his time. A violent agitation broke out; riots almost grew into revolt; and in spite of the Queen's wish to put down resistance by force, Walpole withdrew the bill. "I will not be the Minister," he said with noble self-command, "to enforce taxes at the expense of blood." What had fanned popular prejudice into a flame

SEC. X  
 WALPOLE  
 1712  
 TO  
 1742  
*Excise  
 Bill*





THE HOUSE OF COMMONS IN WALPOLE'S ADMINISTRATION.  
*From A. Fagg's engraving of a picture by Hogarth and Thornhill.*

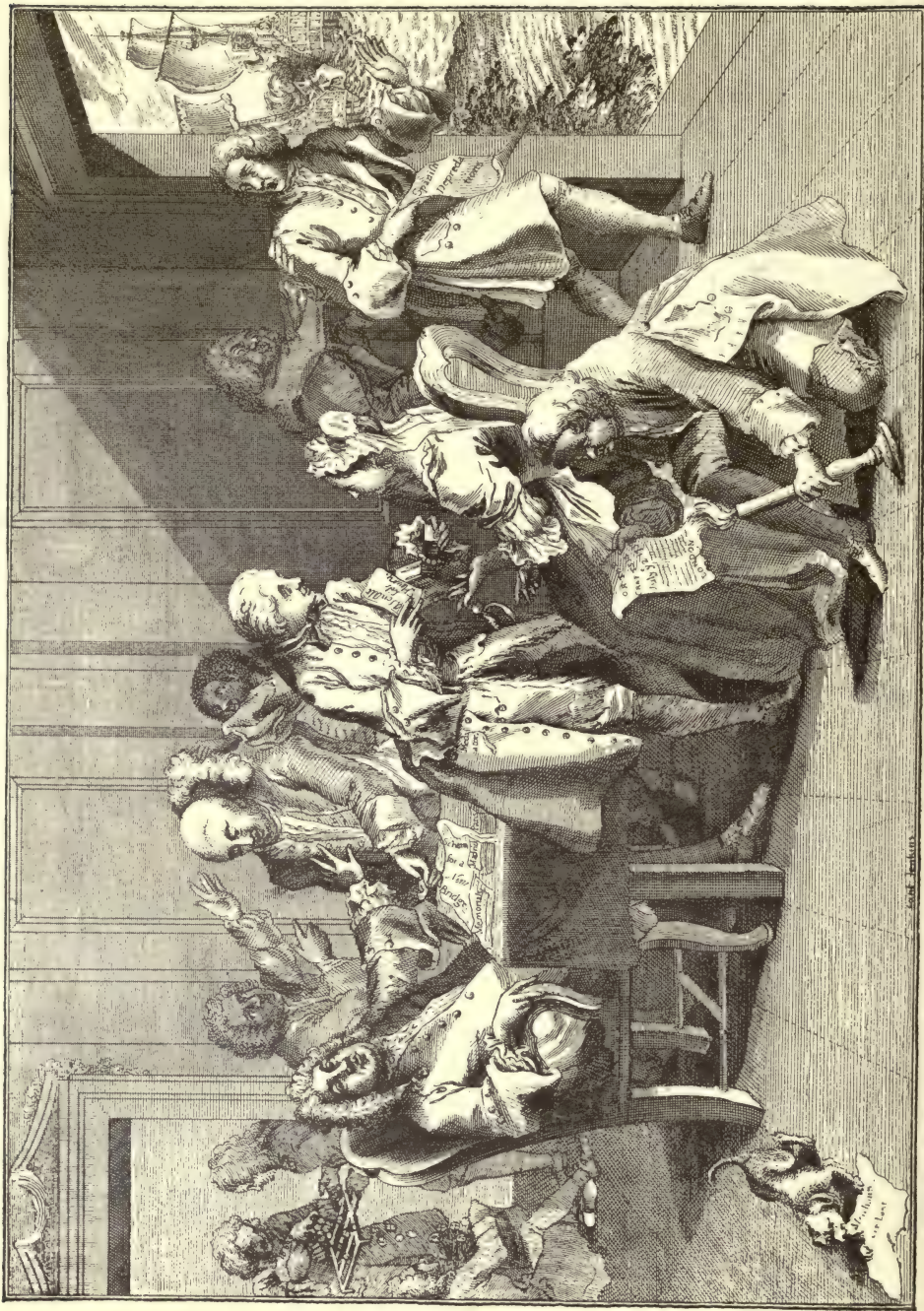


during the uproar was the violence of the so-called "Patriots." In the absence of a strong opposition and of great impulses to enthusiasm a party breaks readily into factions ; and the weakness of the Tories joined with the stagnation of public affairs to breed faction among the Whigs. Walpole too was jealous of power ; and as his jealousy drove colleague after colleague out of office, they became leaders of a party whose sole aim was to thrust him from his post. Greed of power indeed was the one passion which mastered his robust common-sense. Townshend was turned out of office in 1730, Lord Chesterfield in 1733 ; and though he started with the ablest administration the country had known, Walpole was left after twenty years of supremacy with but one man of ability in his cabinet, the Chancellor, Lord Hardwicke. With the single exception of Townshend, the colleagues whom his jealousy dismissed plunged into an opposition more factious and unprincipled than has ever disgraced English politics. The "Patriots," as they called themselves, owned Pulteney as their head ; they were reinforced by a band of younger Whigs—the "Boys," as Walpole named them—whose temper revolted alike against the inaction and cynicism of his policy, and whose spokesman was a young cornet of horse, William Pitt ; and they rallied to these the fragment of the Tory party which still took part in politics, and which was guided for a while by the virulent ability of Bolingbroke, whom Walpole had suffered to return from exile, but to whom he had refused the restoration of his seat in the House of Lords. But Walpole's defeat on the Excise Bill had done little to shake his power, and Bolingbroke withdrew to France in despair at the failure of his efforts.

Abroad the first signs of a new danger showed themselves in 1733, when the peace of Europe was broken afresh by disputes which rose out of a contested election to the throne of Poland. Austria and France were alike drawn into the strife ; and in England the awakening jealousy of French designs roused a new pressure for war. The new King too was eager to fight, and her German sympathies inclined even Caroline to join in the fray. But Walpole stood firm for the observance of neutrality. "There are fifty thousand men slain this year in Europe," he boasted as the strife went on, "and not one Englishman." The intervention

SEC. X  
 WALPOLE  
 1712  
 TO  
 1742  
 The  
 Patriots

The  
 Spanish  
 War



"IN PLACE."  
Satire on Walpole, 1738.  
Contemporary print in British Museum.



of England and Holland succeeded in 1736 in restoring peace ; but the country noted bitterly that peace was bought by the triumph of both branches of the House of Bourbon. A new Bourbon monarchy was established at the cost of the House of Austria by the cession of the Two Sicilies to a Spanish Prince, in exchange for his right of succession to Parma and Tuscany. On the other hand, Lorraine passed finally into the hands of France. The birth of children to Lewis the Fifteenth had settled all questions of succession in France, and no obstacle remained to hinder their family sympathies from uniting the Bourbon Courts in a common action. As early as 1733 a Family Compact had been secretly concluded between France and Spain, the main object of which was the ruin of the maritime supremacy of Britain. Spain bound herself to deprive England gradually of its commercial privileges in her American dominions, and to transfer them to France. France in return engaged to support Spain at sea, and to aid her in the recovery of Gibraltar. The caution with which Walpole held aloof from the Polish war rendered this compact inoperative for the time ; but neither of the Bourbon courts ceased to look forward to its future execution. No sooner was the war ended than France strained every nerve to increase her fleet ; while Spain steadily tightened the restrictions on British commerce with her American colonies. The trade with Spanish America, which, illegal as it was, had grown largely through the connivance of Spanish port-officers during the long alliance of England and Spain in the wars against France, had at last received a legal recognition in the Peace of Utrecht. It was indeed left under narrow restrictions ; but these were evaded by a vast system of smuggling which rendered what remained of the Spanish monopoly all but valueless. The efforts of Philip however to bring down English intercourse with his colonies to the importation of negroes and the despatch of a single ship, as stipulated by the Treaty of Utrecht, brought about collisions which made it hard to keep the peace. The ill-humour of the trading classes rose to madness in 1738 when a merchant captain named Jenkins told at the bar of the House of Commons the tale of his torture by the Spaniards, and produced an ear which, he said, they had cut off with taunts at the English king. It was in vain that

SEC. X

WALPOLE

1712

TO

1742

*The  
Family  
Compact**England  
and Spain*





“THE MOTION.”  
*Satirical print, 1741.*

Walpole strove to do justice to both parties, and that he battled stubbornly against the cry for an unjust and impolitic war. The Emperor's death was now close at hand; and at such a juncture it was of the highest importance that England should be free to avail herself of every means to guard the European settlement. But his efforts were in vain. His negotiations were foiled by the frenzy of the one country and the pride of the other. At home his enemies assailed him with a storm of abuse. Ballad-singers trolled out their rimes to the crowd on the "cur-dog of Britain and spaniel of Spain." His position had been weakened by the death of the Queen; and it was now weakened yet more by the open hostility of the Prince of Wales. His mastery of the House of Commons too was no longer unquestioned. The Tories were slowly returning to Parliament. The numbers and the violence of the "Patriots" had grown with the open patronage of Prince Frederick. The country was slowly turning against him. With the cry for a commercial war the support of the trading class failed him. But it was not till he stood utterly alone that Walpole gave way and that he consented in 1739 to a war against Spain.

SEC. X  
WALPOLE  
1712  
TO  
1742

"They may ring their bells now," the great minister said bitterly, as peals and bonfires welcomed his surrender; "but they will soon be wringing their hands." His foresight was at once justified. No sooner had Admiral Vernon appeared off the coast of South America with an English fleet, and captured Porto Bello, than France formally declared that she would not consent to any English settlement on the mainland of South America, and despatched two squadrons to the West Indies. At this crisis the death of Charles the Sixth forced on the European struggle which Walpole had dreaded. France saw her opportunity for finishing the work which Henry the Second had begun of breaking up the Empire into a group of powers too weak to resist French aggression. While the new King of Prussia, Frederick the Second, claimed Silesia, Bavaria claimed the Austrian Duchies, which passed with the other hereditary dominions, according to the

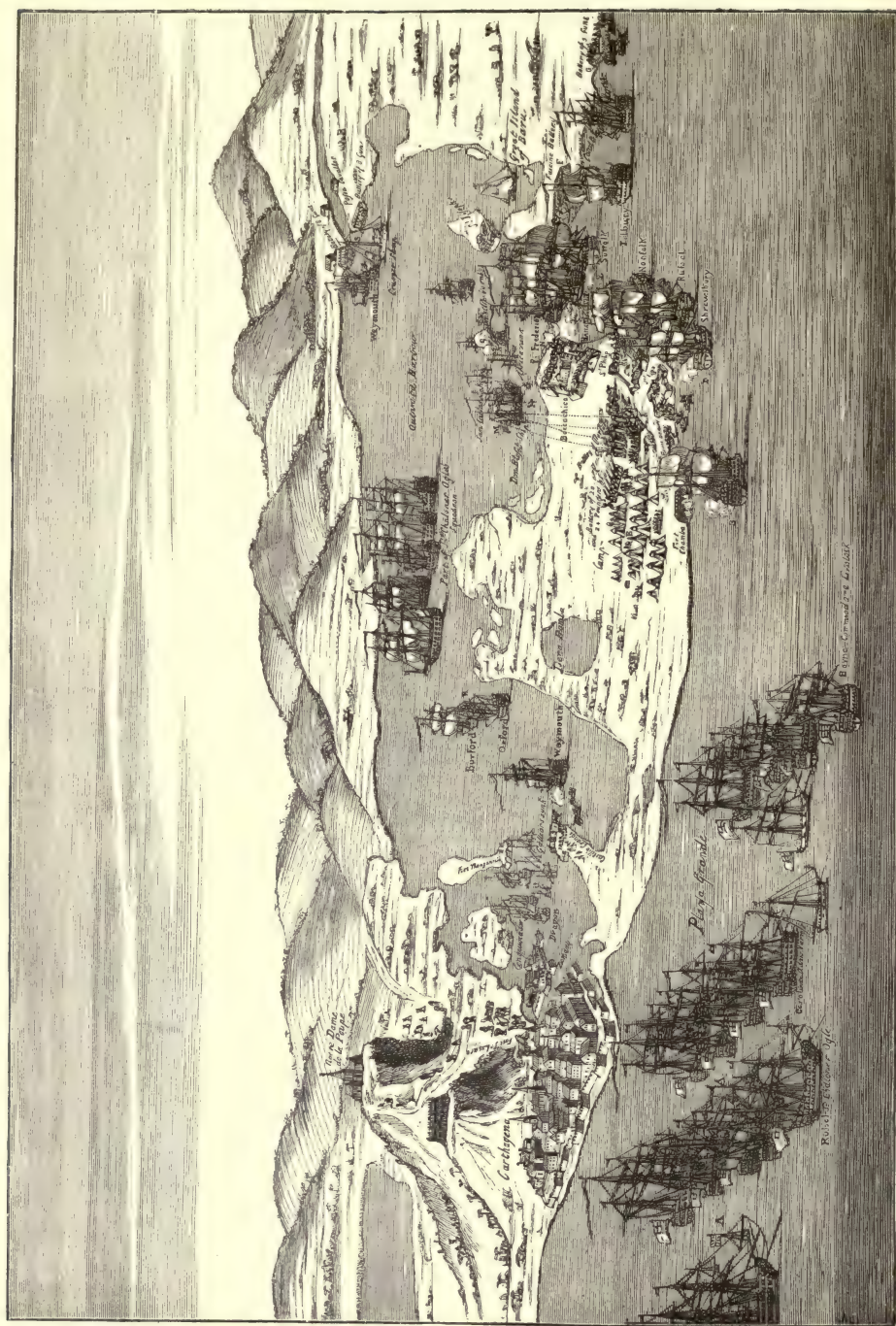
Fall of  
Walpole



MEDAL ON CAPTURE OF  
PORTOBELLO, 1739.

The  
Austrian  
Succession  
1740





ACTION AT CARTHAGENA, 1741.  
*Contemporary engraving, from drawing by H. Gravelot.*



Pragmatic Sanction, to the Queen of Hungary, Maria Theresa. In union therefore with Spain, which aimed at the annexation of the Milanese, France promised her aid to Prussia and Bavaria ; while Sweden and Sardinia allied themselves to France. In the summer of 1741 two French armies entered Germany, and the Elector of Bavaria appeared unopposed before Vienna. Never had the House of Austria stood in such peril. Its opponents counted on a division of its dominions. France claimed the Netherlands, Spain the Milanese, Bavaria the kingdom of Bohemia, Frederick the Second Silesia. Hungary and the Duchy of Austria alone were left to Maria Theresa. Walpole, though still true to her cause, advised her to purchase Frederick's aid against France and her allies by the cession of part of Silesia ; but the " Patriots " spurred her to refusal by promising her the aid of England. Walpole's last hope of rescuing Austria was broken, and Frederick was driven to conclude an alliance with France. But the Queen refused to despair. She won the support of Hungary by restoring its constitutional rights ; and British subsidies enabled her to march at the head of a Hungarian army to the rescue of Vienna, to overrun Bavaria, and repulse an attack of Frederick on Moravia in the spring of 1742. On England's part, however, the war was waged feebly and ineffectively. Admiral Vernon was beaten before Carthage ; and Walpole was charged with thwarting and starving the war. He still repelled the attacks of the " Patriots " with wonderful spirit ; but in a new Parliament his majority dropped to sixteen, and in his own cabinet he became almost powerless. The buoyant temper which had carried him through so many storms broke down at last. " He who was asleep as soon as his head touched the pillow," writes his son, " now never sleeps above an hour without waking : and he who at dinner always forgot his own anxieties, and was more gay and thoughtless than all the company, now sits without speaking, and with his eyes fixed for an hour together." The end was in fact near ; and in the opening of 1742 the dwindling of his majority to three forced Walpole to resign.

SEC. X

WALPOLE

1712

TO

1742

*Resigna-  
tion of  
Walpole*

# THE STATE LOTTERY.



*The Name of a LOTTERY the Nation bewitches,  
 And City and Country run Mad after Riches:  
 My Lord, who already has Thousands a Year,  
 Thinks to double his Income by venturing it here:  
 The Country Squire dips his Houses and Grounds  
 For Tickets to gain him the Ten Thousand Pounds:  
 The rolie-jowl'd Doctor his Rectorie leaves,  
 In quest of a Prize, to procure him Lawn Sleeves:  
 The Tradesman, whom Duns for their Money importune  
 Here hazards his All, for th' Advance of his Fortune:  
 The Footman resolves, if he meets no Disaster,  
 To mount his gilt Chariot, and vie with his Master:  
 The Cook-Wench determines, by one lucky Hit,  
 To free her fair Hands from the Pothooks and Spit:  
 The Chamber-maid struts in her Ladies Cast Gown,  
 And hopes to be dub'd the Top Toast of the Town:  
 But Fortune alas! will have small Share of Thanks,  
 When all their high Wishes are bury'd in Blanks:  
 For tho' they for Benefits eagerly watch'd,  
 They reckon'd their Chickens before they were hatch'd.*

*Engraven By B. Roberts & Sold by him at his Shop in Ball Alley Lombard Street.*

*Price 5<sup>d</sup>*

STATE LOTTERY, 1739.  
 Contemporary print in British Museum.





CHAINED LIBRARY, FOUNDED 1715, AT ALL SAINTS CHURCH, HEREFORD.  
*Blades, "Bibliographical Miscellanies."*

## CHAPTER X

### MODERN ENGLAND

#### Section I.—William Pitt, 1742—1762

[*Authorities.*—Lord Stanhope and Horace Walpole, as before. Southey's biography, or the more elaborate life by Mr. Tyerman, gives an account of Wesley. For Pitt himself, the Chatham correspondence, his life by Thackeray, and Lord Macaulay's two essays on him. The Annual Register begins with 1758; its earlier portion has been attributed to Burke. Carlyle's "Frederick the Great" gives a picturesque account of the Seven Years' War. For Clive, see the biography by Sir John Malcolm, and Lord Macaulay's essay.]

THE fall of Walpole revealed a change in the temper of England which was to influence from that time to this its social and political history. New forces, new cravings, new aims, which had been silently gathering beneath the crust of inaction, began

The  
Church  
and the  
Georges



SEC. I

WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

at last to tell on the national life. The stir showed itself markedly in a religious revival which dates from the later years of Walpole's ministry. Never had religion seemed at a lower ebb. The progress of free inquiry, the aversion from theological strife which had been left by the Civil Wars, the new political and material channels opened to human energy, had produced a general indifference to all questions of religious speculation or religious life. The Church, predominant as its influence seemed at the



THE VICAR OF THE PARISH RECEIVING HIS  
TITHES.

*Engraving, 1793, after H. Singleton.*

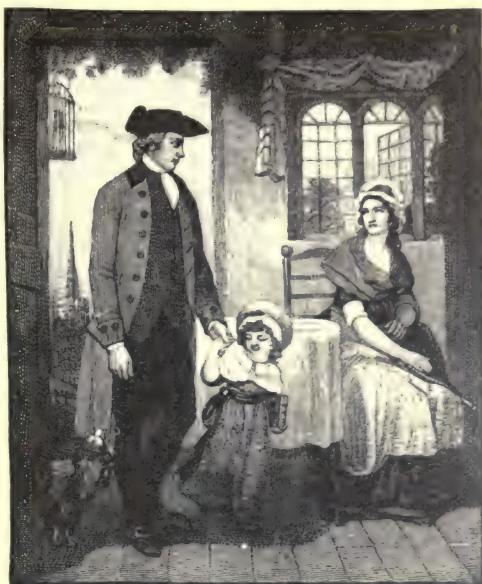
close of the Revolution, had sunk into political insignificance. The bishops, who were now chosen exclusively from among the small number of Whig ecclesiastics, were left politically powerless by the estrangement and hatred of their clergy; while the clergy themselves, drawn by their secret tendencies to Jacobitism, stood sulkily apart from any active interference with public affairs. The prudence of the Whig statesmen aided to maintain this ecclesi-

astical immobility. They were careful to avoid all that could rouse into life the slumbering forces of bigotry and fanaticism. When the Dissenters pressed for a repeal of the Test and Corporation Acts, Walpole openly avowed his dread of awaking the passions of religious hate by such a measure, and satisfied them by an annual act of indemnity for any breach of these penal statutes; while a suspension of the meetings of Convocation deprived the clergy of their natural centre of agitation and opposition. Nor was this political inaction compensated by any

religious activity. A large number of prelates were mere Whig partizans with no higher aim than that of promotion. The levees of the Ministers were crowded with lawn sleeves. A Welsh bishop avowed that he had seen his diocese but once, and habitually resided at the lakes of Westmoreland. The system of pluralities turned the wealthier and more learned of the priesthood into absentees, while the bulk of them were indolent, poor and without social consideration. A shrewd, if prejudiced, observer brands the English clergy of the day as the most lifeless in Europe, "the most remiss of their labours in private, and the least severe in their lives." There was a revolt against religion and against churches in both the extremes of English society. In the higher circles of society "every one laughs," said Montesquieu on his visit to England, "if one talks of religion." Of the prominent statesmen of the time the greater part were unbelievers in any form

85 . 1  
W. 11 133  
P. 11  
1742  
1762

*Religious  
indiffer-  
ence*



THE CURATE OF THE PARISH RETURNING FROM DUTY.

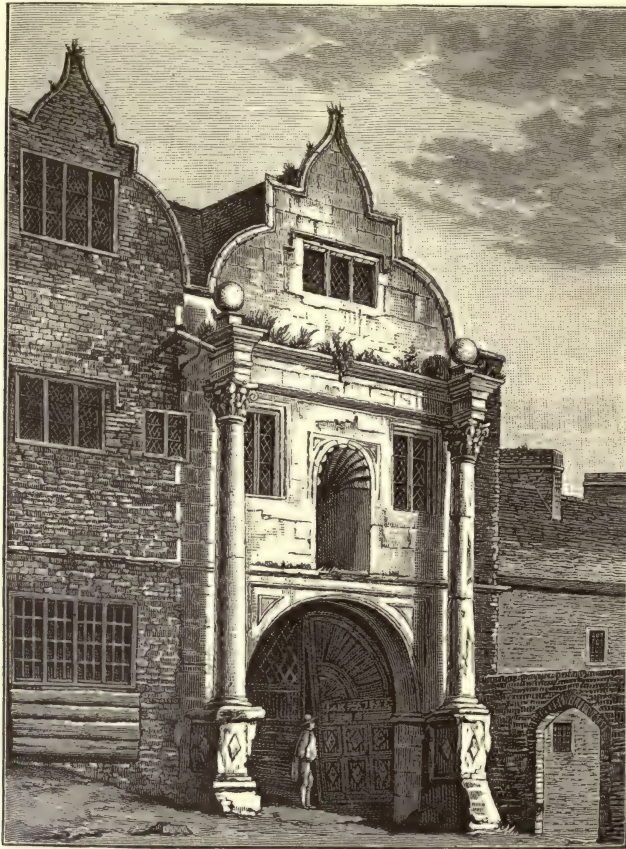
*Engraving, 1793, after H. Singleton.*

of Christianity, and distinguished for the grossness and immorality of their lives. Drunkenness and foul talk were thought no discredit to Walpole. A later prime minister, the Duke of Grafton, was in the habit of appearing with his mistress at the play. Purity and fidelity to the marriage vow were sneered out of fashion; and Lord Chesterfield, in his letters to his son, instructs him in the art of seduction as part of a polite education. At the other end of the social scale lay the masses of the poor. They were ignorant and brutal to a degree which it is hard to conceive,



SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

for the increase of population which followed on the growth of towns and the developement of commerce had been met by no effort for their religious or educational improvement. Not a new parish had been created. Schools there were none, save the grammar schools of Edward and Elizabeth, and some newly



READING POOR-HOUSE.

Built 1727.

Coates, "*History of Reading.*"

established "circulating schools" in Wales, for religious education. The rural peasantry, who were fast being reduced to pauperism by the abuse of the poor-laws, were left without much moral or religious training of any sort. "We saw but one Bible in the parish of Cheddar," said Hannah More at a far later time, "and



that was used to prop a flower-pot." Within the towns things were worse. There was no effective police ; and in great outbreaks the mob of London or Birmingham burnt houses, flung open prisons, and sacked and pillaged at their will. The criminal class gathered boldness and numbers in the face of ruthless laws which only testified to the terror of society, laws which made it a

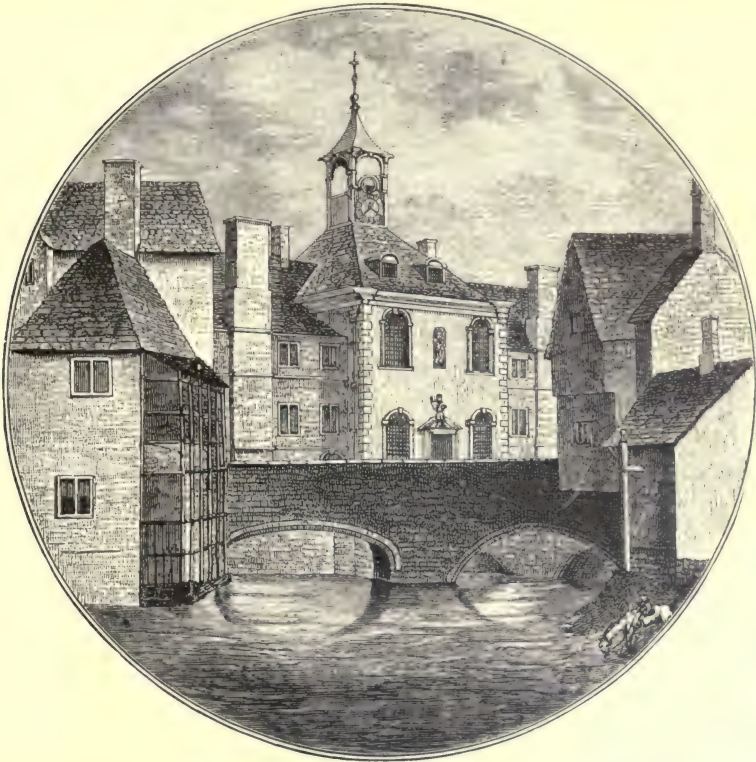
SEC. I

WILLIAM

1742

10  
-6-

1762



FROME SCHOOL (BUILT 1720) AND BRIDGE.

*Drawing in British Museum.*

capital crime to cut down a cherry tree, and which strung up twenty young thieves of a morning in front of Newgate ; while the introduction of gin gave a new impetus to drunkenness. In the streets of London at one time gin-shops invited every passer-by to get drunk for a penny, or dead drunk for twopence.

In spite however of scenes such as this, England remained at heart religious. In the middle class the old Puritan spirit lived

## The Religious Revival

SEC. I  
 WILLIAM  
 PITT  
 1742  
 TO  
 1762

on unchanged, and it was from this class that a religious revival burst forth at the close of Walpole's administration, which changed after a time the whole tone of English society. The Church was restored to life and activity. Religion carried to the hearts of the people a fresh spirit of moral zeal, while it purified our literature and our manners. A new philanthropy reformed our prisons,



DEAN BERKELEY, HIS WIFE, AND FELLOW MISSIONARIES.

*Picture by J. Smybert, at Yale College, Rhode Island.*

infused clemency and wisdom into our penal laws, abolished the slave trade, and gave the first impulse to popular education. The revival began in a small knot of Oxford students, whose revolt against the religious deadness of their times showed itself in ascetic observances, an enthusiastic devotion, and a methodical regularity of life which gained them the nickname of "Methodists."

*The  
 Methodists*

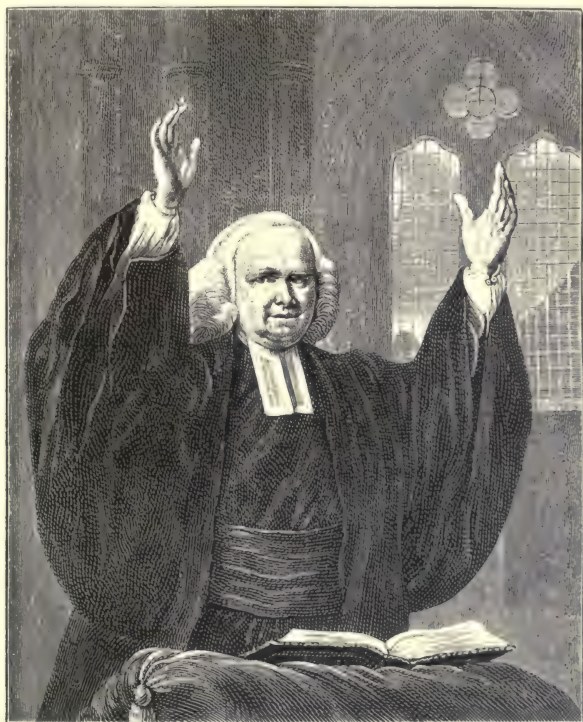
Three figures detached themselves from the group as soon as, on



its transfer to London in 1738, it attracted public attention by the fervour and even extravagance of its piety ; and each found his special work in the task to which the instinct of the new movement led it from the first, that of carrying religion and morality to the vast masses of population which lay concentrated in the towns, or around the mines and collieries of Cornwall and the north. Whitefield, a servitor of Pembroke College, was above all

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
1762

*White  
field*



GEORGE WHITEFIELD.  
*Picture by Nathaniel Hone.*

the preacher of the revival. Speech was governing English politics ; and the religious power of speech was shown when a dread of "enthusiasm" closed against the new apostles the pulpits of the Established Church, and forced them to preach in the fields. Their voice was soon heard in the wildest and most barbarous corners of the land, among the bleak moors of Northumberland, or in the dens of London, or in the long galleries where



SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

*Charles  
Wesley*

*John  
Wesley*

in the pauses of his labour the Cornish miner listens to the sobbing of the sea. Whitefield's preaching was such as England had never heard before, theatrical, extravagant, often commonplace, but hushing all criticism by its intense reality, its earnestness of belief, its deep tremulous sympathy with the sin and sorrow of mankind. It was no common enthusiast who could wring gold from the close-fisted Franklin and admiration from the fastidious Horace Walpole, or who could look down from the top of a green knoll at Kingswood on twenty thousand colliers, grimy from the Bristol coal-pits, and see as he preached the tears "making white channels down their blackened cheeks." On the rough and ignorant masses to whom they spoke the effect of Whitefield and his fellow Methodists was mighty both for good and ill. Their preaching stirred a passionate hatred in their opponents. Their lives were often in danger, they were mobbed, they were ducked, they were stoned, they were smothered with filth. But the enthusiasm they aroused was equally passionate. Women fell down in convulsions; strong men were smitten suddenly to the earth; the preacher was interrupted by bursts of hysteric laughter or of hysteric sobbing. All the phenomena of strong spiritual excitement, so familiar now, but at that time strange and unknown, followed on their sermons; and the terrible sense of a conviction of sin, a new dread of hell, a new hope of heaven, took forms at once grotesque and sublime. Charles Wesley, a Christ Church student, came to add sweetness to this sudden and startling light. He was the "sweet singer" of the movement. His hymns expressed the fiery conviction of its converts in lines so chaste and beautiful that its more extravagant features disappeared. The wild throes of hysteric enthusiasm passed into a passion for hymn-singing, and a new musical impulse was aroused in the people which gradually changed the face of public devotion throughout England.

But it was his elder brother, John Wesley, who embodied in himself not this or that side of the new movement, but the movement itself. Even at Oxford, where he resided as a fellow of Lincoln, he had been looked upon as head of the group of Methodists, and after his return from a quixotic mission to the Indians of Georgia he again took the lead of the little society, which had removed in the interval to London. In power as a preacher he

stood next to Whitefield ; as a hymn-writer he stood second to his brother Charles. But while combining in some degree the excellences of either, he possessed qualities in which both were utterly deficient ; an indefatigable industry, a cool judgement, a command over others, a faculty of organization, a singular union of patience and moderation with an imperious ambition, which marked

SEC. I  
 WILLIAM  
 PITT  
 1742  
 TO  
 1762



JOHN WESLEY.  
*Picture by William Hamilton.*

him as a ruler of men. He had besides a learning and skill in writing which no other of the Methodists possessed ; he was older than any of his colleagues at the start of the movement, and he out-lived them all. His life indeed almost covers the century, and the Methodist body had passed through every phase of its history before he sank into the grave at the age of eighty-eight. It would have been impossible for Wesley to have wielded the power he did

1703-1791

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

had he not shared the follies and extravagance as well as the enthusiasm of his disciples. Throughout his life his asceticism was that of a monk. At times he lived on bread only, and he often slept on the bare boards. He lived in a world of wonders and divine interpositions. It was a miracle if the rain stopped and allowed him to set forward on a journey. It was a judgement of Heaven if a hailstorm burst over a town which had been deaf to his preaching. One day, he tells us, when he was tired and his horse fell lame, "I thought—cannot God heal either man or beast by any means or without any?—immediately my headache ceased and my horse's lameness in the same instant." With a still more childish fanaticism he guided his conduct, whether in ordinary events or in the great crises of his life, by drawing lots or watching the particular texts at which his Bible opened. But with all this extravagance and superstition, Wesley's mind was essentially practical, orderly, and conservative. No man ever stood at the head of a great revolution whose temper was so anti-revolutionary. In his earlier days the bishops had been forced to rebuke him for the narrowness and intolerance of his churchmanship. When Whitefield began his sermons in the fields, Wesley "could not at first reconcile himself to that strange way." He condemned and fought against the admission of laymen as preachers till he found himself left with none but laymen to preach. To the last he clung passionately to the Church of England, and looked on the body he had formed as but a lay society in full communion with it. He broke with the Moravians, who had been the earliest friends of the new movement, when they endangered its safe conduct by their contempt of religious forms. He broke with Whitefield when the great preacher plunged into an extravagant Calvinism. But the same practical temper of mind which led him to reject what was unmeasured, and to be the last to adopt what was new, enabled him at once to grasp and organize the novelties he adopted. He became himself the most unwearied of field preachers, and his journal for half a century is little more than a record of fresh journeys and fresh sermons. When once driven to employ lay helpers in his ministry he made their work a new and attractive feature in his system. His earlier asceticism only lingered in a dread of social enjoyments and an aversion from the gayer and sunnier



SEC. I

WILLIAM

PIET

1742

TO

1762

side of life which links the Methodist movement with that of the Puritans. As the fervour of his superstition died down into the calm of age, his cool common sense discouraged in his followers the enthusiastic outbursts which marked the opening of the revival. His powers were bent to the building up of a great religious society which might give to the new enthusiasm a lasting and practical form. The Methodists were grouped into classes, gathered in love-feasts, purified by the expulsion of unworthy members, and



SCHOOL.  
Early Eighteenth Century.  
*After P. Mercier.*

furnished with an alternation of settled ministers and wandering preachers; while the whole body was placed under the absolute government of a Conference of ministers. But so long as he lived, the direction of the new religious society remained with Wesley alone. "If by arbitrary power," he replied with charming simplicity to objectors, "you mean a power which I exercise simply without any colleagues therein, this is certainly true, but I see no hurt in it."

The great body which he thus founded numbered a hundred

## SEC. I

WILLIAM

PITT

1742

TO

1762

The New  
Philan-  
thropy

thousand members at his death, and now counts its members in England and America by millions. But the Methodists themselves were the least result of the Methodist revival. Its action upon the Church broke the lethargy of the clergy; and the "Evangelical" movement, which found representatives like Newton and Cecil

within the pale of the Establishment, made the fox-hunting parson and the absentee rector at last impossible. In Walpole's day the English clergy were the idlest and most lifeless in the world. In our own time no body of religious ministers surpasses them in piety, in philanthropic energy, or in popular regard. In the nation at large appeared a new moral enthusiasm which, rigid and pedantic as it often seemed, was still healthy in its social tone, and whose power was seen in the disappearance of the profligacy which had disgraced the upper classes, and the foulness which had infested literature, ever since



SAMUEL JOHNSON.

*From an engraving by Finden.*

the Restoration. A yet nobler result of the religious revival was the steady attempt, which has never ceased from that day to this, to remedy the guilt, the ignorance, the physical suffering, the social degradation of the profligate and the poor. It was not till the Wesleyan impulse had done its work that this

philanthropic impulse began. The Sunday Schools established by Mr. Raikes of Gloucester at the close of the century were the beginnings of popular education. By writings and by her own personal example Hannah More drew the sympathy of England to the poverty and crime of the agricultural labourer. A passionate impulse of human sympathy with the wronged and afflicted raised

SEC. I

WILLIAM

Pitt

1742

1792



HANNAH MORE.  
*Picture by Opie, 1786.*

hospitals, endowed charities, built churches, sent missionaries to the heathen, supported Burke in his plea for the Hindoo, and Clarkson and Wilberforce in their crusade against the iniquity of the slave-trade. It is only the moral chivalry of his labours that amongst a crowd of philanthropists draws us most, perhaps, to the work and character of John Howard. The sympathy which all were feeling for the sufferings of mankind he felt for the sufferings



SEC. I

WILLIAM  
PITT

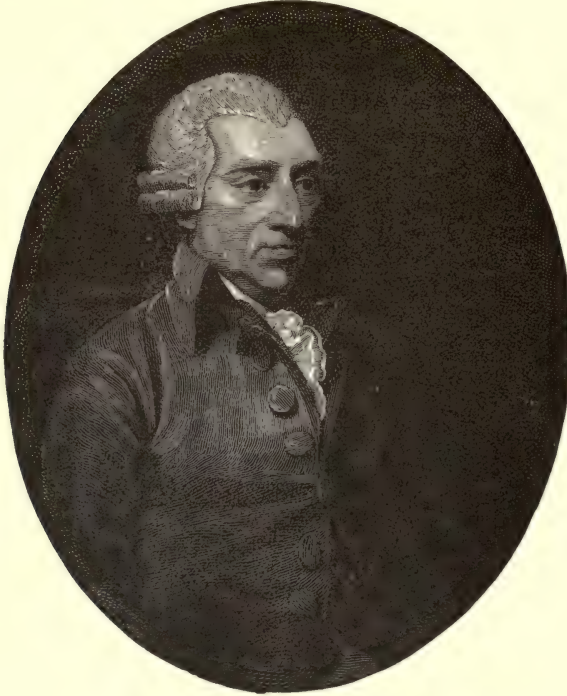
1742

TO

1762

*John  
Howard*

of the worst and most hapless of men. With wonderful ardour and perseverance he devoted himself to the cause of the debtor, the felon, and the murderer. An appointment to the office of High Sheriff of Bedfordshire in 1774 drew his attention to the state of the prisons which were placed under his care ; and from that time the quiet country gentleman, whose only occupation had been reading his Bible and studying his thermometer, became the most energetic



JOHN HOWARD.

*Picture by Mather Brown, in National Portrait Gallery.*

and zealous of reformers. Before a year was over he had personally visited almost every English gaol, and he found in nearly all of them frightful abuses which had been noticed half a century before, but left unredressed by Parliament. Gaolers who bought their places were paid by fees, and suffered to extort what they could.

Even when acquitted, men were dragged back to their cells for want of funds to discharge the sums they owed to their keepers. Debtors and felons were huddled together in the prisons which Howard found crowded by the cruel legislation of the day. No separation was preserved between different sexes, no criminal discipline enforced. Every gaol was a chaos of cruelty and the foulest immorality, from which the prisoner could only escape by sheer starvation, or through the gaol-fever that festered without

ceasing in these haunts of wretchedness. Howard saw everything with his own eyes, he tested every suffering by his own experience. In one gaol he found a cell so narrow and noisome that the poor wretch who inhabited it begged as a mercy for hanging. Howard shut himself up in the cell and bore its darkness and foulness till nature could bear no more. It was by work of this sort, and by the faithful pictures of such scenes which it enabled him to give, that he brought about their reform. The book in which he recorded his terrible experience, and the plans which he submitted for the reformation of criminals made him the father, so far as England is concerned, of prison discipline. But his labours were far from being confined to England. In journey after journey he visited the gaols of Holland and Germany, till his longing to discover some means of checking the fatal progress of the plague led him to examine the lazarettos of Europe and the East. He was still engaged in this work of charity when he was seized by a malignant fever at Cherson in Southern Russia, and "laid quietly in the earth," as he desired.

See I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

Carteret

*England  
and  
Austria*

While the revival of the Wesleys was stirring the very heart of England, its political stagnation was unbroken. The fall of Walpole made no change in English policy, at home or abroad. The bulk of his ministry, who had opposed him in his later years of office, resumed their posts, simply admitting some of the more prominent members of opposition, and giving the control of foreign affairs to Lord Carteret, a man of great power, and skilled in continental affairs. Carteret mainly followed the system of his predecessor. It was in the union of Austria and Prussia that he looked for the means of destroying the hold France had now established in Germany by the election of her puppet, Charles of Bavaria, as Emperor; and the pressure of England, aided by a victory of Frederick at Chotusitz, forced Maria Theresa to consent to Walpole's plan of a peace with Prussia at Breslau on the terms of the cession of Silesia. The peace enabled the Austrian army to drive the French from Bohemia at the close of 1742; an English fleet blockaded Cadiz, and another anchored in the bay of Naples and forced Don Carlos by a threat of bombarding his capital to conclude a treaty of neutrality, while English subsidies detached Sardinia from the French alliance. Unfortunately Carteret and the

SEC. I

WILLIAM  
PITT1742  
TO  
1762

Court of Vienna now determined not only to set up the Pragmatic Sanction, but to undo the French encroachments of 1736. Naples and Sicily were to be taken back from their Spanish King, Elsass and Lorraine from France ; and the imperial dignity was to be restored to the Austrian House. To carry out these schemes an Austrian army drove the Emperor from Bavaria in the spring of 1743 ; while George the Second, who warmly supported Carteret's policy, put himself at the head of a force of 40,000 men, the bulk of whom were English and Hanoverians, and marched from the



MEDAL COMMEMORATING BATTLE OF DETTINGEN.  
(Obverse.)

Netherlands to the Main. His advance was checked and finally turned into a retreat by the Duc de Noailles, who appeared with a superior army on the south bank of the river, and finally throwing 31,000 men across it, threatened to compel the King to surrender. In the battle of Dettingen which followed, however, not only was the allied army saved from destruction by the impetuosity of

*Dettingen* the French horse and the dogged obstinacy with which the English held their ground, but their opponents were forced to recross the Main. Small as was the victory, it produced amazing results. The French evacuated Germany. The English and Austrian armies appeared on the Rhine ; and a league between England, Prussia, and the Queen of Hungary, seemed all that was needed to secure the results already gained.

*Fontenoy* But the prospect of peace was overthrown by the ambition of the House of Austria. In the spring of 1744 an Austrian army



SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

marched upon Naples, with the purpose of transferring it after its conquest to the Bavarian Emperor, whose hereditary dominions in Bavaria were to pass in return to Maria Theresa. If however Frederick had withdrawn from the war on the cession of Silesia, he was resolute to take up arms again rather than suffer so great an aggrandisement of the House of Austria in Germany. His sudden alliance with France failed at first to change the course of the war ; for though he was successful in seizing Prague and drawing the Austrian army from the Rhine, Frederick was driven from Bohemia, while the death of the Emperor forced Bavaria to lay down its arms and to ally itself with Maria Theresa. So high were the Queen's hopes at this moment that she formed a secret alliance with Russia for the division of the Prussian monarchy. But in 1745 the tide turned, and the fatal results of Carteret's weakness in assenting to the change from a war of defence into one of attack became manifest.

The French King, Lewis the Fifteenth, led an army into the Netherlands ; and the refusal of Holland to act against him left their defence wholly in the hands of England. The general anger at this widening of the war proved fatal to Carteret, or, as he now became, Earl Granville. His imperious temper had rendered him odious to his colleagues, and he was driven from office by the Duke of Newcastle and his brother Henry Pelham. Of the reconstituted ministry which followed Henry Pelham became the head. His temper, as well as



MEDAL COMMEMORATING BATTLE OF DETTINGEN.  
(Reverse.)

SEC. I  
 WILLIAM  
 PITT  
 1742  
 TO  
 1762  
*The  
 Pelham  
 Ministry*  
 1745

a consciousness of his own mediocrity, disposed him to a policy of conciliation which reunited the Whigs. Chesterfield and the Whigs in opposition, with Pitt and "the Boys," all found room in the new administration; and even a few Tories found admittance. The bulk of the Whigs were true to Walpole's policy; and it was to pave the way to an accommodation with Frederick and a close of the war that the Pelhams forced Carteret to resign. But their attention had first to be given to the war in Flanders, where Marshal Saxe had established the superiority of the French army by his defeat of the Duke of Cumberland. Advancing to the relief of Tournay with a force of English, Hanoverians, and Dutch—for Holland had at last been dragged into the war—the Duke on the 31st of May 1745 found the French covered by a line of fortified villages and redoubts with but a single narrow gap near the hamlet of Fontenoy. Into this gap, however, the English troops, formed in a dense column, doggedly thrust themselves in spite of a terrible fire; but at the moment when the day seemed won the French guns, rapidly concentrated in their front, tore the column in pieces and drove it back in a slow and orderly retreat. The blow was quickly followed up in June by a victory of Frederick at Hohenfriedburg which drove the Austrians from Silesia, and by a landing of a Stuart on the coast of Scotland at the close of July.

Charles  
 Edward  
 Stuart

The war with France had at once revived the hopes of the Jacobites; and as early as 1744 Charles Edward, the grandson of James the Second, was placed by the French Government at the head of a formidable armament. But his plan of a descent on Scotland was defeated by a storm which wrecked his fleet, and by the march of the French troops which had sailed in it to the war in Flanders. In 1745, however, the young adventurer again embarked with but seven friends in a small vessel and landed on a little island of the Hebrides. For three weeks he stood almost alone; but on the 29th of August the clans rallied to his standard in Glenfinnan, and Charles found himself at the head of fifteen hundred men. His force swelled to an army as he marched through Blair Athol on Perth, entered Edinburgh in triumph, and proclaimed "James the Eighth" at the Town Cross: and two thousand English troops who marched against him under Sir John Cope were broken and cut to pieces on the 21st of September by a

*Preston  
 Pans*  
 1745

single charge of the clansmen at Preston Pans. Victory at once doubled the forces of the conqueror. The Prince was now at the head of six thousand men ; but all were still Highlanders, for the people of the Lowlands held aloof from his standard, and it was with the utmost difficulty that he could induce them to follow him to the south. His tact and energy however at last conquered every obstacle, and after skilfully evading an army gathered at Newcastle he marched through Lancashire, and pushed on the 4th of December as far as Derby. But here all hope of success came to an end. Hardly a man had risen in his support as he passed through the districts where Jacobitism boasted of its strength. The people flocked to see his march as if to see a show. Catholics and Tories abounded in Lancashire, but only a single squire took up arms. Manchester was looked on as the most Jacobite of English towns, but all the aid it gave was an illumination and two thousand pounds. From Carlisle to Derby he had been joined by hardly two hundred men. The policy of Walpole had in fact secured England for the House of Hanover. The long peace, the prosperity of the country, and the clemency of the Government, had done their work.

The recent admission of Tories into the administration had severed the Tory party finally from the mere Jacobites. Jacobitism as a fighting force was dead, and even Charles Edward saw that it was hopeless to conquer England with five thousand Highlanders. He soon learned too that forces of double his own strength were closing on either side of him, while a third army under the King and Lord Stair covered London. Scotland itself, now that the Highlanders were away, quietly

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PIET  
1742  
TO  
1762



PIPER IN HIGHLAND REGIMENT.  
*Grose, "Military Antiquities."*



SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

renewed in all the districts of the Lowlands its allegiance to the House of Hanover. Even in the Highlands the Macleods rose in arms for King George, while the Gordons refused to stir, though roused by a small French force which landed at Montrose. To advance further south was impossible, and Charles fell rapidly back on Glasgow; but the reinforcements which he found there raised



SOLDIERS IN HIGHLAND REGIMENT.  
*Grose, "Military Antiquities."*

his army to nine thousand men, and on the 23rd January, 1746, he boldly attacked an English army under General Hawley which had followed his retreat and had encamped near Falkirk. Again the wild charge of his Highlanders won victory for the Prince, but victory was as fatal as defeat. The bulk of his forces dispersed with their booty to the mountains, and

*Culloden  
Moor*

Charles fell sullenly back to the north before the Duke of Cumberland. On the 16th of April the armies faced one another on Culloden Moor, a few miles eastward of Inverness. The Highlanders still numbered six thousand men, but they were starving and dispirited, while Cumberland's force was nearly double that of the Prince. Torn by the Duke's guns, the clansmen flung themselves in their old fashion on the English front; but they were received with a terrible fire of musketry, and the few that broke through the

first line found themselves fronted by a second. In a few moments all was over, and the Stuart force was a mass of hunted fugitives. Charles himself after strange adventures escaped to France. In England fifty of his followers were hanged; three Scotch lords, Lovat, Balmerino, and Kilmarnock, brought to the block; and forty persons of rank attainted by Act of Parliament. More extensive measures of repression were needful in the Highlands. The feudal tenures were abolished. The hereditary jurisdictions of the chiefs were bought up and transferred to the Crown. The tartan, or garb of the Highlanders, was forbidden by law. These measures, followed by a general Act of Indemnity, proved effective for their purpose. The dread of the clansmen passed away, and the

SEC. I

WILLIAM

PITT

1742

TO

1762

*Conquest  
of the  
High-  
lands*



MEDAL TO COMMEMORATE THE VICTORY AT CULLODEN.

Sheriff's writ soon ran through the Highlands with as little resistance as in the streets of Edinburgh.

Defeat abroad and danger at home only quickened the resolve of the Pelhams to bring the war with Prussia to an end. When England was threatened by a Catholic Pretender, it was no time for weakening the chief Protestant power in Germany. On the refusal of Maria Theresa to join in a general peace, England concluded the Convention of Hanover with Prussia, and withdrew so far as Germany was concerned from the war. Elsewhere however the contest lingered on. The victories of Maria Theresa in Italy were balanced by those of France in the Netherlands, where Marshal Saxe inflicted new defeats on the English and

*Peace of  
Aix-la-  
Chapelle*

1745

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762  
1748

Dutch at Roucoux and Lauffeld. The danger of Holland and the financial exhaustion of France at last brought about the conclusion of a peace at Aix-la-Chapelle, by which England surrendered its gains at sea, and France its conquests on land. But the peace was a mere pause in the struggle, during which both parties hoped to gain strength for a mightier contest which they saw impending. The war was in fact widening far beyond the bounds of Germany or of Europe. It was becoming a world-wide duel which was to settle the destinies of mankind. Already France was claiming



FORT WILLIAM.  
*Print in British Museum.*

the valleys of the Ohio and the Mississippi, and mooting the great question whether the fortunes of the New World were to be moulded by Frenchmen or Englishmen. Already too French adventurers were driving English merchants from Madras, and building up, as they trusted, a power which was to add India to the dominions of France.

Clive

The early intercourse of England with India gave little promise of the great fortunes which awaited it. It was not till the close of Elizabeth's reign, a century after Vasco da Gama had crept round the Cape of Good Hope and founded the Portuguese



settlement on the Goa coast, that an East India Company was established in London. The trade, profitable as it was, remained small in extent; and the three early factories of the Company were only gradually acquired during the century which followed. The first, that of Madras, consisted of but six fishermen's houses beneath Fort St. George; that of Bombay was ceded by the Portuguese as part of the dowry of Catharine of Braganza; while Fort William, with the mean village which has since grown into Calcutta, owes its origin to the reign of William the Third. Each of these forts was built simply for the protection of the Company's warehouses, and guarded by a few "sepahis," sepoy, or paid native soldiers; while the clerks and traders of each establishment were under the direction of a President and a Council. One of these clerks in the middle of the eighteenth century was Robert Clive, the son of a small proprietor near Market Drayton in Shropshire, an idle dare-devil of a boy whom his friends had been glad to get rid of by packing him off in the Company's service as a writer to Madras. His early days there were days of wretchedness and despair. He was poor and cut off from his fellows by the haughty shyness of his temper, weary of desk-work, and haunted by home-sickness. Twice he attempted suicide; and it was only on the failure of his second attempt that he flung down the pistol which baffled him with a conviction that he was reserved for higher things.

A change came at last in the shape of war and captivity. As soon as the war of the Austrian Succession broke out, the superiority of the French in power and influence tempted them to expel the English from India. Labourdonnais, the governor of the French colony of the Mauritius, besieged Madras, razed it to the ground, and carried its clerks and merchants prisoners to Pondicherry. Clive was among these captives, but he escaped in disguise, and returning to the settlement, threw aside his clerkship for an ensign's commission in the force which the Company was busily raising. For the capture of Madras had not only established the repute of the French arms, but had roused Dupleix, the governor of Pondicherry, to conceive plans for the creation of a French empire in India. When the English merchants of Elizabeth's day brought their goods to Surat, all

SEC. I

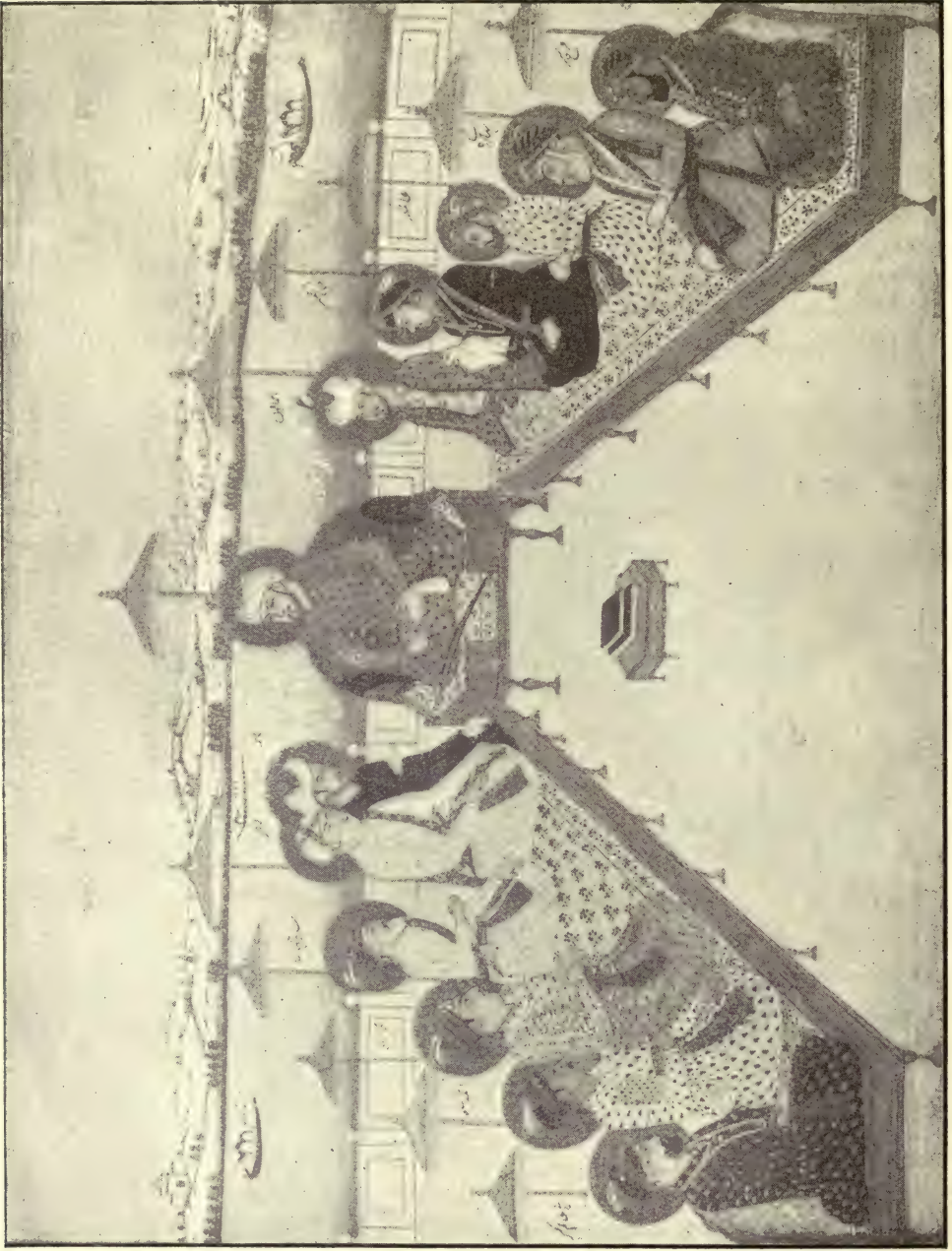
WILLIAM  
THIRD

1742

1762

Dupleix

1746



THE MOGUL, EMPERORS.  
*Miniature at Windsor Castle.*

India, save the south, had just been brought for the first time under the rule of a single great power by the Mogul Emperors of the line of Akbar. But with the death of Aurungzebe, in the reign of Anne, the Mogul Empire fell fast into decay. A line of feudal princes raised themselves to independence in Rajpootana. The lieutenants of the Emperor founded separate sovereignties at Lucknow and Hyderabad, in the Carnatic, and in Bengal. The plain of the Upper Indus was occupied by a race of religious fanatics called the Sikhs. Persian and Affghan invaders crossed the Indus, and succeeded even in sacking Delhi, the capital of the Moguls. Clans of systematic plunderers, who were known under the name of Mahrattas, and who were in fact the natives whom conquest had long held in subjection, poured down from the highlands along the western coast, ravaged as far as Calcutta and Tanjore, and finally set up independent states at Poonah and Gwalior. Dupleix skilfully availed himself of the disorder around him. He offered his aid to the Emperor against the rebels and invaders who had reduced his power to a shadow ; and it was in the Emperor's name that he meddled with the quarrels of the states of Central and Southern India, made himself virtually master of the Court of Hyderabad, and seated a creature of his own on the throne of the Carnatic. Trichinopoly, the one town which held out against this Nabob of the Carnatic, was all but brought to surrender when Clive, in 1751, came forward with a daring scheme for its relief. With a few hundred English and sepoy he pushed through a thunderstorm to the surprise of Arcot, the Nabob's capital, entrenched himself in its enormous fort, and held it for fifty days against thousands of assailants. Moved by his gallantry, the Mahrattas, who had never believed that Englishmen would fight before, advanced and broke up the siege ; but Clive was no sooner freed than he showed equal vigour in the field. At the head of raw recruits who ran away at the first sound of a gun, and sepoy who hid themselves as soon as the cannon opened fire, he twice attacked and defeated the French and their Indian allies, foiled every effort of Dupleix, and razed to the ground a pompous pillar which the French governor had set up in honour of his earlier victories.

Clive was recalled by broken health to England, and the

SEC. I

WILLIAM

PIII

1742

1762

.Arct.



SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762  
The  
American  
Colonies

fortunes of the struggle in India were left for decision to a later day. But while France was struggling for the Empire of the East she was striving with even more apparent success for the command of the new world of the West. Populous as they had become, the English settlements in America still lay mainly along

the sea-board of the Atlantic ; for only a few exploring parties had penetrated into the Alleghanies before the Seven Years' War ; and Indian tribes wandered unquestioned along the lakes. It was not till the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle that the pretensions of France drew the eyes of the colonists and of English statesmen to the interior of the Western Continent. Planted firmly in Louisiana and Canada, France openly claimed the whole country west of the Alleghanies



A FRENCH CANADIAN.

Bacqueville de la Potherie, "*Histoire de l'Amérique Septentrionale*," 1722.

1748 as its own, and its governors now ordered all English settlers or merchants to be driven from the valleys of Ohio or Mississippi which were still in the hands of Indian tribes. Even the inactive Pelham revolted from pretensions such as these. The original French settlers were driven from Acadia or Nova

Scotia, and an English colony founded the settlement of Halifax. An Ohio Company was formed, and its agents made their way to the valleys of that river and the Kentucky; while envoys from Virginia and Pennsylvania drew closer the alliance between their colonies and the Indian tribes across the mountains. Nor were the French slow to accept the challenge. Fighting began in Acadia. A vessel of war appeared in Ontario, and Niagara was turned into a fort. A force of 1,200 men despatched to Eric drove

SEC. I

WILLIAM  
PITTI

1742

1762



ILE STE. CROIX, EARLIEST FRENCH SETTLEMENT IN ACADIA, 1604.

*Champlain, "Voyages," 1613.*

the few English settlers from their little colony on the fork of the Ohio, and founded there a fort called Duquesne, on the site of the later Pittsburg. The fort at once gave this force command of the river valley. After a fruitless attack on it under George Washington, a young Virginian, the colonists were forced to withdraw over the mountains, and the whole of the west was left in the hands of France. The bulk of the Indian tribes from Canada as far as the Mississippi attached themselves to the French cause, and the value of their aid was shown in 1755, when General



SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762  
*Rout of  
Braddock*

Braddock led a force of English soldiers and American militia to an attack upon Fort Duquesne. The force was utterly routed and Braddock slain. The Marquis of Montcalm, who in 1756 commanded the French forces in Canada, was gifted with singular powers of administration. He carried out with even more zeal than his predecessor the plans of annexation; and the three forts of Duquesne on the Ohio, of Niagara on the St. Lawrence, and of Ticonderoga on Lake Champlain, were linked together by a chain of lesser forts, which cut off the English colonists from all access to the west. The defeat of Braddock had already roused England to its danger, for it was certain that war in America would be followed by war in Europe. The ministers looked on a league with Prussia as the only means of checking France; but Frederick held cautiously aloof, while the advances of England to Prussia only served to alienate Maria Theresa, whose one desire was to regain Silesia. The two powers of the House of Bourbon were still bound by the Family Compact; and as early as 1752 Maria Theresa by a startling change of policy drew to their alliance. The jealousy which Russia entertained of the growth of a strong power in North Germany brought the Czarina Elizabeth to promise aid to the schemes of the Queen of Hungary; and in 1755 the league of the four powers and of Saxony was practically completed. So secret were these negotiations that they remained unknown to Henry Pelham and to his brother the Duke of Newcastle, who succeeded him on his death in 1754 as the head of the Ministry. But they were detected from the first by the keen eye of Frederick of Prussia, who saw himself fronted by a line of foes that stretched from Paris to St. Petersburg.

The  
Seven  
Years'  
War

The danger to England was hardly less; for France appeared again on the stage with a vigour and audacity which recalled the days of Lewis the Fourteenth. The weakness and corruption of the French government were screened for a time by the daring and scope of its plans, as by the ability of the agents it found to carry them out. In England, on the contrary, all was vagueness and indecision. It was not till the close of the year that a treaty was at last concluded with the Prussian King. With this treaty between England and Frederick began the Seven Years' War. No war has had greater results on the history of the world or brought

1755



greater triumphs to England ; but few have had more disastrous beginnings. Newcastle was too weak and ignorant to rule without aid, and yet too greedy of power to purchase aid by sharing it with more capable men. His preparations for the gigantic struggle before him may be guessed from the fact that there were but three regiments fit for service in England at the opening of 1756. France, on the other hand, was quick in her attack. Port Mahon in Minorca, the key of the Mediterranean, was besieged by the

SEC. I  
 WILLIAM  
 PITT  
 1742  
 TO  
 1762



FREDERICK II., KING OF PRUSSIA AND ELECTOR OF BRANDENBURG.

*From an engraving in the Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris.*

Duke of Richelieu and forced to capitulate. To complete the shame of England, a fleet sent to its relief under Admiral Byng retreated before the French. In Germany Frederick seized Dresden at the outset of the war and forced the Saxon army to surrender, and in 1757 a victory at Prague made him master for a while of Bohemia ; but his success was transient, and a defeat at Kolin drove him to retreat again into Saxony. In the same year the Duke of Cumberland, who had taken post on the Weser with an army of fifty thousand men for the defence of Hanover, fell



GREENWICH HOSPITAL.

back before a French army to the mouth of the Elbe, and engaged by the Convention of Closter-Seven to disband his forces. In America things went even worse than in Germany. The inactivity of the English generals was contrasted with the genius and activity of Montcalm. Already masters of the Ohio by the defeat of Braddock, the French drove the English garrison from the forts which commanded Lake Ontario and Lake Champlain, and their empire stretched without a break over the vast territory from Louisiana to the St. Lawrence. A despondency without parallel in our history took possession of our coolest statesmen, and even the impassive Chesterfield cried in despair, "We are no longer a nation."

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
1762  
1756

But the nation of which Chesterfield despaired was really on the eve of its greatest triumphs, and the miserable incapacity of the Duke of Newcastle only called to the front the genius of William Pitt. Pitt was the grandson of a wealthy governor of Madras, who had entered Parliament in 1735 as member for one of his father's pocket boroughs, and had headed the younger "patriots" in their attack on Walpole. The dismissal from the army by which Walpole met his attacks turned his energy wholly to politics. His fiery spirit was hushed in office during the "broad-bottom administration" which followed Walpole's fall, but after the death of Henry Pelham, Newcastle's jealousy of power threw him into an attitude of opposition and he was deprived of his place. When the disasters of the war however drove Newcastle from office in November 1756, Pitt became Secretary of State: but in four months the enmity of the King and of Newcastle's party drove him to resign. In July 1757, however, it was necessary to recall him. The failure of Newcastle to construct an administration forced the Duke to a junction with his rival; and fortunately for their country, the character of the two statesmen made the compromise an easy one. For all that Pitt coveted, for the general direction of public affairs, the control of foreign policy, the administration of the war, Newcastle had neither capacity nor inclination. On the other hand, his skill in parliamentary management was unrivalled. If he knew little else, he knew better than any living man the price of every member and the intrigues of every borough. What he cared for was not the control of affairs, but the distribution of patronage and the work of corruption, and from this Pitt

William  
Pitt

Newcastle  
and Pitt





AN ELECTION ENTERTAINMENT, 1755.  
Picture by W. Hogarth.



turned disdainfully away. "Mr. Pitt does everything," wrote Horace Walpole, "and the Duke gives everything. So long as they

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762



WILLIAM PITT, PAYMASTER OF THE FORCES.

*Picture by Hearn.*

agree in this partition they may do what they please." Out of the union of these two strangely-contrasted leaders, in fact, rose the greatest, as it was the last, of the purely Whig administrations. But

SEC. I  
 WILLIAM  
 PITT  
 1742  
 TO  
 1762

its real power lay from beginning to end in Pitt himself. Poor as he was, for his income was little more than two hundred a year, and springing as he did from a family of no political importance, it was by sheer dint of genius that the young cornet of horse, at whose youth and inexperience Walpole had sneered, seized a power which the Whig houses had ever since the Revolution kept jealously in their grasp. His ambition had no petty aim. "I want to call England," he said as he took office, "out of that enervate state in which twenty thousand men from France can shake her." His call was soon answered. He at once breathed his own lofty spirit into the country he served, as he communicated something of his own grandeur to the men who served him. "No man," said a soldier of the time, "ever entered Mr. Pitt's closet who did not feel himself braver when he came out than when he went in." Ill-combined as were his earlier expeditions, many as were his failures, he roused a temper in the nation at large which made ultimate defeat impossible. "England has been a long time in labour," exclaimed Frederick of Prussia as he recognized a greatness like his own, "but she has at last brought forth a man."

Pitt and  
 the Age

It is this personal and solitary grandeur which strikes us most as we look back to William Pitt. The tone of his speech and action stands out in utter contrast with the tone of his time. In the midst of a society critical, polite, indifferent, simple even to the affectation of simplicity, witty and amusing but absolutely prosaic, cool of heart and of head, sceptical of virtue and enthusiasm, sceptical above all of itself, Pitt stood absolutely alone. The depth of his conviction, his passionate love for all that he deemed lofty and true, his fiery energy, his poetic imaginativeness, his theatrical airs and rhetoric, his haughty self-assumption, his pompousness and extravagance, were not more puzzling to his contemporaries than the confidence with which he appealed to the higher sentiments of mankind, the scorn with which he turned from a corruption which had till then been the great engine of politics, the undoubting faith which he felt in himself, in the grandeur of his aims, and in his power to carry them out. "I know that I can save the country," he said to the Duke of Devonshire on his entry into the Ministry, "and I know no other man can." The groundwork of Pitt's character was an intense and passionate pride ; but it was a pride



which kept him from stooping to the level of the men who had so long held England in their hands.



SWORD-BEARER OF LONDON.  
*Map, 1726.*

He was the first statesman since the Restoration who set the example of a purely public spirit. Keen as was his love of power, no man ever refused office so often, or accepted it with so strict a regard to the principles he professed. "I will not go to Court," he replied to an offer which was made him, "if I may not bring the constitution with me." For the corruption about him he had nothing but disdain. He left to Newcastle the buying of seats and the purchase of members. At the outset of his career Pelham appointed him to the most lucrative office in his

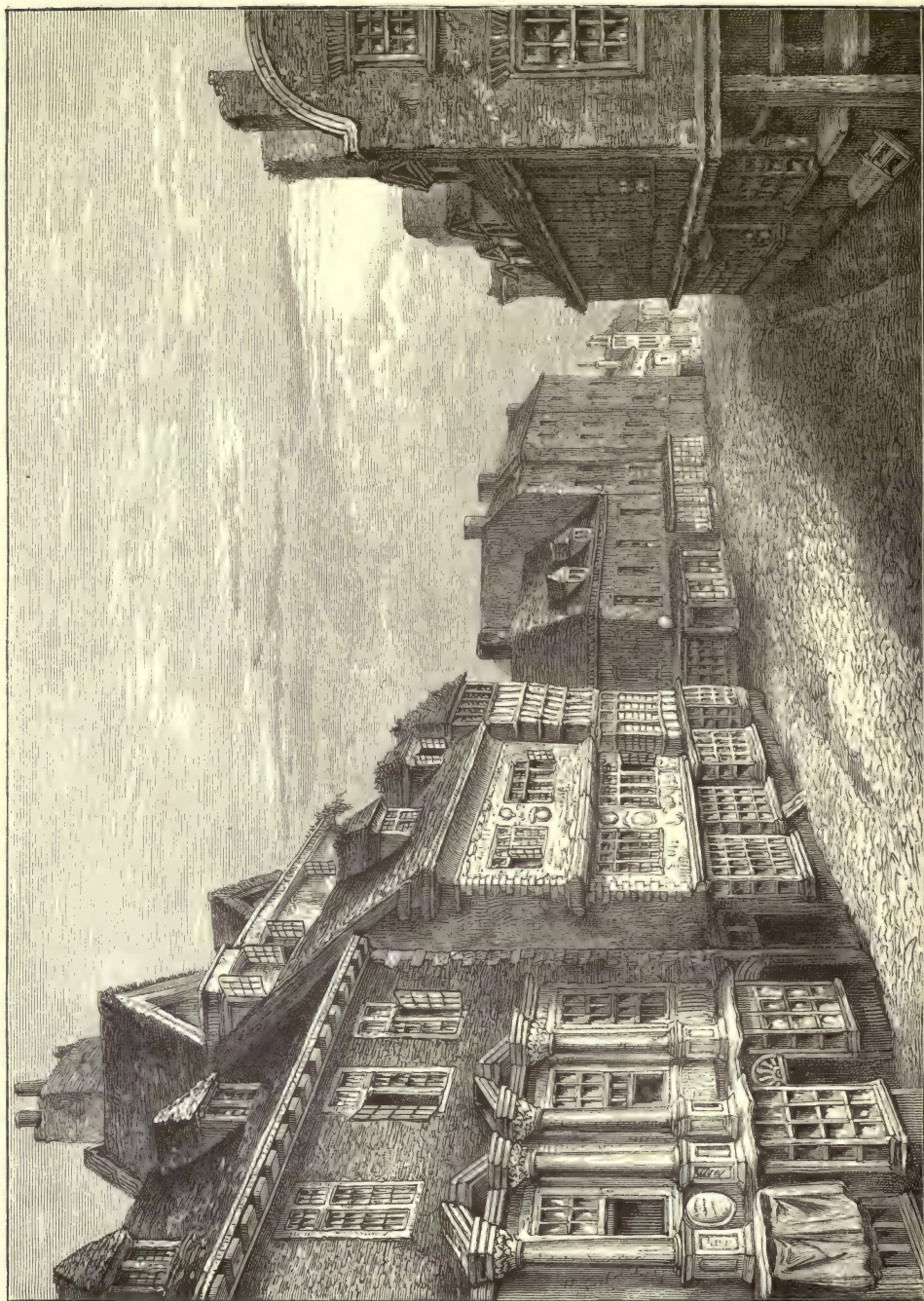
administration, that of Paymaster of the Forces; but its profits were of an illicit kind, and poor as he was Pitt refused to accept one farthing beyond his salary. His pride never appeared in loftier and nobler form than in his attitude towards the people at large. No leader had ever a wider popularity than "the great commoner," as Pitt was styled, but his air was always that of a man who commands popularity, not that of one who seeks it. He never bent to flatter popular prejudice. When mobs were roaring themselves hoarse for "Wilkes and liberty," he denounced Wilkes as a worthless profligate; and when all England went mad in its hatred of the Scots Pitt haughtily declared his esteem for a people whose courage he had been the first to enlist on the side of loyalty. His noble figure,

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
1762

*His public  
spirit*



MACE-BEARER OF LONDON.  
*Map, 1726.*



MARDOL STREET, SHREWSBURY.  
*Owen and Blakeway, "History of Shrewsbury."*



the hawk-like eye which flashed from the small thin face, his majestic voice, the fire and grandeur of his eloquence gave him a sway over the House of Commons far greater than any other minister has possessed. He could silence an opponent with a look of scorn, or hush the whole House with a single word. But he never stooped to the arts by which men form a political party, and at the height of his power his personal following hardly numbered half a dozen members.

His real strength indeed lay not in Parliament but in the people at large. His significant title of "the great commoner" marks a

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

The  
Great  
Com-  
moner



TOWN-HALL, CARLISLE, IN THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.

*Nutter, "Carlisle in the Olden Time."*

political revolution. "It is the people who have sent me here," Pitt boasted with a haughty pride when the nobles of the Cabinet opposed his will. He was the first to see that the long political inactivity of the public mind had ceased, and that the progress of commerce and industry had produced a great middle class, which no longer found its representatives in the legislature. "You have taught me," said George the Second when Pitt sought to save Byng by appealing to the sentiment of Parliament, "to look for the voice



## SEC. I

WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

*His popu-  
larity*

of my people in other places than within the House of Commons." It was this unrepresented class which had forced him into power. During his struggle with Newcastle the greater towns backed him with the gift of their freedom and addresses of confidence. "For weeks," laughs Horace Walpole, "it rained gold boxes." London stood by him through good report and evil report, and the wealthiest of English merchants, Alderman Beckford, was proud to figure as his political lieutenant. The temper of Pitt indeed harmonized admirably with the temper of the commercial England which rallied round him, with its energy, its self-confidence, its pride, its patriotism, its honesty, its moral earnestness. The merchant and the trader were drawn by a natural attraction to the one statesman of their time whose aims were unselfish, whose hands were clean, whose life was pure and full of tender affection for wife and child. But there was a far deeper ground for their enthusiastic reverence and for the reverence which his country has borne Pitt ever since. He loved England with an intense and personal love. He believed in her power, her glory, her public virtue, till England learned to believe in herself. Her triumphs were his triumphs, her defeats his defeats. Her dangers lifted him high above all thought of self or party-spirit. "Be one people," he cried to the factions who rose to bring about his fall: "forget everything but the public! I set you the example!" His glowing patriotism was the real spell by which he held England. But even the faults which chequered his character told for him with the middle classes. The Whig statesmen who preceded him had been men whose pride expressed itself in a marked simplicity and absence of pretence. Pitt was essentially an actor, dramatic in the cabinet, in the House, in his very office. He transacted business with his clerks in full dress. His letters to his family, genuine as his love for them was, are stilted and unnatural in tone. It was easy for the wits of his day to jest at his affectation, his pompous gait, the dramatic appearance which he made on great debates with his limbs swathed in flannel and his crutch by his side. Early in life Walpole sneered at him for bringing into the House of Commons "the gestures and emotions of the stage." But the classes to whom Pitt appealed were classes not easily offended by faults of taste, and saw nothing to laugh at in the statesman who was borne into the lobby amidst

the tortures of the gout, or carried into the House of Lords to breathe his last in a protest against national dishonour.

Above all Pitt wielded the strength of a resistless eloquence. The power of political speech had been revealed in the stormy

SECT.  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762  
Pitt's  
Elo-  
quence



WILLIAM PITT, EARL OF CHATHAM.

*Portrait by Richard Brompton, in possession of Earl Stanhope, at Cheltenham.*

debates of the Long Parliament, but it was cramped in its utterance by the legal and theological pedantry of the time. Pedantry was flung off by the age of the Revolution, but in the eloquence of Somers and his rivals we see ability rather than genius, knowledge, clearness of expression, precision of thought, the lucidity

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

of the pleader or the man of business, rather than the passion of the orator. Of this clearness of statement Pitt had little or none. He was no ready debater like Walpole, no speaker of set speeches like Chesterfield. His set speeches were always his worst, for in these his want of taste, his love of effect, his trite quotations and extravagant metaphors came at once to the front. That with defects like these he stood far above every orator of his time was due above all to his profound conviction, to the earnestness and sincerity with which he spoke. "I must sit still," he whispered once to a friend, "for when once I am up everything that is in my mind comes out." But the reality of his eloquence was transfigured by a large and poetic imagination, and by a glow of passion which not only raised him high above the men of his own day but set him in the front rank among the orators of the world. The cool reasoning, the wit, the common sense of his age made way for a splendid audacity, a sympathy with popular emotion, a sustained grandeur, a lofty vehemence, a command over the whole range of human feeling. He passed without an effort from the most solemn appeal to the gayest raillery, from the keenest sarcasm to the tenderest pathos. Every word was driven home by the grand self-consciousness of the speaker. He spoke always as one having authority. He was in fact the first English orator whose words were a power, a power not over Parliament only but over the nation at large. Parliamentary reporting was as yet unknown, and it was only in detached phrases and half-remembered outbursts that the voice of Pitt reached beyond the walls of St. Stephen's. But it was especially in these sudden outbursts of inspiration, in these brief passionate appeals, that the power of his eloquence lay. The few broken words we have of him stir the same thrill in men of our day which they stirred in the men of his own. But passionate as was Pitt's eloquence, it was the eloquence of a statesman, not of a rhetorician. Time has approved almost all his greater struggles, his defence of the liberty of the subject against arbitrary imprisonment under "general warrants," of the liberty of the press against Lord Mansfield, of the rights of constituencies against the House of Commons, of the constitutional rights of America against England itself. His foreign policy was directed to the preservation of Prussia, and Prussia has vindicated his foresight by the creation of

*His  
states-  
manship*



Germany. We have adopted his plans for the direct government of India by the Crown, which when he proposed them were regarded as insane. Pitt was the first to recognize the liberal character of the Church of England. He was the first to sound the note of Parliamentary reform. One of his earliest measures shows the generosity and originality of his mind. He quieted Scotland by employing its Jacobites in the service of their country, and by raising Highland regiments among its clans. The selection of Wolfe and Amherst as generals showed his contempt for precedent and his inborn knowledge of men.

But it was fortune rather than his genius which showered on Pitt the triumphs which signalized the opening of his ministry. In the East the daring of a merchant's clerk made a company of English traders the sovereigns of Bengal, and opened that wondrous career of conquest which has added the Indian peninsula, from Ceylon to the Himalayas, to the dominion of the British crown. Recalled by broken health to England, Clive returned at the outbreak of the Seven Years' War to win for England a greater prize than that which his victories had won for it in the supremacy of the Carnatic. He had been only a few months at Madras

S. 1

WILLIAM  
PITT

1742

1762

Plassey



SURAJAH DOWLAH.  
*Miniature in India Museum.*

when a crime whose horror still lingers in English memories called him to Bengal. Bengal, the delta of the Ganges, was the richest and most fertile of all the provinces of India. Its rice, its sugar, its silk, and the produce of its looms, were famous in European markets. Its viceroys, like their fellow lieutenants, had become practically independent of the Emperor, and had added to Bengal the provinces of Orissa and Behar. Surajah Dowlah, the master

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

*Black  
Hole of  
Calcutta*

of this vast domain, had long been jealous of the enterprise and wealth of the English traders ; and, roused at this moment by the instigation of the French, he appeared before Fort William, seized its settlers, and thrust a hundred and fifty of them into a small prison called the Black Hole of Calcutta. The heat of an Indian summer did its work of death. The wretched prisoners trampled each other under foot in the madness of thirst, and in the morning only twenty-three remained alive. Clive sailed at the news with a thousand Englishmen and two thousand sepoys to wreak vengeance for the crime. He was no longer the boy-soldier of Arcot ; and the tact and skill with which he met Surajah Dowlah in the negotiations by which the Viceroy strove to avert a conflict were sullied by the Oriental falsehood and treachery to which he stooped.



MEDAL COMMEMORATING BATTLE OF PLASSEY.

But his courage remained unbroken. When the two armies faced each other on the plain of Plassey the odds were so great that on the very eve of the battle a council of war counselled retreat. Clive withdrew to a grove hard by, and after an hour's lonely musing gave the word to fight. Courage, in fact, was all that was needed. The fifty thousand foot and fourteen thousand horse who were seen covering the plain at daybreak on the 23rd of June, 1757, were soon thrown into confusion by the English guns, and broke in headlong rout before the English charge. The death of Surajah Dowlah enabled the Company to place a creature of its own on the throne of Bengal ; but his rule soon became a nominal one. With the victory of Plassey began in fact the Empire of England in the East.

The year of Plassey was the year of a victory hardly less important in the West. There was little indeed in the military expeditions which marked the opening of Pitt's ministry to justify the trust of his country; for money and blood were lavished on buccaneering descents upon the French coasts which did small damage to the enemy. But incidents such as these had little weight in the minister's general policy. His greatness lies in the fact that he recognized the genius of Frederick the Great, and resolved to give him an energetic support. On his entry into office he refused to ratify the Convention of Closter-Seven, which had reduced Frederick to despair by throwing open his realm to a French advance; protected his flank by gathering an English and Hanoverian force on the Elbe, and on the counsel of the Prussian King placed the best of his generals, the Prince of Brunswick, at its head; while subsidy after subsidy were poured into Frederick's exhausted treasury. Pitt's trust was met by the most brilliant display of military genius which the modern world had as yet witnessed. Two months after his repulse at Kolin, Freder-

SEC. I  
—  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762  
—  
Pitt and  
Frederick



MEDALS COMMEMORATING BATTLES OF  
ROSSBACH AND LEUTHEN.

rick flung himself on a French army which had advanced into the heart of Germany, and annihilated it in the victory of Rossbach. Before another month had passed he hurried from the Saale to the Oder, and by a yet more signal victory at Leuthen cleared Silesia of the Austrians. The victory of Rossbach was destined to change the fortunes of the world by bringing about the unity of Germany; its immediate effect was to force the French army on the Elbe to fall back on the Rhine. Here Ferdinand of Brunswick, reinforced with twenty thousand English soldiers, held them at bay during the summer, while Frederick, foiled in an attack on Moravia, drove the Russians back on Poland in the battle of Zorndorf. His defeat however by the Austrian General Daun at Hochkirch proved the first of a series of terrible misfortunes; and the year 1759 marks the lowest point of his fortunes. A fresh advance of the Russian

*Rossbach*  
*Nov. 1757*



SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

army forced the King to attack it at Kunersdorf in August, and Frederick's repulse ended in the utter rout of his army. For the moment all seemed lost, for even Berlin lay open to the conqueror. A few days later the surrender of Dresden gave Saxony to the Austrians; and at the close of the year an attempt upon them at Plauen was foiled with terrible loss. But every disaster was retrieved by the indomitable courage and tenacity of the King, and winter found him as before master of Silesia and of all Saxony save the ground which Daun's camp covered. The year which marked the lowest point of Frederick's fortunes was the year of Pitt's greatest triumphs, the year of Minden and Quiberon and Quebec. France aimed both at a descent upon England and at



MEDAL COMMEMORATING BATTLE OF MINDEN.

*Minden*  
*Aug. 1,*  
*1759*

the conquest of Hanover, and gathered a naval armament at Brest, while fifty thousand men under Contades and Broglie united on the Weser. Ferdinand with less than forty thousand met them on the field of Minden. The French marched along the Weser to the attack, with their flanks protected by that river and a brook which ran into it, and with their cavalry, ten thousand strong, massed in the centre. The six English regiments in Ferdinand's army fronted the French horse, and, mistaking their general's order, marched at once upon them in line, regardless of the batteries on their flank, and rolled back charge after charge with volleys of musketry. In an hour the French centre was utterly broken. "I have seen," said Contades, "what I never thought to be possible—a single line of infantry break through three lines of cavalry, ranked in order of battle, and tumble them to ruin!" Nothing but the refusal of Lord John Sackville to complete the victory by a charge of the

horse which he headed saved the French from utter rout. As it was, their army again fell back broken on Frankfort and the Rhine. The project of an invasion of England met with like success. Eighteen thousand men lay ready to embark on board the French fleet, when Admiral Hawke came in sight of it at the mouth of Quiberon Bay. The sea was rolling high, and the coast where the French ships lay was so dangerous from its shoals and granite reefs that the pilot remonstrated with the English admiral against his project of attack. "You have done your duty in this remonstrance," Hawke coolly replied; "now lay me alongside the French admiral." Two English ships were lost on the shoals, but

SEC. I

WILLIAM  
PITT

1742

TO

1762

*Quiberon**Nov. 20*

"A VIEW OF THE CITY OF QUEBEC IN NEW FRANCE IN AMERICA."

*Drawing (in British Museum) by Margaret Cecil, 1713.*

the French fleet was ruined and the disgrace of Byng's retreat wiped away.

It was not in the Old World only that the year of Minden and Quiberon brought glory to the arms of England. In Europe, Pitt had wisely limited his efforts to the support of Prussia, but across the Atlantic the field was wholly his own, and he had no sooner entered office than the desultory raids, which had hitherto been the only resistance to French aggression, were superseded by a large and comprehensive plan of attack. The sympathies of the colonies were won by an order which gave their provincial officers equal rank with the royal officers in the field. They raised at

The  
Conquest  
of  
Canada

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762

1758

Pitt's call twenty thousand men, and taxed themselves heavily for their support. Three expeditions were simultaneously directed against the French line—one to the Ohio valley, one against Ticonderoga on Lake Champlain, while a third under General Amherst and Admiral Boscawen sailed to the mouth of the St. Lawrence. The last was brilliantly successful. Louisburg, though defended by a garrison of five thousand men, was taken with the fleet in its harbour, and the whole province of Cape Breton reduced. The American militia supported the British troops in a vigorous campaign against the forts; and though Montcalm, with a far inferior force, was able to repulse General Abercromby from Ticonderoga, a force from Philadelphia and Virginia, guided and inspired by the courage of George Washington, made itself master



MEDAL COMMEMORATING CAPTURE OF LOUISBURG AND CAPE BRETON.

1759

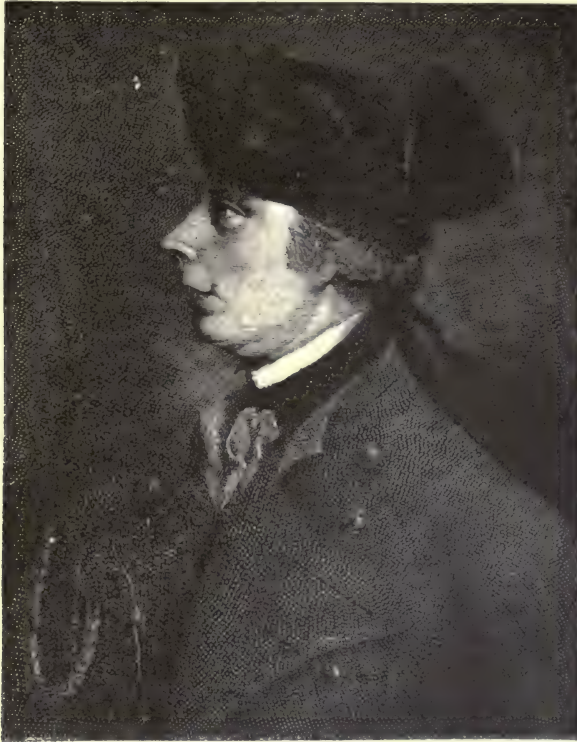
of Duquesne. The name of Pittsburg which was given to their new conquest still commemorates the enthusiasm of the colonists for the great Minister who first opened to them the West. The next year saw the evacuation of Ticonderoga before the advance of Amherst, and the capture of Fort Niagara after the defeat of an Indian force which marched to its relief. The capture of the three forts was the close of the French effort to bar the advance of the colonists to the valley of the Mississippi, and to place in other than English hands the destinies of North America. But Pitt had resolved, not merely to foil the ambition of Montcalm, but to destroy the French rule in America altogether; and while Amherst was breaking through the line of forts, an expedition under General Wolfe entered the St. Lawrence and anchored below Quebec. Wolfe had already fought at Dettingen, Fontenoy, and

Wolfe



Laffeldt, and had played the first part in the capture of Louisburg. Pitt had discerned the genius and heroism which lay hidden beneath the awkward manner and the occasional gasconade of the young soldier of thirty-three whom he chose for the crowning exploit of the war, but for a while his sagacity seemed to have failed. No efforts could draw Montcalm from the long line of

SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PITT  
1742  
TO  
1762  
---



GENERAL WOLFE.

*Picture by Schaak, in National Portrait Gallery.*

inaccessible cliffs which at this point borders the river, and for six weeks Wolfe saw his men wasting away in inactivity while he himself lay prostrate with sickness and despair. At last his resolution was fixed, and in a long line of boats the army dropped down the St. Lawrence to a point at the base of the Heights of Abraham, where a narrow path had been discovered to the summit. Not a voice broke the silence of the night save the voice of Wolfe him-



THE CAPTURE OF QUEBEC.  
*Contemporary print.*

self, as he quietly repeated the stanzas of Gray's "Elegy in a Country Churchyard," remarking as he closed, "I had rather be the author of that poem than take Quebec." But his nature was as brave as it was tender; he was the first to leap on shore and to scale the narrow path where no two men could go abreast. His men followed, pulling themselves to the top by the help of bushes and the crags, and at daybreak on the 12th of September the whole army stood in orderly formation before Quebec. Montcalm hastened to attack, though his force, composed chiefly of raw militia, was far inferior in discipline to the English; his onset however was met by a steady fire, and at the first English advance his men gave way. Wolfe headed a charge which broke the French line, but a ball pierced his breast in the moment of victory. "They run," cried an officer who held the dying man in his arms—"I protest they run." Wolfe rallied to ask who they were that ran, and was told "The French." "Then," he murmured, "I die happy!" The fall of Montcalm in the moment of his defeat completed the victory; and the submission of Canada, on the capture of Montreal by Amherst in 1760, put an end to the dream of a French empire in America.

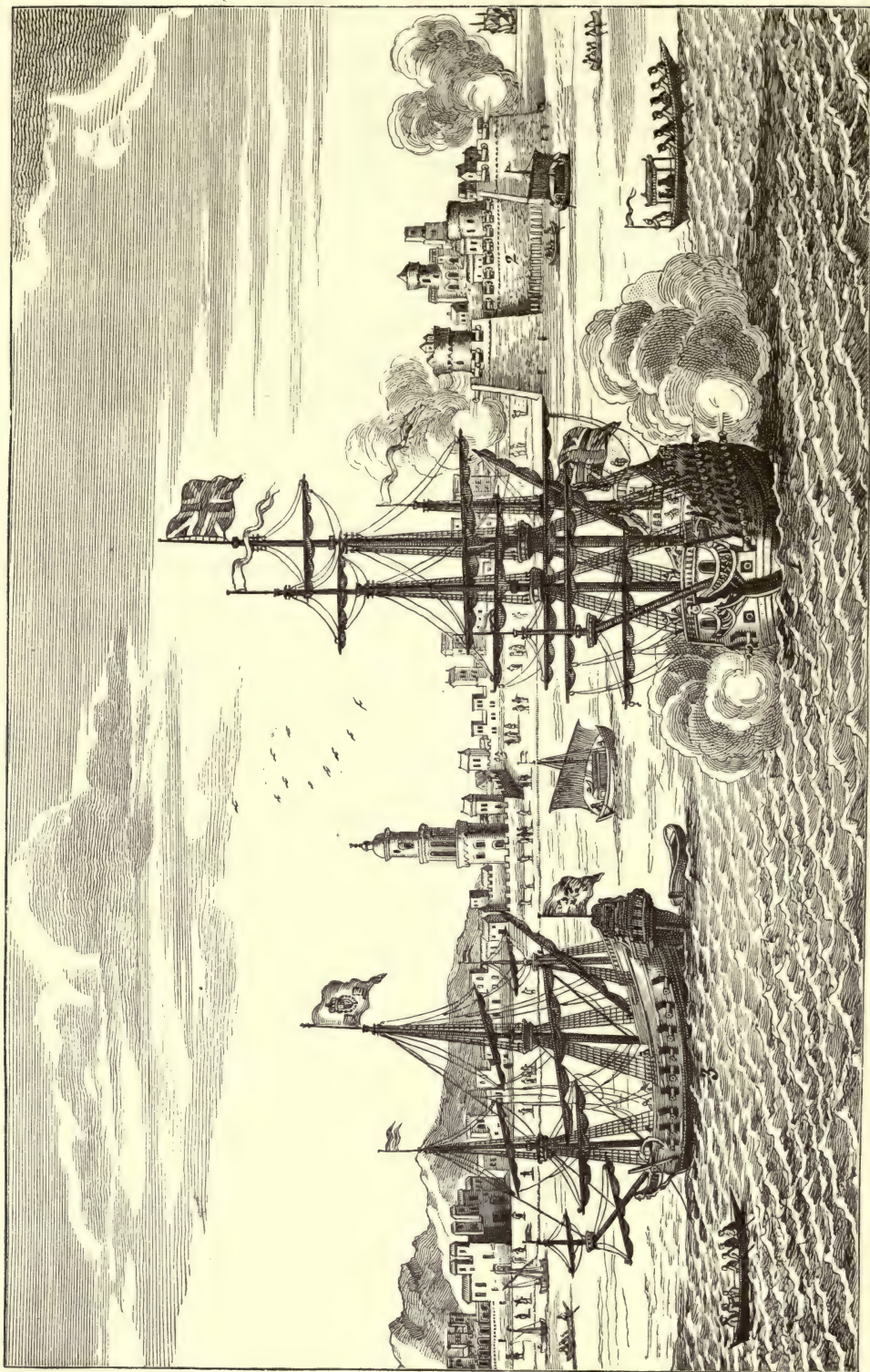
SEC. I  
WILLIAM  
PETER  
1742  
TO  
1762

*Quebec*



MEDAL COMMEMORATING SUCCESSES OF 1759.





FIGHT BETWEEN THE "CENTURION" (ANSON'S SHIP) AND A MANILLA SHIP.

*Harris's Voyages.*

1. The "Centurion."

2. The "Castle."

3. The "Manilla Ship."



NORTH AMERICAN TRADERS AND INDIANS.  
*Gauthier and Faden's Map of Canada, 1777.*

## Section II.—The Independence of America, 1761—1782

[*Authorities.*—The two sides of the American quarrel have been told with the same purpose of fairness and truthfulness, though with a very different bias, by Lord Stanhope ("History of England from the Peace of Utrecht"), and Mr. Bancroft ("History of the United States"). The latter is by far the more detailed and picturesque, the former perhaps the cooler and more impartial of the two narratives. For England see Mr. Massey's "History of England from the Accession of George the Third;" Walpole's "Memoirs of the Early Reign of George the Third;" the Rockingham Memoirs; the Grenville Papers; the Bedford Correspondence; the correspondence of George the Third with Lord North; the Letters of Junius; and Lord Russell's "Life and Correspondence of C. J. Fox." Burke's speeches and pamphlets during this period, above all his "Thoughts on the Causes of the Present Discontents," are indispensable for any real knowledge of it. The Constitutional History of Sir Erskine May all but compensates us, in its fulness and impartiality, for the loss of Mr. Hallam's comments.] [Mr. Lecky's "History of England in the Eighteenth Century" has been published since this book was written.—*Ed.*]

Never had England played so great a part in the history of mankind as in the year 1759. It was a year of triumphs in every quarter of the world. In September came the news of Minden, and of a victory off Lagos. In October came tidings of the capture of Quebec. November brought word of the French

The  
Seven  
Years'  
War





SHAH ALLUM, MOGUL OF HINDOSTAN, REVIEWING THE EAST INDIA COMPANY'S  
TROOPS.

*Picture by Tilly Kettle, painted 1781; in the possession of Mr. Robert Webb.*



defeat at Quiberon. "We are forced to ask every morning what victory there is," laughed Horace Walpole, "for fear of missing one." But it was not so much in the number as in the importance of its triumphs that the Seven Years' War stood and remains still without a rival. It is no exaggeration to say that three of its many victories determined for ages to come the destinies of mankind. With that of Rossbach began the re-creation of Germany, the revival of its political and intellectual life, the long process of its union under the leadership of Prussia and Prussia's kings. With that of Plassey the influence of Europe told for the first time since the days of Alexander on the nations of the East. The world, in Burke's gorgeous phrase, "saw one of the races of the north-west cast into the heart of Asia new manners, new doctrines, new institutions." With the triumph of Wolfe on the heights of Abraham began the history of the United States. By removing an enemy whose dread had knit the colonists to the mother country, and by breaking through the line with which France had barred them from the basin of the Mississippi, Pitt laid the foundation of the great republic of the west. Nor were these triumphs less momentous to Britain. The Seven Years' War is a turning-point in our national history, as it is a turning-point in the history of the world. Till now the relative weight of the European states had been drawn from their possessions within Europe itself. But from the close of the war it mattered little whether England counted for less or more with the nations around her. She was no longer a mere European power, no longer a mere rival of Germany or Russia or France. Mistress of Northern America, the future mistress of India, claiming as her own the empire of the seas, Britain suddenly towered high above the nations whose positions in a single continent doomed them to comparative insignificance in the after history of the world. The war indeed was hardly ended when a consciousness of the destinies that lay before the English people showed itself in the restlessness with which our seamen penetrated into far-off seas. The Atlantic was dwindling into a mere strait within the British Empire; but beyond it to the westward lay a reach of waters where the British flag was almost unknown. In the year which followed the Peace of Paris two English ships were sent on a cruise of discovery to the Straits of

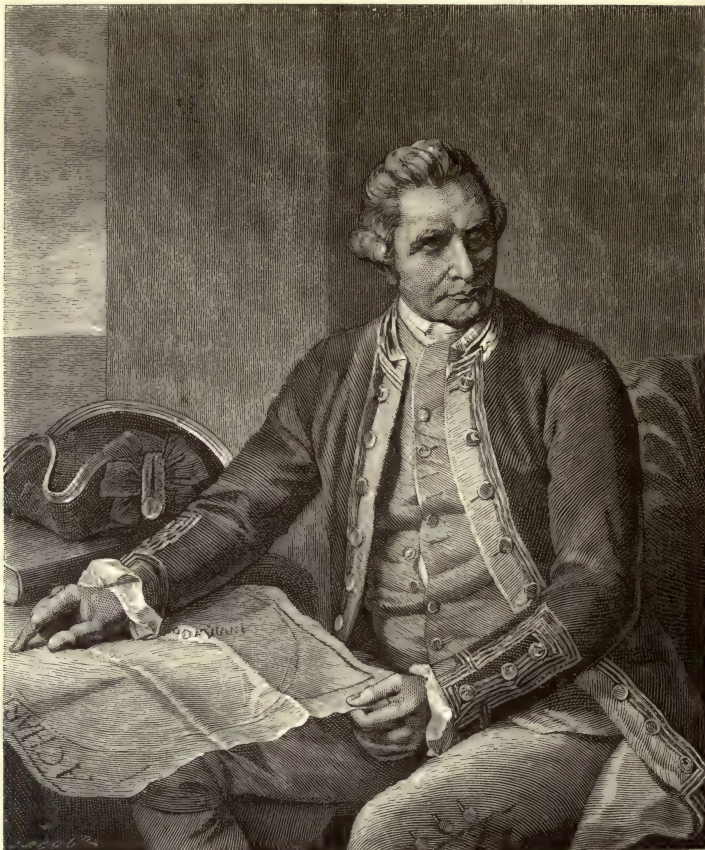
SEC II  
THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1701  
TO  
1782

*Britain  
and its  
Empire*

1764

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
—

Magellan ; three years later Captain Wallis reached the coral reefs of Tahiti ; and in 1768 Captain Cook traversed the Pacific from end to end, and wherever he touched, in New Zealand, in Australia, he claimed the soil for the English Crown, and opened a new world for the expansion of the English race. Statesmen and people



CAPTAIN COOK.

*From an engraving by Sherwin, after a picture by N. Dance.*

alike felt the change in their country's attitude. In the words of Burke, the Parliament of Britain claimed "an imperial character in which as from the throne of heaven she superintends all the several inferior legislatures, and guides and controls them all, without annihilating any." Its people, steeped in the commercial ideas of the time, saw in the growth of their vast possessions, the monopoly







of whose trade was reserved to the mother country, a source of boundless wealth. The trade with America alone was in 1772 nearly equal to what England carried on with the whole world at the beginning of the century. To guard and preserve so vast and lucrative a dominion became from this moment not only the aim of British statesmen but the resolve of the British people.

From the time when the Puritan emigration added the four New England States, Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Connecticut, and Rhode Island to those of Maryland and Virginia the progress of the English colonies in North America had been slow, but it had never ceased. Settlers still came, though in smaller numbers, and two new colonies south of Virginia received from Charles the Second their name of the Carolinas. The war with Holland transferred to British rule a district claimed by the Dutch from the Hudson to the inner Lakes; and this country, which was

SEC. II  
THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
—

The  
American  
Colonies  
1664



W. PENN.

*Portrait in National Museum, Philadelphia.*

granted by Charles to his brother, received from him the name of New York. Portions were soon broken off from its vast territory to form the colonies of New Jersey and Delaware. In 1682 a train of Quakers followed William Penn across the Delaware into the heart of the primæval forest, and became a colony which recalled its founder and the woodlands among which he planted it in its name of Pennsylvania. A long interval elapsed before a new settlement,



SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
—  
*Their  
progress*

which received its title of Georgia from the reigning sovereign, George the Second, was established by General Oglethorpe on the Savannah as a refuge for English debtors and for the persecuted Protestants of Germany. Slow as this progress seemed, the colonies were really growing fast in numbers and in wealth. Their whole population amounted in the middle of the eighteenth century



PINE-TREE SHILLING OF MASSACHUSETTS.

to about 1,200,000 whites and a quarter of a million of negroes ; nearly a fourth of that of the mother country. The wealth of the colonists was growing even faster than their numbers. As yet the southern colonies were the more productive. Virginia boasted of its tobacco plantations, Georgia and the Carolinas of their maize and rice and indigo crops, while New York and Pennsylvania, with the colonies of New England, were restricted to their whale and cod fisheries, their corn harvests and their timber trade. The distinction indeed between the Northern and Southern colonies



NEW AMSTERDAM (AFTERWARDS NEW YORK).

*N. J. Visscher's Map of New England and New Belgium. Mid. Seventeenth Century.*

was more than an industrial one. In the Southern States the prevalence of slavery produced an aristocratic spirit and favoured the creation of large estates ; even the system of entails had been introduced among the wealthy planters of Virginia, where many of the older English families found representatives in houses such as



those of Fairfax and Washington. Throughout New England, on the other hand, the characteristics of the Puritans, their piety, their intolerance, their simplicity of life, their love of equality and tendency to democratic institutions, remained unchanged. In education and political activity New England stood far ahead of its fellow colonies, for the settlement of the Puritans had been followed at once by the establishment of a system of local schools which is still the glory of America. "Every township," it was

SEC. II

THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

TO

1782



"A PROSPECT OF THE COLLEDGES AT CAMBRIDGE IN NEW ENGLAND."

*American print. c. 1739.*

enacted, "after the Lord hath increased them to the number of fifty householders, shall appoint one to teach all children to write and read; and when any town shall increase to the number of a hundred families, they shall set up a grammar school."

Great however as these differences were, and great as was to be their influence on American history, they were little felt as yet. In the main features of their outer organization the whole of the colonies stood fairly at one. In religious and in civil matters

England  
and the  
Colonies

## SEC. II

THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

TO

1782

*English  
control*

alike all of them contrasted sharply with the England at home. Religious tolerance had been brought about by a medley of religious faiths such as the world had never seen before. New England was still a Puritan stronghold. In all the Southern colonies the Episcopal Church was established by law, and the bulk of the settlers clung to it; but Roman Catholics formed a large part of the population of Maryland. Pennsylvania was a State of Quakers. Presbyterians and Baptists had fled from tests and persecutions to colonise New Jersey. Lutherans and Moravians from Germany abounded among the settlers of Carolina and Georgia. In such a chaos of creeds religious persecution became impossible. There was the same outer diversity and the same real unity in the political tendency and organization of the States. Whether the spirit of the colony was democratic, moderate, or oligarchical, its form of government was pretty much the same. The original rights of the proprietor, the projector and grantee of the earliest settlement, had in all cases, save in those of Pennsylvania and Maryland, either ceased to exist or fallen into desuetude. The government of each colony lay in a House of Assembly elected by the people at large, with a Council sometimes elected, sometimes nominated by the Governor, and a Governor either elected or appointed by the Crown. With the appointment of these Governors all administrative interference on the part of the Government at home practically ended. The colonies were left by a happy neglect to themselves. It was wittily said at a later day that "Mr. Grenville lost America because he read the American despatches, which none of his predecessors ever did." There was little room indeed for any interference within the limits of the colonies. Their privileges were secured by royal charters. Their Assemblies alone exercised the right of internal taxation, and they exercised it sparingly. Walpole, like Pitt afterwards, set roughly aside the project for an American excise. "I have Old England set against me," he said, "by this measure, and do you think I will have New England too?" Even in matters of trade the supremacy of the mother country was far from being a galling one. There were some small import duties, but they were evaded by a well-understood system of smuggling. The restriction of trade with the colonies to Great Britain was more than compen-

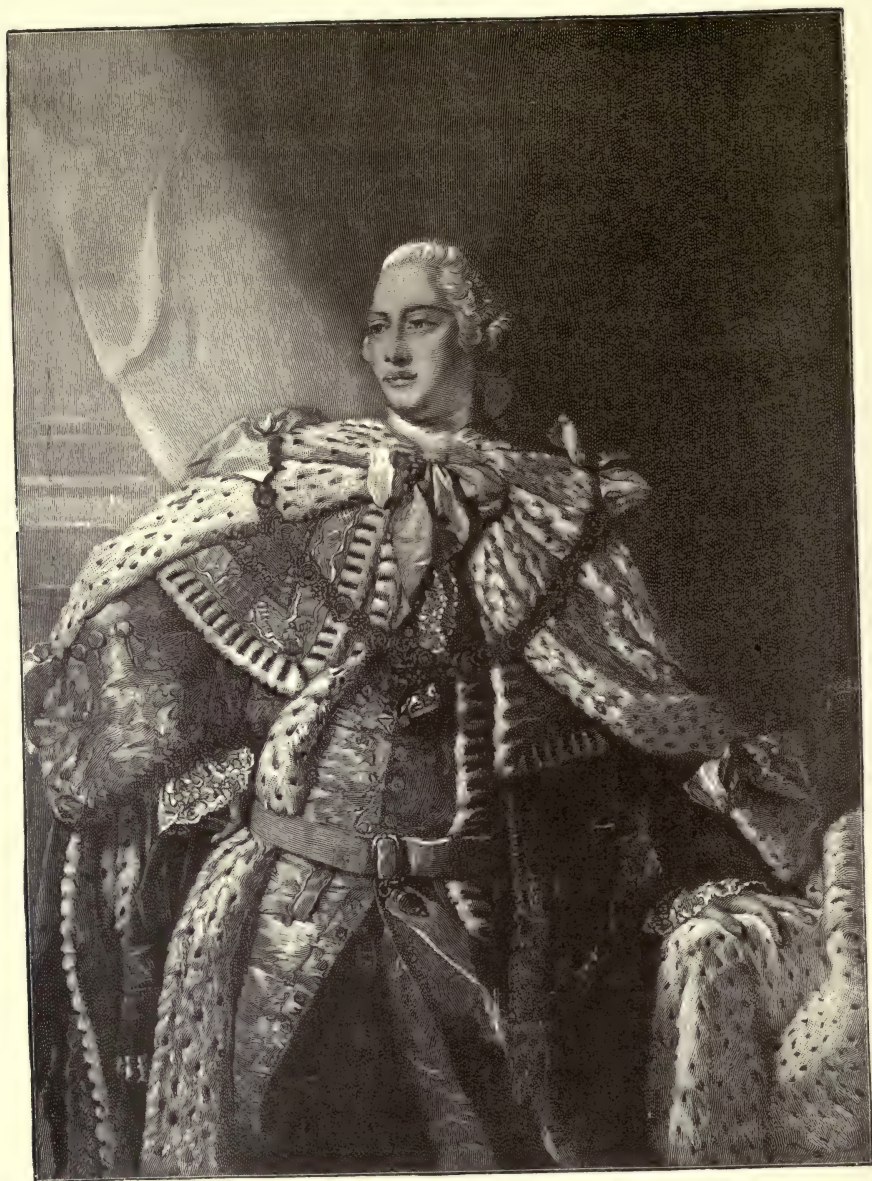
sated by the commercial privileges which the Americans enjoyed as British subjects. As yet, therefore, there was nothing to break the good will which the colonists felt towards the mother country, while the danger of French aggression drew them closely to it. But strong as the attachment of the Americans to Britain seemed at the close of the war, keen lookers-on saw in the very completeness of Pitt's triumph a danger to their future union. The presence of the French in Canada, their designs in the west, had thrown America for protection on the mother-country. But with the conquest of Canada all need of this protection was removed. The attitude of England towards its distant dependency became one of mere possession: and differences of temper, which had till now been thrown into the background by the higher need for union, started into a new prominence. If questions of trade and taxation awoke murmurings and disputes, behind these grievances lay an uneasy dread at the democratic form which the government and society of the colonies had taken, and at the "levelling principles" which prevailed.

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
----

George  
the  
Third

To check this republican spirit, to crush all dreams of severance, and to strengthen the unity of the British Empire was one of the chief aims of the young sovereign who mounted the throne on the death of his grandfather in 1760. For the first and last time since the accession of the House of Hanover England saw a King who was resolved to play a part in English politics; and the part which George the Third succeeded in playing was undoubtedly a memorable one. In ten years he reduced government to a shadow, and turned the loyalty of his subjects at home into disaffection. In twenty he had forced the American colonies into revolt and independence, and brought England to what then seemed the brink of ruin. Work such as this has sometimes been done by very great men, and often by very wicked and profligate men; but George was neither profligate nor great. He had a smaller mind than any English king before him save James the Second. He was wretchedly educated, and his natural powers were of the meanest sort. Nor had he the capacity for using greater minds than his own by which some sovereigns have concealed their natural littleness. On the contrary, his only feeling towards great men was one of jealousy and hate. He



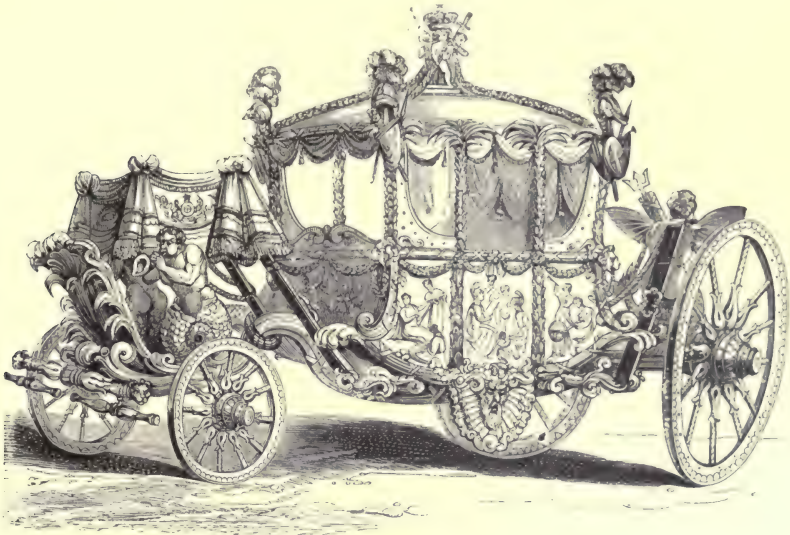


GEORGE III.

*Picture by Allan Ramsay (1767), in the National Portrait Gallery.*

longed for the time when "decrepitude or death" might put an end to Pitt; and even when death had freed him from "this trumpet of sedition," he denounced the proposal for a public monument to the great statesman as "an offensive measure to me personally." But dull and petty as his temper was, he was clear as to his purpose and obstinate in the pursuit of it. And his purpose was to rule. "George," his mother, the Princess of Wales, had continually repeated to him in youth, "George, be king." He called himself always "a Whig of the Revolution,"

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782



STATE COACH OF GEORGE III.  
*South Kensington Museum.*

and he had no wish to undo the work which he believed the Revolution to have done. But he looked on the subjection of his two predecessors to the will of their ministers as no real part of the work of the Revolution, but as a usurpation of that authority which the Revolution had left to the Crown. And to this usurpation he was determined not to submit. His resolve was to govern, not to govern against law, but simply to govern, to be freed from the dictation of parties and ministers, and to be in effect the first Minister of the State. How utterly incompatible such a dream was with the Parliamentary constitution of the country as it had

*Return  
of the  
Tories*



SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761  
TO  
1782

*The  
King's  
Friends*

received its final form from Sunderland it is easy to see ; but George was resolved to carry out his dream. And in carrying it out he was aided by the circumstances of the time. The spell of Jacobitism was broken by the defeat of Charles Edward, and the later degradation of his life wore finally away the thin coating of disloyalty which clung to the clergy and the squires. They were ready again to take part in politics, and in the accession of a king who, unlike his two predecessors, was no stranger but an Englishman, who had been born in England and spoke English, they found the opportunity they desired. From the opening of the reign Tories gradually appeared again at court. It was only slowly indeed that the party as a whole swung round to a steady support of the Government ; but their action told at once on the complexion of English politics. Their withdrawal from public affairs had left them untouched by the progress of political ideas since the Revolution of 1688, and when they returned to political life it was to invest the new sovereign with all the reverence which they had bestowed on the Stuarts. A "King's party" was thus ready made to his hand ; but George was able to strengthen it by a vigorous exertion of the power and influence which was still left to the Crown. All promotion in the Church, all advancement in the army, a great number of places in the civil administration and about the court, were still at the King's disposal. If this vast mass of patronage had been practically usurped by the ministers of his predecessors, it was resumed and firmly held by George the Third ; and the character of the House of Commons made patronage, as we have seen, a powerful engine in its management. George had one of Walpole's weapons in his hands, and he used it with unscrupulous energy to break up the party which Walpole had held so long together. He saw that the Whigs were divided among themselves by the factious spirit which springs from a long hold of office, and that they were weakened by the rising contempt with which the country at large regarded the selfishness and corruption of its representatives. More than thirty years before, Gay had set the leading statesmen of the day on the public stage under the guise of highwaymen and pickpockets. "It is difficult to determine," said the witty playwright, "whether the fine gentlemen imitate the gentlemen of the road, or the gentlemen of the



road the fine gentlemen." And now that the "fine gentlemen" were represented by hoary jobbers such as Newcastle, the public contempt was fiercer than ever, and men turned sickened from the intrigues and corruption of party to a young sovereign who aired himself in a character which Bolingbroke had invented, as a Patriot King.

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782

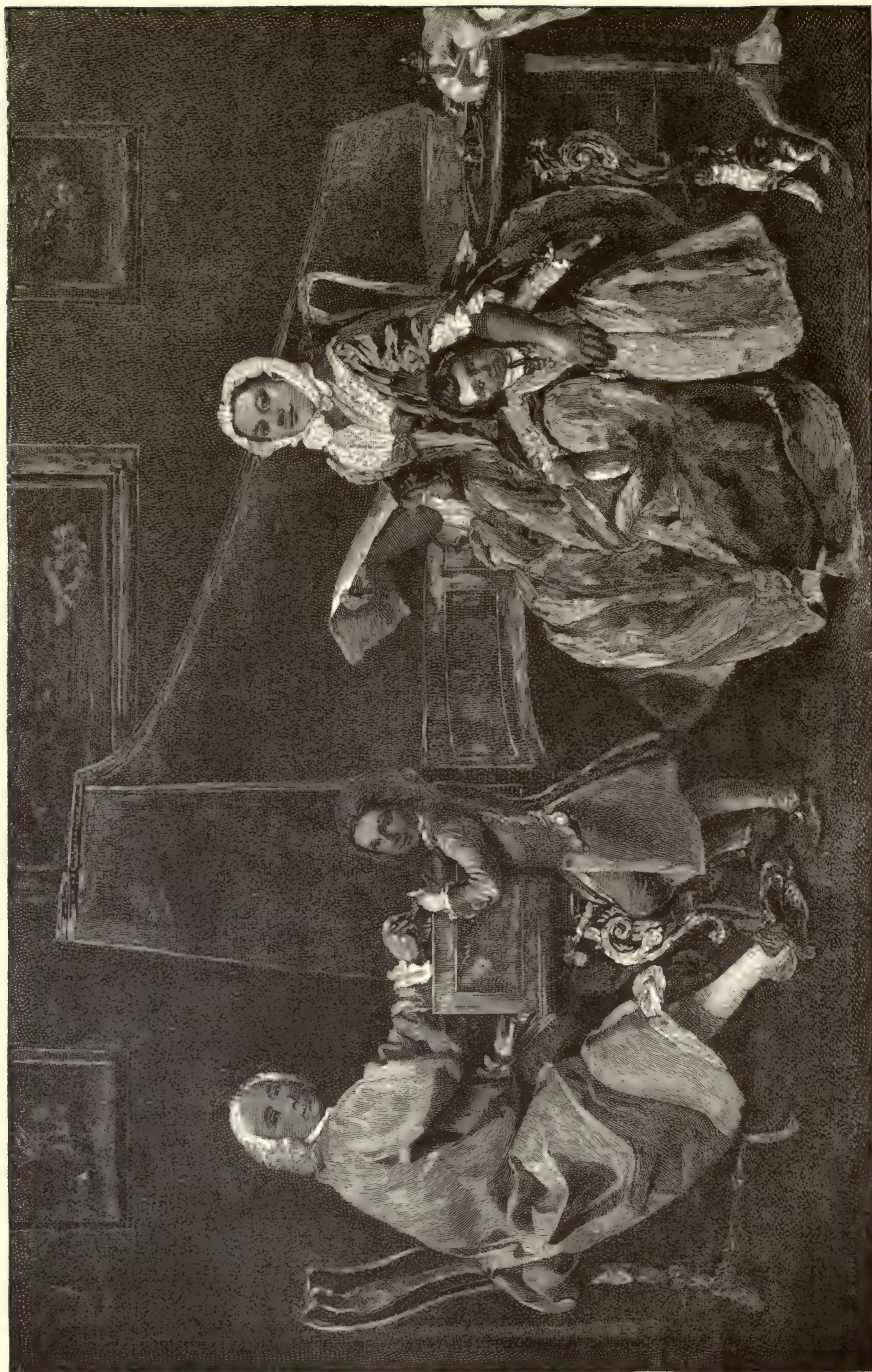
Pitt  
resigns

Had Pitt and Newcastle held together, supported as the one was by the commercial classes, the other by the Whig families and the whole machinery of Parliamentary management, George must have struggled in vain. But the ministry was already disunited. The Whigs, attached to peace by the traditions of Walpole, dismayed at the enormous expenditure, and haughty with the pride of a ruling oligarchy, were in silent revolt against the war and the supremacy of the Great Commoner. It was against their will that he rejected proposals of peace from France which would have se-



Print in the Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris.

cured to England all her conquests on the terms of a desertion of Prussia, and that his steady support enabled Frederick still to hold out against the terrible exhaustion of an unequal struggle. The campaign of 1760 indeed was one of the grandest efforts of Frederick's genius. Foiled in an attempt on Dresden, he again saved Silesia by a victory at Liegnitz, and hurled back an advance of Daun by a victory at Torgau; while Ferdinand of Brunswick held his ground as of old along the Weser. But even victories drained Frederick's strength. Men and money alike failed him.



THE TSCHUDI FAMILY: TSCHUDI TUNING A HARPSICHORD PRESENTED BY HIM TO FREDERICK THE GREAT, 1745.  
*Picture in the possession of Mr. J. H. Tschudi Broadwood.*



It was impossible for him to strike another great blow, and the ring of enemies again closed slowly round him. His one remaining hope lay in the firm support of Pitt, and triumphant as his policy had been, Pitt was tottering to his fall. The envy and resentment of his colleagues at his undisguised supremacy found a supporter in the young King. The Earl of Bute, a mere Court favourite, with the temper and abilities of a gentleman usher, was forced into the Cabinet. As he was known to be his master's mouthpiece, a peace-party was at once formed ; but Pitt showed no signs of giving way. In 1761 he proposed a vast extension of the war. He had learnt the signature of a treaty which brought into force the Family Compact between the Courts of Paris and Madrid, and of a special convention which bound the last to declare war on England at the close of the year. Pitt proposed to anticipate the blow by an instant seizure of the treasure fleet which was on its way from the Indies to Cadiz, by occupying the Isthmus of Panama, and by an attack on the Spanish dominions in the New World. But his colleagues shrank from plans so vast and daring ; and Newcastle was backed in his resistance by the bulk of the Whigs. The King openly supported them. It was in vain that Pitt enforced his threat of resignation by declaring himself responsible to "the people" ; and the resignation of his post in October changed the face of European affairs.

"Pitt disgraced !" wrote a French philosopher, "it is worth two victories to us !" Frederick on the other hand was almost driven to despair. But George saw in the removal of his powerful minister an opening for the realization of his long-cherished plans. Pitt's appeal had been heard by the people at large. When he went to Guildhall the Londoners hung on his carriage wheels, hugged his footmen, and even kissed his horses. Their break with Pitt was in fact the death-blow of the Whigs. Newcastle found he had freed himself from the great statesman only to be driven from office by a series of studied mortifications from his young master ; and the more powerful of his Whig colleagues followed him into retirement. George saw himself triumphant over the two great forces which had hampered the free action of the Crown, "the power which arose," in Burke's words, "from popularity, and the power which arose from political connexion;" and the rise of Lord Bute

SEC. II  
THE DEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782

Close  
of the  
Seven  
Years' War



## SEC. II

THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

TO

1782

*Bute's  
Ministry*

to the post of First Minister marked the triumph of the King. He took office simply as an agent of the King's will ; and the King's will was to end the war. In the spring of 1762 Frederick, who still held his ground stubbornly against fate, was brought to the brink of ruin by a withdrawal of the English subsidies ; it was in fact only his dogged resolution and a sudden change in the policy of Russia, which followed on the death of his enemy the Czarina Elizabeth, that enabled him at last to retire from the struggle in the Treaty of Hubertsberg without the loss of an inch of territory. George and Lord Bute had already purchased peace at a very different price. With a shameless indifference to the national honour they not only deserted Frederick, but they offered to negotiate a peace for him on the basis of a cession of Silesia to Maria Theresa and East Prussia to the Czarina. The issue of the strife with Spain saved England from humiliation such as this. Pitt's policy of instant attack had been justified by a Spanish declaration of war three weeks after his fall ; and the year 1762 saw triumphs which vindicated his confidence in the issue of the new struggle. Martinico, the strongest and wealthiest of the French West Indian possessions, was conquered at the opening of the year, and its conquest was followed by those of Grenada, St. Lucia, and St. Vincent. In the summer the reduction of Havana brought with it the gain of the rich Spanish colony of Cuba. The Philippines, the wealthiest of the Spanish colonies in the Pacific, yielded to a British fleet. It was these losses that brought about the Peace of Paris. So eager was Bute to end the war that he contented himself in Europe with the recovery of Minorca, while he restored Martinico to France, and Cuba and the Philippines to Spain. The real gains of Britain were in India and America. In the first the French abandoned all right to any military settlement. From the second they wholly withdrew. To England they gave up Canada, Nova Scotia, and Louisiana as far as the Mississippi, while they resigned the rest of that province to Spain, in compensation for its surrender of Florida to the British Crown.

*Peace of  
Paris  
Feb. 1763**The  
House of  
Commons*

The anxiety which the young King showed for peace abroad sprang mainly from his belief that peace was needful for success in the struggle for power at home. So long as the war lasted Pitt's return to office and the union of the Whigs under his guidance was

an hourly danger. But with peace the King's hands were free. He could count on the dissensions of the Whigs, on the new-born loyalty of the Tories, on the influence of the Crown patronage which he had taken into his own hands. But what he counted on most of all was the character of the House of Commons. At a time when it had become all-powerful in the State, the House of Commons had ceased in any real and effective sense to be a representative body at all. That changes in the distribution of seats

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782



THE MANSION HOUSE, LONDON.

*Picture by S. Scott, c. 1750. Guildhall Art Gallery.*

were called for by the natural shiftings of population and wealth since the days of Edward the First had been recognized as early as the Civil Wars ; but the reforms of the Long Parliament were cancelled at the Restoration. From the time of Charles the Second to that of George the Third not a single effort had been made to meet the growing abuses of our parliamentary system. Great towns like Manchester or Birmingham remained without a member, while members still sat for boroughs which, like Old Sarum, had actually vanished from the face of the earth. The

SEC. II  
 THE INDE-  
 PENDENCE  
 OF AMERICA  
 1761  
 TO  
 1782  
 —

effort of the Tudor sovereigns to establish a Court party in the House by a profuse creation of boroughs, most of which were mere villages then in the hands of the Crown, had ended in the appropriation of these seats by the neighbouring landowners, who bought and sold them as they bought and sold their own estates. Even in towns which had a real claim to representation, the narrowing of municipal privileges ever since the fourteenth century to a small part of the inhabitants, and in many cases the restriction of electoral rights to the members of the governing corporation, rendered their representation a mere name. The choice of such places hung simply on the purse or influence of politicians. Some



LONDON BRIDGE AND DYER'S WHARF.  
*Picture by S. Scott, c. 1750. Guildhall Art Gallery.*

were "the King's boroughs," others obediently returned nominees of the Ministry of the day, others were "close boroughs" in the hands of jobbers like the Duke of Newcastle, who at one time returned a third of all the borough members in the House. The counties and the great commercial towns could alone be said to exercise any real right of suffrage, though the enormous expense of contesting such constituencies practically left their representation in the hands of the great local families. But even in the counties the suffrage was ridiculously limited and unequal. Out of a population of eight millions, only a hundred and sixty thousand were electors at all. How far such a House was from really repre-



senting English opinion we see from the fact that in the height of his popularity Pitt could hardly find a seat in it. Purchase was becoming more and more the means of entering Parliament. Seats were bought and sold in the open market at a price which rose to four thousand pounds, and we can hardly wonder that a reformer could allege without a chance of denial, "This House is not a representative of the people of Great Britain. It is the representative of nominal boroughs, of ruined and exterminated towns, of noble families, of wealthy individuals, of foreign potentates." The meanest motives naturally told on a body returned by such con-

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENT  
OF AMERICA  
1701  
TO  
1782

*George  
and the  
Parlia-  
ment*



THE FLEET RIVER.

*Picture by S. Scott, c. 1750. Guildhall Art Gallery.*

stituencies, cut off from the influence of public opinion by the secrecy of Parliamentary proceedings, and yet invested with almost boundless authority. Walpole and Newcastle had made bribery and borough-jobbing the base of their power. George the Third seized it in his turn as a base of the power he proposed to give to the Crown. The royal revenue was employed to buy seats and to buy votes. Day by day George himself scrutinized the voting-list of the two Houses, and distributed rewards and punishments as members voted according to his will or no. Promotion in the civil service, preferment in the Church, rank in the army, was reserved for "the King's friends." Pensions and court places were

SEC. II  
THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761  
TO  
1782

Fall of  
Bute

used to influence debates. Bribery was employed on a scale never known before. Under Bute's ministry an office was opened at the Treasury for the purchase of members, and twenty-five thousand pounds are said to have been spent in a single day.

The result of these measures was soon seen in the tone of the Parliament. Till now it had bowed beneath the greatness of Pitt ; but in the teeth of his denunciation the provisions of the Peace of Paris were approved by a majority of five to one. "Now indeed," cried the Princess Dowager, "my son is king." But the victory was hardly won when King and minister found themselves battling with a storm of popular ill-will such as never since the overthrow of the Stuarts assailed the throne. Violent and reckless as it was, the storm only marked a fresh advance in the re-awakening of public opinion. The Parliament indeed had become supreme, and in theory the Parliament was a representative of the whole English people. But in actual fact the bulk of the English people found itself powerless to control the course of English government. For the first and last time in our history Parliament was unpopular and its opponents sure of popularity. The House of Commons was more corrupt than ever, and it was the slave of the King. The King still called himself a Whig, yet he was reviving a system of absolutism which Whiggism had long made impossible. His minister was a mere favourite, and in Englishmen's eyes a foreigner. The masses saw this, but they saw no way of mending it. They had no means of influencing the Government they hated save by sheer violence. They came therefore to the front with their old national and religious bigotry, their long-nursed dislike of the Hanoverian Court, their long-nursed habits of violence and faction, their long-nursed hatred of Parliament, but with no means of expressing them save riot and uproar. Bute found himself the object of a sudden and universal hatred ; and in 1763 he withdrew from office as a means of allaying the storm of popular indignation. But the King was made of more stubborn stuff than his minister. If he suffered his favourite to resign he still regarded him as the real head of administration ; for the ministry which Bute left behind him consisted simply of the more courtly of his colleagues. George Grenville was its nominal chief, but its measures were still secretly dictated by the favourite. Charles

George  
Grenville

Townshend and the Duke of Bedford, the two ablest of the Whigs who had remained with Bute after Newcastle's dismissal, refused to join it ; and its one man of ability was Lord Shelburne, a young Irishman. It was in fact only the disunion of its opponents which allowed it to hold its ground. Townshend and Bedford remained apart from the main body of the Whigs, and both sections held aloof from Pitt. George had counted on the divisions of the opposition in forming such a ministry ; and he counted on the weakness of the ministry to make it the creature of his will. But Grenville had no mind to be a puppet either of the King or of Bute ; and the conflicts between the King and his minister soon became so bitter that George appealed in despair to Pitt to form a ministry. Never had Pitt shown a nobler patriotism or a grander self-command than in the reception he gave to this appeal. He set aside all resentment at his own expulsion from office by Newcastle and the Whigs, and made the return to office of the whole party, with the exception of Bedford, a condition of his own. George however refused to comply with terms which would have defeated his designs. The result left Grenville as powerful as he had been weak. Bute ceased to exercise any political influence. On the other hand, Bedford joined Grenville with his whole party, and the ministry thus became strong and compact.

Grenville's one aim was to enforce the supremacy of Parliament over subject as over King. He therefore struck fiercely at the new force of opinion which had just shown its power in the fall of Bute. The opinion of the country no sooner found itself unrepresented in Parliament than it sought an outlet in the Press. In spite of the removal of the censorship after the Revolution the Press had been slow to attain any political influence. Under the first two Georges its progress had been hindered by the absence of great topics for discussion, the worthlessness of the writers, and above all the lethargy of the time. It was in fact not till the accession of George the Third that the impulse which Pitt had given to the national spirit, and the rise of a keener interest in politics, raised the Press into a political power. The nation found in it a court of appeal from the Houses of Parliament. The journals became organs for that outburst of popular hatred which drove Lord Bute

SEC. II

THE INDIAN  
PRESENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

1761

1782

Aug. 1763

Quarrel  
with the  
Press



SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
John  
Wilkes

from office ; and in the *North Briton* John Wilkes led the way by denouncing the Cabinet and the Peace with peculiar bitterness, and venturing to attack the hated minister by name. Wilkes was a worthless profligate, but he had a remarkable faculty of enlisting popular sympathy on his side, and by a singular irony of fortune he became the chief instrument in bringing about three of the greatest advances which our Constitution has ever made. He woke the nation to a conviction of the need for Parliamentary reform by his defence of the rights of constituencies against the despotism of the House of Commons. He took the lead in the struggle which put an end to the secrecy of Parliamentary proceedings. He was the first to establish the right of the Press to discuss public affairs. In his attack on the ministry of Lord Bute, however, he was simply an organ of the general discontent. It was indeed his attack which more than all else determined Bute to withdraw from office. But Grenville was of stouter stuff than the court favourite, and his administration was hardly reformed when he struck at the growing opposition to Parliament by a blow at its leader. In "Number 45" of the *North Briton* Wilkes had censured the speech from the throne at the opening of Parliament, and a "general warrant" by the Secretary of State was issued against the "authors, printers, and publishers" of this seditious libel." Under this warrant forty-nine persons were seized for a time ; and in spite of his privilege as a member of Parliament Wilkes himself was sent to the Tower. The arrest however was so utterly illegal that he was at once released by the Court of Common Pleas ; but he was immediately prosecuted for libel. While the paper which formed the subject for prosecution was still before the courts of justice it was condemned by the House of Commons as a " false, scandalous, and seditious libel." The House of Lords at the same time voted a pamphlet found among Wilkes's papers to be blasphemous, and advised a prosecution. Wilkes fled to France, and was in 1764 expelled from the House of Commons. But the assumption of an arbitrary judicial power by both Houses, and the system of terror which Grenville put in force against the Press by issuing two hundred injunctions against different journals, roused a storm of indignation throughout the country. Every street resounded with cries of " Wilkes and Liberty." It was soon

Wilkes  
expelled

clear that opinion had been embittered rather than silenced by the blow at Wilkes; and six years later, the failure of the prosecution directed against an anonymous journalist named "Junius" for his Letter to the King established the right of the Press to criticize the conduct not of ministers or Parliament only, but of the sovereign himself.

The same narrowness of view, the same honesty of purpose, the same obstinacy of temper, were shown by Grenville in a yet more

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782

The  
Stamp  
Act



"THE CITY CHANTERS"; A SCENE IN THE "WILKES AND LIBERTY" RIOTS.  
*From engraving by S. Okey, 1775, of a picture by John Collett.*

important struggle, a struggle with the American Colonies. Pitt had waged war with characteristic profusion, and he had defrayed the cost of the war by enormous loans. At the time of the Peace of Paris the public debt stood at a hundred and forty millions. The first need therefore which met Bute after the conclusion of the Peace was that of making provision for the new burthens which the nation had incurred, and as these had been partly incurred in the defence of the American Colonies it was the general opinion of Englishmen that the Colonies should bear a share of them. In this

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761  
TO  
1782

*Bute and  
America*

*Grenville's  
policy*

opinion Bute and the King concurred. But their plans went further than mere taxation. The new minister declared himself resolved on a rigorous execution of the Navigation laws, laws by which a monopoly of American trade was secured to the mother-country, on the raising of a revenue within the Colonies for the discharge of the debt, and above all on impressing upon the colonists a sense of their dependence upon Britain. The direct trade between America and the French or Spanish West Indian islands had hitherto been fettered by prohibitory duties, but these had been easily evaded by a general system of smuggling. The duties were now reduced, but the reduced duties were rigorously exacted, and a considerable naval force was despatched to the American coast with a view of suppressing the clandestine trade with the foreigner. The revenue which was expected from this measure was to be supplemented by an internal Stamp Tax, a tax on all legal documents issued within the Colonies. The plans of Bute had fallen to the ground on his retirement from office. But Grenville had fully concurred in the financial part at least of Bute's designs; and, now that he found himself at the head of a strong administration, he proceeded to carry out the plans which had been devised for the purpose of raising both an external and an internal revenue from America. One of his first steps was to suppress, by a rigid enforcement of the Navigation laws, the contraband trade which had grown up between American ports and the adjacent Spanish islands. Harsh and unwise as these measures seemed, the colonists owned their legality; and their resentment only showed itself in a pledge to use no British manufactures till the restrictions were relaxed. But the next scheme of the Minister—his proposal to introduce internal taxation within the bounds of the Colonies themselves by reviving the project of an excise or stamp duty, which Walpole's good sense had rejected—was of another order from his schemes for suppressing the contraband traffic. Unlike the system of the Navigation Acts, it was a gigantic change in the whole actual relations of England and its Colonies. They met it therefore in another spirit. Taxation and representation, they asserted, went hand in hand. America had no representatives in the British Parliament. The representatives of the colonists met in their own colonial assemblies, and all save the Pennsylvanians protested strongly against the



interference of Parliament with their right of self-taxation. Massachusetts marked accurately the position she took. "Prohibitions of trade are neither equitable nor just; but the power of taxing is the grand barrier of British liberty. If that is once broken down, all is lost." The distinction was accepted by the assembly of every colony; and it was with their protest that they despatched Benjamin Franklin, who had risen from his position of

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
*Franklin's  
mission*  
1765



BENJAMIN FRANKLIN.

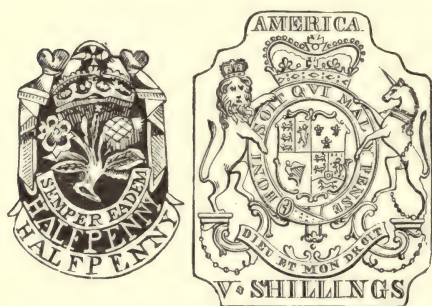
*Medallion by Nini, in the National Portrait Gallery.*

a working printer in Philadelphia to high repute among scientific discoverers, as their agent to England. In England however, Franklin found few who recognized the distinction which the colonists had drawn. Grenville had no mind to change his plans without an assurance, which Franklin could not give, of a union of the Colonies to tax themselves; and the Stamp Act was passed through both Houses with less opposition than a turnpike bill.

The Stamp Act was hardly passed when an insult offered to the

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
—  
The  
Rock-  
ingham  
Ministry

Princess Dowager, by the exclusion of her name from a Regency Act, brought to a head the quarrel which had long been growing between the ministry and the King. George again offered power to William Pitt. But Pitt stood absolutely alone. The one friend who remained to him, his brother-in-law, Lord Temple, refused to aid in an attempt to construct a Cabinet; and he felt himself too weak, when thus deserted, to hold his ground in any ministerial combination with the Whigs. The King turned for help to the main body of the Whigs, now headed by the Marquis of Rockingham. The weakness of the ministry which Rockingham formed in July, 1765, was seen in its slowness to deal with American affairs. Franklin had seen no other course for the Colonies, when



From Harper's Magazine.—Copyright, 1876, by Harper & Brothers.

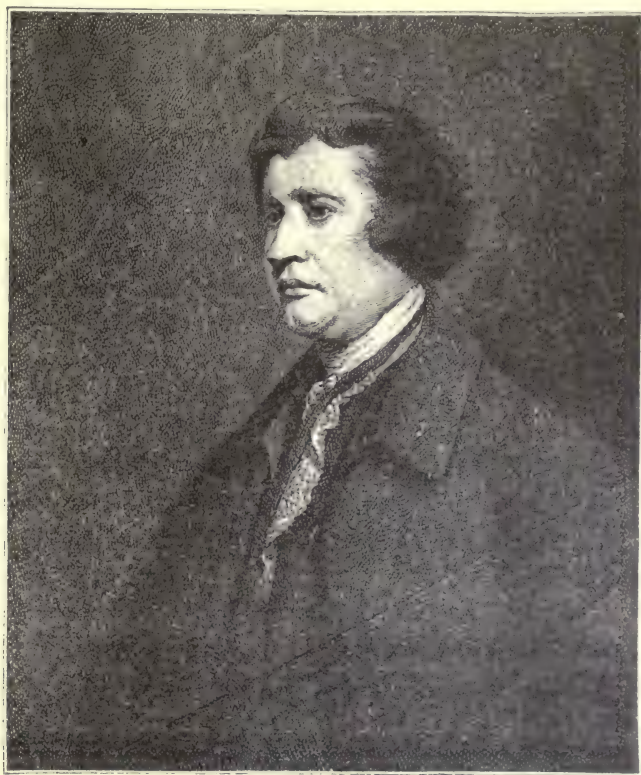
BRITISH STAMPS FOR AMERICA.

the obnoxious Acts were passed, but that of submission. But submission was the last thing the colonists dreamed of. Everywhere through New England riots broke out on the news of the arrival of the stamped paper; and the frightened collectors resigned their posts. North-

ern and Southern States were drawn together by the new danger. The assembly of Virginia was the first to formally deny the right of the British Parliament to meddle with internal taxation, and to demand the repeal of the acts. Massachusetts not only adopted the denial and the demand as its own, but proposed a Congress of delegates from all the colonial assemblies to provide for common and united action; and in October 1765 this Congress met to repeat the protest and petition of Virginia. The news of its assembly reached England at the end of the year, and at once called Pitt to the front when the Houses met in the spring of 1766. As a minister he had long since rejected a similar scheme for taxing the colonies. He had been ill and absent from Parliament when the Stamp Act was passed, but he adopted to the full the constitutional claim of America. He gloried in a resistance which was denounced in Parliament as rebellion. "In my opinion," he

said, "this kingdom has no right to lay a tax on the colonies. . . America is obstinate! America is almost in open rebellion! Sir, I rejoice that America has resisted. Three millions of people so dead to all the feelings of liberty as voluntarily to submit to be slaves would have been fit instruments to make slaves of the rest."

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
176  
1782



EDMUND BURKE.

*Picture by Sir J. Reynolds in National Portrait Gallery.*

There was a general desire that Pitt should return to office; but the negotiations for his union with the Whigs broke down. The radical difference between their policy and that of Pitt was now in fact defined for them by the keenest political thinker of the day. Edmund Burke had come to London in 1750 as a poor and unknown Irish adventurer. The learning which at once won him the friendship of Johnson, and the imaginative power which enabled

Repeal  
of the  
Stamp  
Act

*Edmund  
Burke*



SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782

him to give his learning a living shape, promised him a philosophical and literary career: but instinct drew Burke to politics; he became secretary to Lord Rockingham, and in 1765 entered Parliament under his patronage. His speeches on the Stamp Acts at once lifted him into fame. The heavy Quaker-like figure, the scratch wig, the round spectacles, the cumbrous roll of paper which loaded Burke's pocket, gave little promise of a great orator and less of the characteristics of his oratory—its passionate ardour, its

poetic fancy, its amazing prodigality of resources; the dazzling succession in which irony, pathos, invective, tenderness, the most brilliant word-pictures, the coolest argument followed each other. It was an eloquence indeed of a wholly new order in English experience. Walpole's clearness of statement, Pitt's appeals to emotion, were exchanged for the impassioned expression of a distinct philosophy of politics. "I have learned more from him than from all the books I ever read," Fox cried at a later time, with a burst of generous admiration. The philosophical cast of Burke's reasoning was unaccompanied by any philoso-



BURKE AS ORATOR.  
*Satirical sketch by Sayer, 1782.*

phical coldness of tone or phrase. The groundwork indeed of his nature was poetic. His ideas, if conceived by the reason, took shape and colour from the splendour and fire of his imagination. A nation was to him a great living society, so complex in its relations, and whose institutions were so interwoven with glorious events in the past, that to touch it rudely was a sacrilege. Its constitution was no artificial scheme of government, but an exquisite balance of social forces which was in itself a natural outcome of its history and developement. His temper was in this way conservative, but his conservatism sprang not from a love of inaction but from a sense of

the value of social order, and from an imaginative reverence for all that existed. Every institution was hallowed to him by the clear insight with which he discerned its relations to the past, and its subtle connexion with the social fabric around it. To touch even

SEC. II  
THE INDE  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782



"THE ASTONISHING COALITION—NEITHER WAR NOR PEACE."  
*Satire on Burke, Fox and North, by J. Gillray, 1783.*

an anomaly seemed to Burke to be risking the ruin of a complex structure of national order which it had cost centuries to build up. "The equilibrium of the Constitution," he said, "has something so delicate about it, that the least displacement may destroy it." "It is a difficult and dangerous matter even to touch so complicated a

SEC. II  
 THE INDEPENDENCE  
 OF AMERICA  
 1761  
 TO  
 1782  
*Burke  
 and  
 politics*

machine." Perhaps the readiest refutation of such a theory was to be found in its influence on Burke's practical dealing with politics. In the great question indeed which fronted him as he entered Parliament, it served him well. No man has ever seen with deeper insight the working of those natural forces which build up communities, or which group communities into empires ; and in the actual state of the American Colonies he saw a result of such forces which only madmen and pedants would disturb. But Burke's theory was less fitted to the state of politics at home. He looked on the Revolution of 1688 as the final establishment of English institutions. His aim was to keep England as the Revolution had left it, and under the rule of the great nobles who were faithful to the Revolution. He gave his passionate adhesion to the inaction of the Whigs. He made an idol of Lord Rockingham, an honest man, but the weakest of party leaders. He strove to check the corruption of Parliament by a bill for civil retrenchment, but he took the lead in defeating all plans for its reform. Though he was one of the few men in England who understood with Pitt the value of free industry, he struggled bitterly against the young Minister's proposals to give freedom to Irish trade, and against his Commercial Treaty with France. His work seemed to be that of investing with a gorgeous poetry the policy of timid content which the Whigs believed they inherited from Sir Robert Walpole ; and the very intensity of his trust in the natural development of a people rendered him incapable of understanding the good that might come from particular laws or from special reforms. At this crisis then the temper of Burke squared with the temper of the Whig party. Rockingham and his fellow-ministers were driven, whether they would or no, to a practical acknowledgement of the policy which Pitt demanded ; but they resolved that the repeal of the Stamp Acts should be accompanied by a formal repudiation of the principles of colonial freedom which Pitt had laid down. A declaratory act was brought in, which asserted the supreme power of Parliament over the Colonies "in all cases whatsoever." The passing of this act was followed by the introduction of a bill for the repeal of the Stamp Acts ; and in spite of the resistance of the King's friends, a resistance instigated by George himself, the bill was carried by a large majority.

Feb. 1766



From this moment the Ministry was unable to stand against the general sense that the first man in the country should be its ruler, and bitter as was the King's hatred of him, he was forced to call Pitt into office. Pitt's aim was still to unite the Whig party, and though forsaken by Lord Temple, he succeeded to a great extent in the administration which he formed in the summer of 1766. Though Rockingham stood coldly aside, some of his fellow ministers accepted office, and they were reinforced by the few friends who clung to Pitt; while Pitt stooped to strengthen his Parliamentary support by admitting some even of the "King's friends" to a share in the administration. But its life lay really in Pitt himself, in his immense popularity, and in the command which his eloquence gave him over the House of Commons. His acceptance of the Earldom of Chatham removed him to the House of Lords, and for a while ruined the confidence which his reputation for unselfishness had aided him to win. But it was from no vulgar ambition that Pitt laid down his title of the Great Commoner. It was the consciousness of failing strength which made him dread the storms of debate, and in a few months the dread became a certainty. A painful and overwhelming illness, the result of nervous disorganization, withdrew him from public affairs; and his withdrawal robbed his colleagues of all vigour or union. The plans which Chatham had set on foot for the better government of Ireland, the transfer of India from the Company to the Crown, and the formation of an alliance with Prussia and Russia to balance the Family Compact of the House of Bourbon, were suffered to drop. The one aim of the ministry which bore his name, and which during his retirement looked to the Duke of Grafton as its actual head, was simply to exist. But even existence was difficult; and Grafton saw himself forced to a union with the faction which was gathered under the Duke of Bedford, and to the appointment of a Tory noble as Secretary of State.

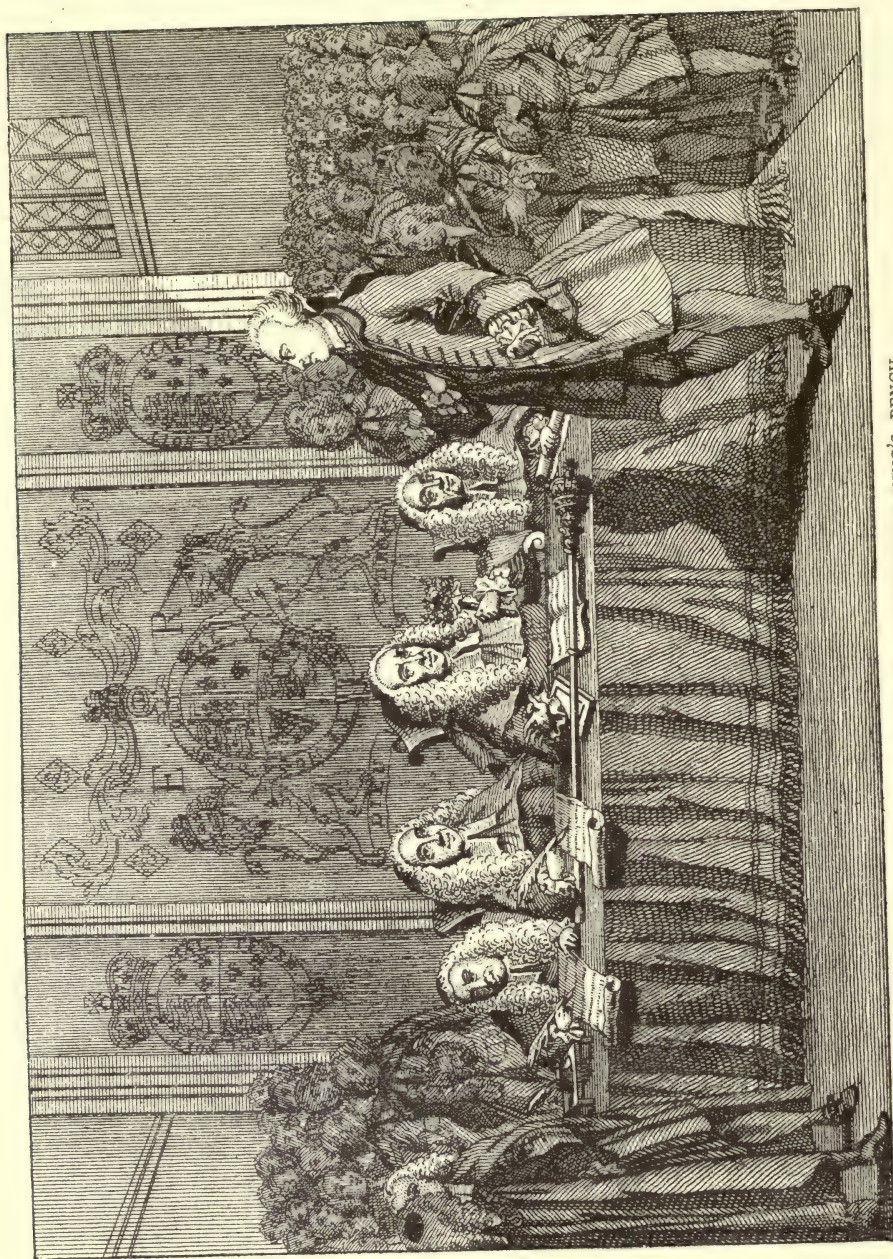
The force of public opinion on which Pitt had relied turned at once against the ministry which had so drifted from its former position. The elections for the new Parliament were more corrupt than any that had been yet witnessed. How bitter the indignation of the country had grown was seen in its fresh backing of Wilkes. He seized on the opening afforded by the elections to return from

SEC. II  
 THE INDIAN  
 PENINSULA  
 OF AMERICA  
 1761  
 TO  
 1782  
 The  
 Chatham  
 Ministry

1766

1767

Wilkes  
 and the  
 Parlia-  
 ment



JOHN WILKES BEFORE THE COURT OF KING'S BENCH.  
*Gentleman's Magazine*, 1768.



France, and was elected member for Middlesex, a county the large number of whose voters made its choice a real expression of public opinion. The choice of Wilkes was in effect a public condemnation of the House of Commons and the ministerial system. The ministry however and the House alike shrank from a fresh struggle with the agitator ; but the King was eager for the contest. After ten years of struggle and disappointment George had all but reached his aim. The two forces which had as yet worsted him were both of them paralyzed. The Whigs were fatally divided, and discredited in the eyes of the country by their antagonism to Pitt. Pitt, on the other hand, was suddenly removed from the stage. The ministry was without support in the country ; and for Parliamentary support it was forced to lean more and more on the men who looked for direction to the King himself. One form of opposition alone remained in the public discontent ; and at this he struck more fiercely than ever. "I think it highly expedient to apprise you," he wrote to Lord North, "that the expulsion of Mr. Wilkes appears to be very essential, and must be effected." The Ministers and the House of Commons bowed to his will. By his non-appearance in court when charged with libel, Wilkes had become an outlaw, and he was now thrown into prison on his outlawry. Dangerous riots broke out in London and over the whole country. The Ministry were torn with dissensions. The announcement of Lord Shelburne's purpose to resign office was followed by the resignation of Chatham himself ; and his withdrawal from the Cabinet which traded on his name left the Ministry wholly dependent on the King. In 1769 Wilkes was brought before the bar of the House of Commons on a charge of libel, a crime which was cognizable in the ordinary courts of law ; and was expelled from Parliament. He was at once re-elected by the shire of Middlesex. Violent and oppressive as the course of the House of Commons had been, it had as yet acted within its strict right, for no one questioned its possession of a right of expulsion. But the defiance of Middlesex led it now to go further. It resolved, "That Mr. Wilkes having been in this session of Parliament expelled the House, was and is incapable of being elected a member to serve in the present Parliament ;" and it issued a writ for a fresh election. Middlesex answered this insolent claim to

See II

THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

1782

1768

*Resigna-  
tion of  
Chatham*

1768



SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
—  
*Wilkes  
expelled*

limit the free choice of a constituency by again returning Wilkes ; and the House was driven by its anger to a fresh and more outrageous usurpation. It again expelled the member for Middlesex ; and on his return for the third time by an immense majority, it voted that the candidate whom he had defeated, Colonel Luttrell, ought to have been returned, and was the legal representative of Middlesex. The Commons had not only limited at their own arbitrary discretion the free election of the constituency, but they had transferred its rights to themselves by seating Luttrell as member in defiance of the deliberate choice of Wilkes by the freeholders of Middlesex. The country at once rose indignantly against this violation of constitutional law. Wilkes was elected



FRONTISPIECE TO MIDDLESEX PETITION, 1769.

an Alderman of London ; and the Mayor, Aldermen, and Livery petitioned the King to dissolve the Parliament. A remonstrance from London and Westminster said boldly that "there is a time when it is clearly demonstrable that men cease to be representatives. That time is now arrived. The House of Commons do not represent the people." Meanwhile a writer who styled himself Junius attacked the Government in letters, which, rancorous and unscrupulous as was their tone, gave a new power to the literature of the Press by their clearness and terseness of statement, the finish of their style, and the terrible vigour of their invective.

Parliament  
and  
Reform

The storm however beat idly on the obstinacy of the King. The printer of the letters was prosecuted, and the petitions and

remonstrances of London were haughtily rejected. At the beginning of 1770 a cessation of the disease which had long held him prostrate enabled Chatham to reappear in the House of Lords.

He at once denounced the usurpations of the Commons, and brought in a bill to declare them illegal. But his genius made him the first to see that remedies of this sort were inadequate to meet evils which really sprang from the fact that the House of Commons no longer represented the people of England; and he mooted a plan for its reform by an increase of the county members, who then formed the most independent portion of the House. Further he could not go, for even in the proposals he made he stood almost alone. The Tories and the King's friends were not likely to welcome schemes which would lessen the King's influence. The Whigs under Lord Rockingham had no sympathy with Par-

liamentary reform; and they shrank with haughty disdain from the popular agitation in which public opinion was forced to express itself, and which Chatham, while censuring its extravagance, deliberately encouraged. It is from the quarrel between Wilkes and the House of Commons that

SEC. II  
THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1774  
1782



BECKFORD'S MONUMENT IN THE GUILDHALL.

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761  
TO  
1782

we may date the influence of public meetings on English politics. The gatherings of the Middlesex electors in his support were preludes to the great meetings of Yorkshire freeholders in which the question of Parliamentary reform rose into importance; and it was in the movement for reform, and the establishment of corresponding committees throughout the country for the purpose of promoting it, that the power of political agitation first made itself felt. Political societies and clubs took their part in this quickening and organization of public opinion: and the spread of discussion, as well as the influence which now began to be exercised by the appearance of vast numbers of men in support of any political movement, proved that Parliament would soon have to reckon with the sentiments of the people at large.

Power  
of the  
Press

But an agent far more effective than popular agitation was preparing to bring the force of public opinion to bear on Parliament itself. We have seen how much of the corruption of the House of Commons sprang from the secrecy of Parliamentary proceedings, but this secrecy was the harder to preserve as the nation woke to a greater interest in its own affairs. From the accession of the Georges imperfect reports of the more important discussions began to be published under the title of "The Senate of Lilliput," and with feigned names or simple initials to denote the speakers. Obtained by stealth and often merely recalled by memory, such reports were naturally inaccurate; and their inaccuracy was eagerly seized on as a pretext for enforcing the rules which guarded the secrecy of proceedings in Parliament. In 1771 the Commons issued a proclamation forbidding the publication of debates; and six printers, who set it at defiance, were summoned to the bar of the House. One who refused to appear was arrested by its messenger; but the arrest at once brought the House into conflict with the magistrates of London. They set aside the proclamation as without legal force, released the printers, and sent the messenger to prison for unlawful arrest. The House sent the Lord Mayor to the Tower, but the cheers of the crowds which followed him on his way told that public opinion was again with the Press, and the attempt to hinder its publication of Parliamentary proceedings dropped silently on his release at the next



prorogation. Few changes of equal importance have been so quietly brought about. Not only was the responsibility of members to their constituents made constant and effective by the publication of their proceedings, but the nation itself was called in to assist in the deliberations of its representatives. A new and wider interest in its own affairs was roused in the people at large, and a new political education was given to it through the discussion of every subject of national importance in the Houses and the Press. Public opinion, as gathered up and represented on all its sides by the journals of the day, became a force in practical statesmanship, influenced the course of debates, and controlled in a closer and more constant way than even Parliament itself had been able to do the actions of the Government. The importance of its new position gave a

weight to the Press which it had never had before. The first great English journals date from this time. With the *Morning Chronicle*, the *Morning Post*, the *Morning Herald*, and the *Times*, all of which appeared in the interval between the opening years of the American War and the beginning of the war with the French Revolution, journalism took a new tone of responsibility and intelligence. The hacks of Grub Street were superseded by publicists of a high moral temper and literary excellence ; and philosophers like Coleridge or

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782



"A POLITICIAN."  
After W. Hogarth.

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

TO

1782

George  
III. and  
America

statesmen like Canning turned to influence public opinion through the columns of the Press.

But as yet these influences were feebly felt, and George the Third was able to set Chatham's policy disdainfully aside, and to plunge into a contest far more disastrous than his contest with the Press. In all the proceedings of the last few years, what had galled him most had been the act which averted a war between England and her colonies. To the King the Americans were already "rebels," and the great statesman whose eloquence had

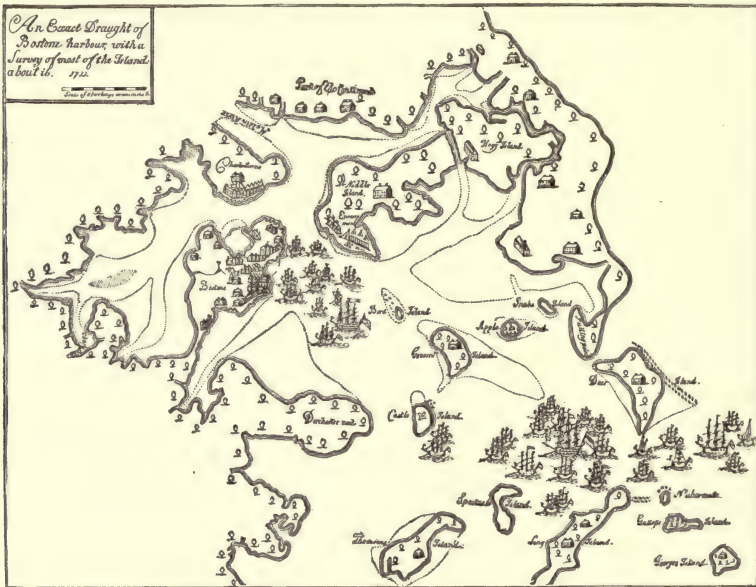


CHART OF BOSTON HARBOUR, 1733.

*Drawing in British Museum.*

made their claims irresistible was a "trumpet of sedition." George deplored in his correspondence with his ministers the repeal of the Stamp Acts. "All men feel," he wrote, "that the fatal compliance in 1766 has increased the pretensions of the Americans to absolute independence." In America itself the news of the repeal had been received with universal joy, and taken as a close of the strife. But on both sides there remained a pride and irritability which only wise handling could have allayed; and in the present state of English politics wise handling was

impossible. Only a few months indeed passed before the quarrel was re-opened ; for no sooner had the illness of Lord Chatham removed him in 1767 from any real share in public affairs, than the wretched administration which bore his name suspended the Assembly of New York on its refusal to provide quarters for English troops, and resolved to assert British sovereignty by levying import duties of trivial amount at American ports. The Assembly of Massachusetts was dissolved on a trifling quarrel with its Governor, and Boston was occupied for a time by British soldiers. The remonstrances of the Legislatures of Massachusetts

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782



LANDING OF BRITISH TROOPS AT BOSTON, 1768.  
*Contemporary engraving by Paul Revere.*

and Virginia, however, coupled with a fall in the funds, warned the Ministers of the dangerous course on which they had entered ; and in 1769 the troops were withdrawn, and all duties, save one, abandoned. But the King insisted on retaining the duty on tea ; and its retention was enough to prevent any thorough restoration of good feeling. A series of petty quarrels went on in almost every colony between the popular Assemblies and the Governors appointed by the Crown, and the colonists persisted in their agreement to import nothing from the mother country. As yet however there was no prospect of serious strife. In America the influence of George Washington allayed the irritation of Virginia.



## SEC. II

THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

TO

1782

The  
King's  
Ministry

Massachusetts contented itself with quarrelling with its Governor, and refusing to buy tea so long as the duty was levied. In England, even Grenville, though approving the retention of the duty in question, abandoned all dream of further taxation.

But the King was now supreme. The attack of Chatham in 1770 had completed the ruin of the Ministry. Those of his adherents who still clung to it resigned their posts; and were followed by the Duke of Grafton. All that remained were the Bedford faction and the dependents of the King; these were gathered under the former Chancellor of the Exchequer, Lord North, into a ministry which was in fact a mere cloak for the direction of public affairs by George himself. "Not only did he direct the minister," a careful observer tells us, "in all important matters of foreign and domestic policy, but he instructed him as to the management of debates in Parliament, suggested what motions should be made or opposed, and how measures should be carried. He reserved for himself all the patronage, he arranged the whole cast of administration, settled the relative place and pretensions of ministers of State, law officers, and members of the household, nominated and promoted the English and Scotch judges, appointed and translated bishops and deans, and dispensed other preferments in the Church. He disposed of military governments, regiments, and commissions, and himself ordered the marching of troops. He gave and refused titles, honours, and pensions." All this immense patronage was steadily used for the creation and maintenance in both Houses of Parliament of a majority directed by the King himself; and its weight was seen in the steady action of such a majority. It was seen yet more in the subjection to which the ministry that bore North's name was reduced. George was in fact the minister through the twelve years of its existence, from 1770 till the close of the American war; and the shame of the darkest hour of English history lies wholly at his door.

The  
Boston  
Tea-  
Riots

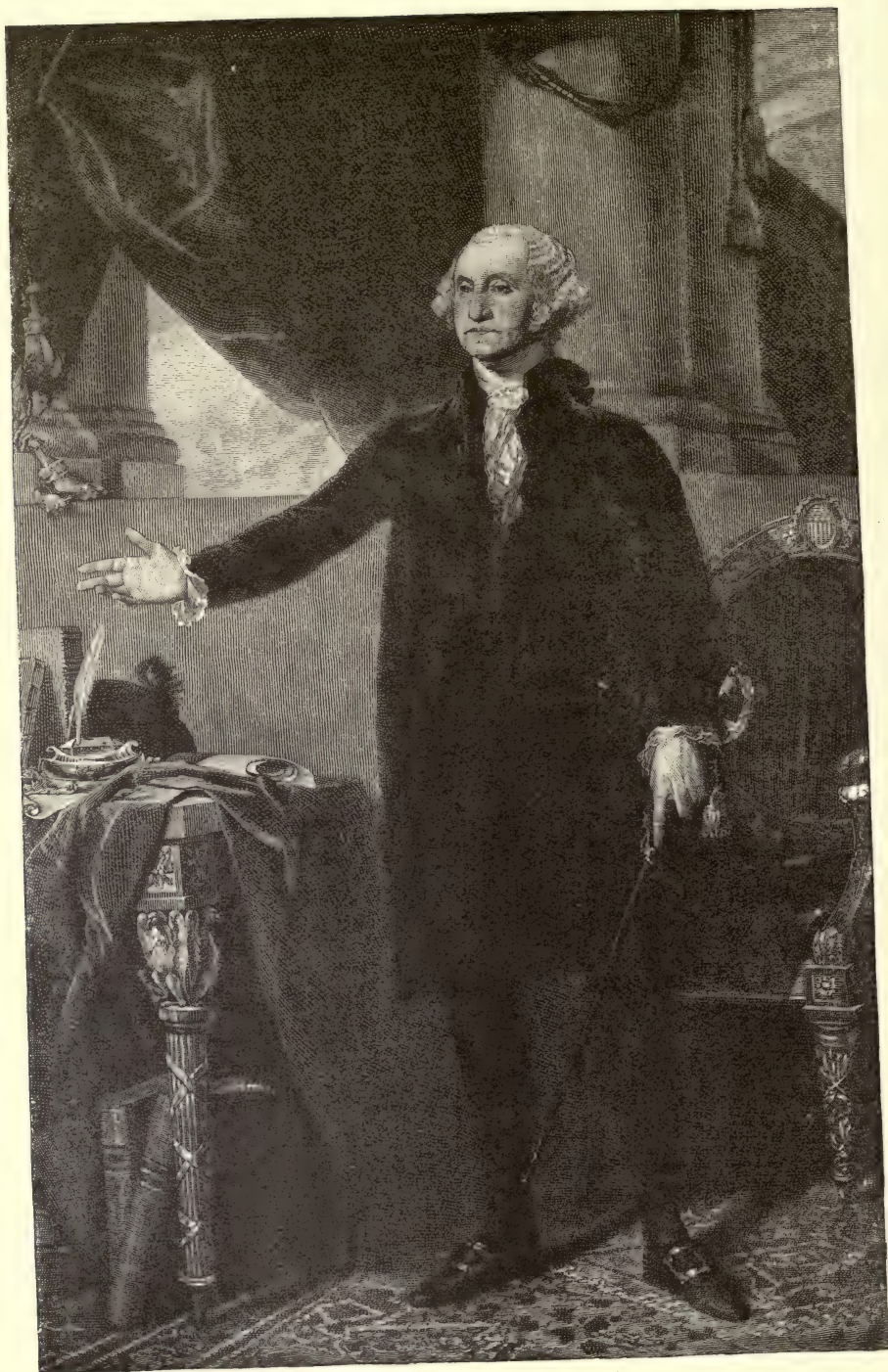
His fixed purpose was to seize on the first opportunity of undoing the "fatal compliance of 1766." A trivial riot gave him the handle he wanted. In December 1773 the arrival of some English ships laden with tea kindled fresh irritation in Boston, where the non-importation agreement was strictly enforced. A mob in the disguise of Indians boarded the vessels and flung their

contents into the sea. The outrage was deplored alike by the friends of America in England and by its own leading statesmen; and both Washington and Chatham were prepared to support the Government in its looked-for demand of redress. But the thought of the King was not of redress but of repression, and he set roughly aside the more conciliatory proposals of Lord North and his fellow-ministers. They had already rejected as "frivolous and vexatious" a petition of the Assembly of Massachusetts for the dismissal of two public officers whose letters home advised the withdrawal of free institutions from the Colonies. They now seized on the riot as a pretext for rigorous measures. A bill introduced into Parliament in the beginning of 1774 punished Boston by closing its port against all commerce. Another punished the State of Massachusetts by withdrawing the liberties it had enjoyed ever since the Pilgrim Fathers landed on its soil. Its charter was altered. The choice of its Council was transferred from the people to the Crown, and the nomination of its judges was transferred to the Governor. In the Governor, too, by a provision more outrageous than even these, was vested the right of sending all persons charged with a share in the late disturbances to England for trial. To enforce these measures of repression troops were sent to America, and General Gage, the commander-in-chief there, was appointed Governor of Massachusetts. The King's exultation at the prospect before him was unbounded. "The die," he wrote triumphantly to his minister, "is cast. The Colonies must either triumph or submit." Four regiments would be enough to bring the Americans to their senses. They would only be "lions while we are lambs." "If we take the resolute part," he decided solemnly, "they will undoubtedly be very meek." Unluckily, the blow at Massachusetts was received with anything but meekness. The jealousies between State and State were hushed by the sense that the liberties of all were in danger. If the British Parliament could cancel the charter of Massachusetts and ruin the trade of Boston, it could cancel the charter of every colony and ruin the trade of every port from the St. Lawrence to the coast of Georgia. All therefore adopted the cause of Massachusetts; and all their Legislatures, save that of Georgia, sent delegates to a Congress which assembled on the 4th of September at Philadelphia. Massachusetts took a yet bolder

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782

*Resist-  
ance of  
America*





GEORGE WASHINGTON.

*Picture by Gilbert Stuart, in possession of the Earl of Rosebery.*



course. Not a citizen would act under the new laws. Its Assembly met in defiance of the Governor, called out the militia of the State, and provided arms and ammunition for it. But there was still room for reconciliation. The resolutions of the Congress had been moderate; for Virginia was the wealthiest and most influential among the States who sent delegates; and though resolute to resist the new measures of the Government, Virginia still clung to the mother country. At home, the merchants of London and Bristol pleaded loudly for reconciliation; and in January 1775 Chatham again came forward to avert a strife he had once before succeeded in preventing. With characteristic largeness of feeling he set aside all half-measures or proposals of compromise. "It is not cancelling a piece of parchment," he insisted, "that can win back America: you must respect her fears and her resentments." The bill which he introduced in concert with Franklin provided for the repeal of the late acts and for the security of the colonial charters, abandoned the claim to taxation, and ordered the recall of the troops. A colonial assembly was directed to meet and provide means by which America might contribute towards the payment of the public debt.

Chatham's measure was contemptuously rejected by the Lords, as was a similar measure of Burke's by the Commons, and a petition of the City of London in favour of the Colonies by the King himself. With the rejection of these efforts at reconciliation began the great struggle which ended eight years later in the severance of the American Colonies from the British Crown. The Congress of delegates from the Colonial Legislatures at once voted measures for general defence, ordered the levy of an army, and set George Washington at its head. No nobler figure ever stood in the forefront of a nation's life. Washington was grave and courteous in address; his manners were simple and unpretending, his silence and the serene calmness of his temper spoke of a perfect self-mastery; but there was little in his outer bearing to reveal the grandeur of soul which lifts his figure, with all the simple majesty of an ancient statue, out of the smaller passions, the meaner impulses of the world around him. What recommended him for command was simply his weight among his fellow landowners of Virginia, and the experience of war which

SEC. II  
THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
1775  
1782

The Independence of America

George Washington

SEC. II  
 THE INDE-  
 PENDENCE  
 OF AMERICA  
 1761  
 TO  
 1782

he had gained by service in border contests with the French and the Indians, as well as in Braddock's luckless expedition against Fort Duquesne. It was only as the weary fight went on that the colonists learned little by little the greatness of their leader, his clear judgement, his heroic endurance, his silence under difficulties, his calmness in the hour of danger or defeat, the patience with which he waited, the quickness and hardness with which he struck, the lofty and serene sense of duty that never swerved from its task



AMERICAN RIFLEMAN.



AMERICAN GENERAL.

*E. Barnard, "History of England," 1790.*

through resentment or jealousy, that never through war or peace felt the touch of a meaner ambition, that knew no aim save that of guarding the freedom of his fellow countrymen, and no personal longing save that of returning to his own fireside when their freedom was secured. It was almost unconsciously that men learned to cling to Washington with a trust and faith such as few other men have won, and to regard him with a reverence which still hushes us in presence of his memory. Even America hardly

recognised his real greatness till death set its seal on "the man first in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his fellow countrymen." Washington more than any of his fellow colonists represented the clinging of the Virginian landowners to the mother-country, and his acceptance of the command proved that even the most moderate among them had no hope now save in arms. The struggle opened with a skirmish between a party of English troops and a detachment of militia at Lexington, and in a few days twenty thousand colonists appeared before Boston. The Congress

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
Opening  
of the war  
April 1775



ATTACK ON BUNKER'S HILL AND BURNING OF CHARLESTOWN.  
*Barnard, "History of England," 1790.*

re-assembled, declared the States they represented "The United Colonies of America," and undertook the work of government. Meanwhile ten thousand fresh troops landed at Boston; but the provincial militia seized the neck of ground which joins it to the mainland, and though they were driven from the heights of Bunker's Hill which commanded the town, it was only after a desperate struggle in which their bravery put an end for ever to the taunts of cowardice which had been levelled against the colonists. "Are the Yankees cowards?" shouted the men of

June 17



SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761  
TO  
1782  
—

Massachusetts, as the first English attack rolled back baffled down the hill-side. But a far truer courage was shown in the stubborn endurance with which Washington's raw militiamen, who gradually dwindled from sixteen thousand to ten, ill fed, ill armed, and with but forty-five rounds of ammunition to each man, cooped up through the winter a force of ten thousand veterans in the lines of Boston. The spring of 1776 saw them force these troops to withdraw from the city to New York, where the whole British army, largely reinforced by mercenaries from Germany, was



MEDAL COMMEMORATING SIEGE OF BOSTON, 1776.

— (Reverse.)

concentrated under General Howe. Meanwhile a raid of the American General, Arnold, nearly drove the British troops from Canada; and though his attempt broke down before Quebec, it showed that all hope of reconciliation was over. The Colonies of the south, the last to join in the struggle, had in fact expelled their Governors at the close of 1775; at the opening of the next year Massachusetts instructed its delegates to support a complete repudiation of the King's government by the Colonies; while the American ports were thrown open to the world in defiance of the

Navigation Acts. These decisive steps were followed by the great act with which American history begins, the adoption on the 4th of July, 1776, by the delegates in Congress of a Declaration of Independence. "We," ran its solemn words, "the representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, solemnly publish and declare that these United

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
*Declara-  
tion of  
Independ-  
ence*



MEDAL COMMEMORATING DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE, 1776.

*Snowden, "Medals of Washington."*

Colonies are, and of right ought to be, Free and Independent States."

The earlier successes of the Colonists were soon followed by suffering and defeat. Howe, an active general with a fine army at his back, cleared Long Island in August by a victory at Brooklyn; and Washington, whose army was weakened by withdrawals and defeat, and disheartened by the loyal tone of the State in which it

Death of  
Chatham

## SEC. II

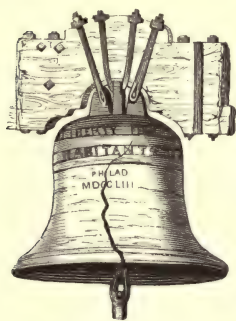
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

TO

1782

was encamped, was forced to evacuate New York and New Jersey, and to fall back first on the Hudson and then on the Delaware. The Congress prepared to fly from Philadelphia, and a general despair showed itself in cries of peace. But a well-managed surprise and a daring march on the rear of Howe's army restored the spirits of Washington's men, and forced the English general in his turn to fall back on New York. The campaign of 1777 opened with a combined effort for the suppression of the revolt. An army assembled in Canada under General Burgoyne marched by way of the Lakes to seize the line of the Hudson, and with help from the army at New York to cut off New England from her sister provinces. Howe meanwhile sailed up the Chesapeake,



THE LIBERTY BELL,  
PHILADELPHIA.

*Loring, "Cyclopædia of  
United States History."*

and advanced on Philadelphia, the temporary capital of the United States and the seat of the Congress. The rout of his little army of seven thousand men at Brandywine forced Washington to abandon Philadelphia, and, after a bold but unsuccessful attack on his victors, to retire into winter quarters on the banks of the Schuylkill; where the unconquerable resolve with which he nerved his handful of beaten and half-starved troops to face Howe's army in their camp at Valley Forge is the noblest of his triumphs. But in

the North the war had taken another colour. When Burgoyne appeared on the Upper Hudson he found the road to Albany barred by an American force under General Gates. The spirit of New England, which had grown dull as the war rolled away from its borders, quickened again at the news of invasion and of the outrages committed by the Indians whom Burgoyne employed among his troops. Its militia hurried from town and homestead to the camp; and after a fruitless attack on the American lines, Burgoyne saw himself surrounded on the heights of Saratoga. On the 17th of October he was compelled to surrender. The news of this calamity gave force to the words with which Chatham at the very time of the surrender was pressing for peace. "You cannot conquer America," he cried when men were glorying in Howe's

*Saratoga*



successes. "If I were an American as I am an Englishman, while a foreign troop was landed in my country, I never would lay down my arms—never, never, never!" Then in a burst of indignant eloquence he thundered against the use of the Indian and his scalping-knife as allies of England against her children. The proposals which Chatham brought forward might perhaps, in his hands, even yet have drawn America and the mother country together. His plan was one of absolute conciliation, and of a federal union between the settlements and Great Britain which would have left the Colonies absolutely their own masters in all matters of internal government, and linked only by ties of affection and loyalty to the general body of the Empire. But it met with the same fate as his previous proposals. Its rejection was at once followed by the news of Saratoga, and by the yet more fatal news that this disaster had roused the Bourbon Courts to avenge the humiliation of the Seven Years' War. In February 1778 France concluded an alliance with the States. Lord North strove to meet the blow by fresh offers of conciliation, and by a pledge to renounce for ever the right of direct taxation over the Colonies; but he felt that the time for conciliation was past, while all hope of reducing America by force of arms had disappeared. George indeed was as obstinate for war as ever; and the country, stung to the quick by the attack of France, backed passionately the obstinacy of the King. But unlike George the Third, it instinctively felt that if a hope still remained of retaining the friendship of the Colonies, and of baffling the efforts of the Bourbons, it lay in Lord Chatham; and in spite of the King's resistance the voice of the whole country called him back to power. But on the eve of his return to office this last chance was shattered by the hand of death. Broken with age and disease, the Earl was borne to the House of Lords to utter in a few broken words his protest against the proposal to surrender America. "I rejoice," he murmured, "that I am still alive to lift up my voice against the dismemberment of this ancient and noble monarchy. His Majesty succeeded to an Empire as great in extent as its reputation was unsullied. Seventeen years ago this people was the terror of the world." He listened impatiently to the reply of the Duke of Richmond, and again rose to his feet. But he had hardly risen when he pressed

SEC. II

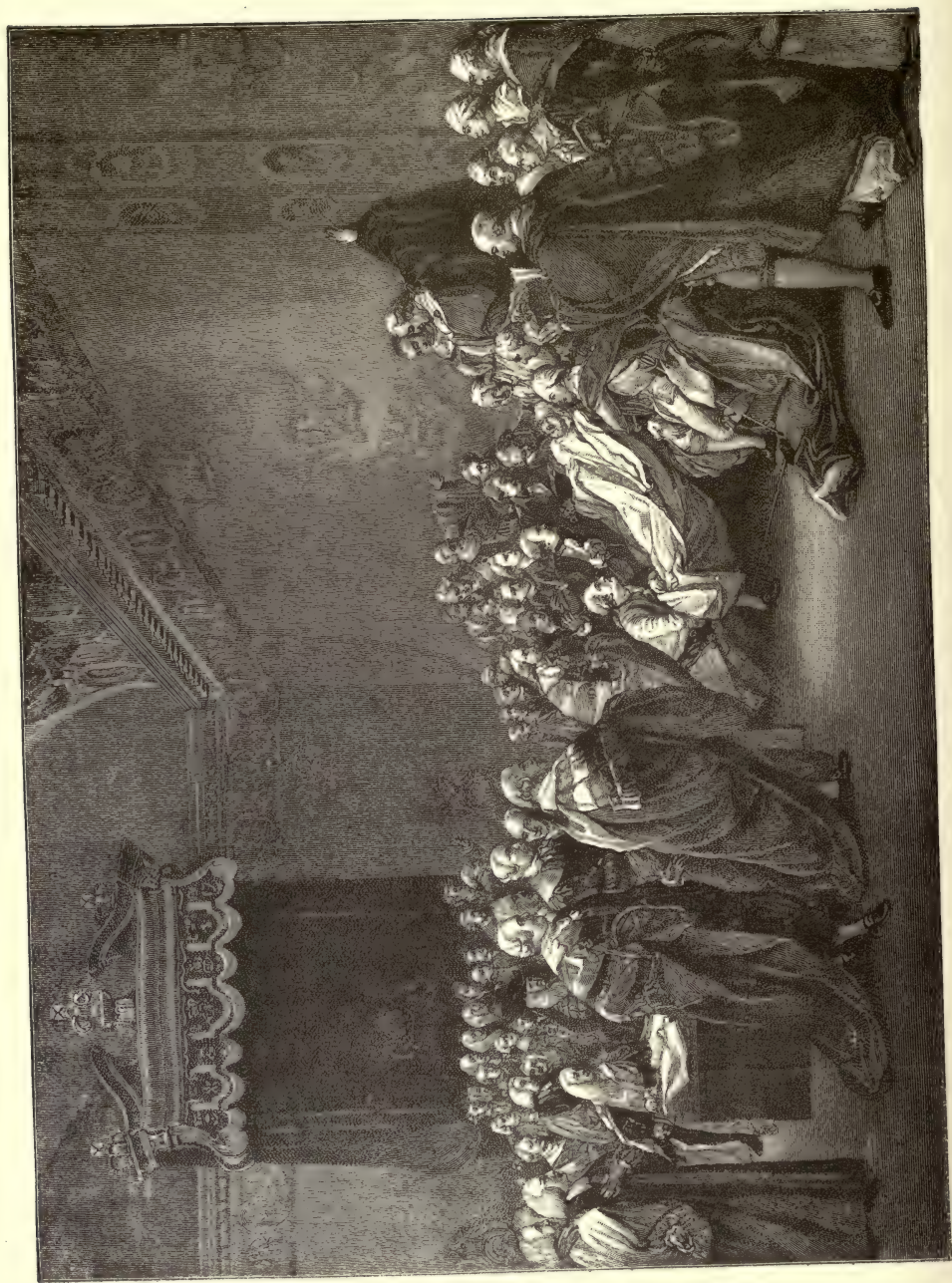
THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

TO

1782

*Chatham's  
proposals**April 7*



THE DEATH OF CHATHAM.  
*Picture by J. S. Copley, 1779, in the National Gallery.*



his hand upon his heart, and falling back in a swoon was borne home to die.

From the hour of Chatham's death England entered on a conflict with enemies whose circle gradually widened till she stood single-handed against the world. At the close of 1778 Spain joined the league of France and America against her; and in the next year the joint fleets of the two powers rode the masters of the Channel. They even threatened a descent on the English coast. But dead as Chatham was, his cry woke a new life in England. "Shall we fall prostrate," he exclaimed with his last breath, "before the House of Bourbon?" and the divisions which had broken the nation in its struggle with American liberty were hushed in the presence of this danger to its own existence. The weakness of the Ministry was compensated by the energy of England itself. For three years, from 1779 to 1782, General Eliott held against famine and bombardment the rock fortress of Gibraltar. Although a quarrel over the right of search banded Holland and the Courts of the North in an armed neutrality against her, and added the Dutch fleet to the number of her assailants, England held her own at sea. Even in America the fortune of the war seemed to turn. After Burgoyne's surrender the English generals had withdrawn from Pennsylvania, and bent all their efforts on the South where a strong Royalist party still existed. The capture of Charlestown and the successes of Lord Cornwallis in 1780 were rendered fruitless by the obstinate resistance of General Greene: but the States were weakened by bankruptcy, and unnerved by hopes of aid from France. Meanwhile England was winning new triumphs in the East.

Since the day of Plassey, India had been fast passing into the hands of the merchant company whose traders but a few years before held only three petty factories along its coast. The victory which laid Bengal at the feet of Clive had been followed in 1760 by a victory at Wandewash, in which Colonel Coote's defeat of Lally, the French Governor of Pondicherry, established British supremacy over Southern India. The work of organization had soon to follow on that of conquest; for the tyranny and corruption of the merchant-clerks who suddenly found themselves lifted into rulers was fast ruining the province of Bengal; and although Clive had profited more than any other by the spoils of his victory, he

SEC. II

THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

TO

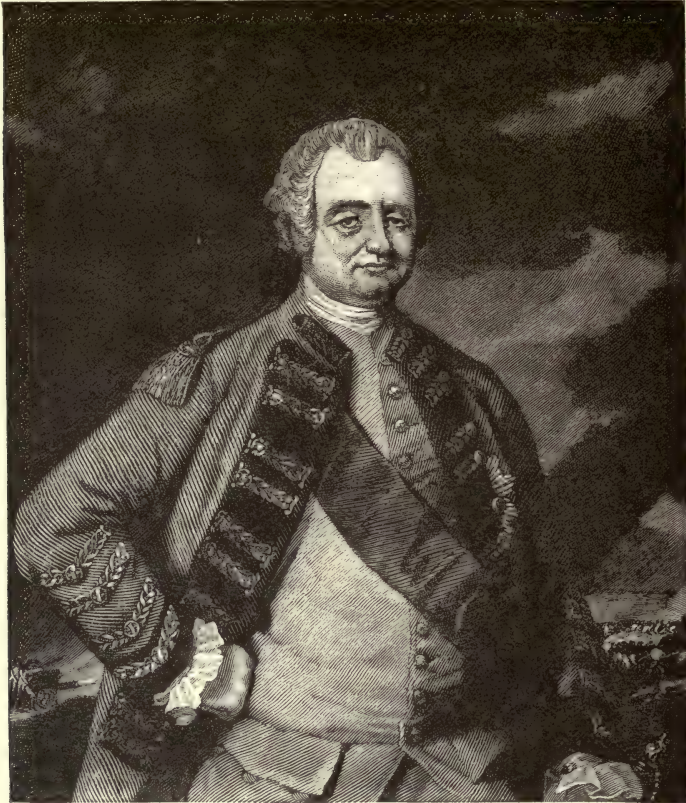
1782

Progress  
of the  
WarEngland  
and  
India



SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
—

saw that the time had come when greed must give way to the responsibilities of power. In 1765 he returned to India, and the two years of his rule were in fact the most glorious years in his life. In the teeth of opposition from every clerk and of mutiny throughout the army, he put down the private trading of the Company's servants and forbade their acceptance of gifts from the natives.



LORD CLIVE.

*From an engraving by Bartolozzi, after the picture by Nathaniel Dance.*

Clive set an example of disinterestedness by handing over to public uses a legacy which had been left him by the prince he had raised to the throne of Bengal ; and returned poorer than he went to face the storm his acts had roused among those who were interested in Indian abuses at home. His unsparing denunciations of the misgovernment of Bengal at last stirred even Lord North to interfere ;

and when the financial distress of the Company drove it for aid to Government, the grant of aid was coupled with measures of administrative reform. The Regulating Act of 1773 established a Governor-General and a Supreme Court of Judicature for all British possessions in India, prohibited judges and members of Council from trading, forbade any receipt of presents from natives, and ordered that every act of the Directors should be signified to the Government to be approved or disallowed. The new interest which had been aroused in the subject of India was seen in an investigation of the whole question of its administration by a Committee of the House of Commons. Clive's own early acts were examined with unsparing severity. His bitter complaint in the Lords that, Baron of Plassey as he was, he had been arraigned like a sheep-stealer, failed to prevent the passing of resolutions which censured the corruption and treachery of the early days of British rule in India. Here, however, the justice of the House stopped. When his accusers passed from the censure of Indian misgovernment to the censure of Clive himself, the memory of his great deeds won from the House of Commons a unanimous vote, "That Robert Lord Clive did at the same time render great and meritorious services to his country."

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782

By the act of 1773 Warren Hastings was named Governor-General of Bengal, with powers of superintendence and control over the other presidencies. Hastings was sprung of a noble family which had long fallen into decay, and poverty had driven him in boyhood to accept a writership in the Company's service. Clive, whose quick eye discerned his merits, drew him after Plassey into political life; and the administrative ability he showed, during the disturbed period which followed, raised him step by step to the post of Governor of Bengal. No man could have been better fitted to discharge the duties of the new office which the Government at home had created without a thought of its real greatness. Hastings was gifted with rare powers of organization and control. His first measure was to establish the direct rule of the Company over Bengal by abolishing the government of its native princes, which, though it had become nominal, hindered all plans for effective administration. The Nabob sank into a pensionary, and the Company's new province was roughly but efficiently organized.

Warren  
Hastings



SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782

Out of the clerks and traders about him Hastings formed that body of public servants which still remains the noblest product of our rule in India. The system of law and finance which he devised, hasty and imperfect as it necessarily was, was far superior to any



WARREN HASTINGS.

*From a mezzotint by T. Watson (1777), after Sir J. Reynolds.*

that India had ever seen. Corruption he put down with as firm a hand as Clive's, but he won the love of the new "civilians" as he won the love of the Hindoos. Although he raised the revenue of Bengal and was able to send home every year a surplus of half a million to the Company, he did this without laying a fresh burden



on the natives or losing their good will. His government was guided by an intimate knowledge of and sympathy with the people. At a time when their tongue was looked on simply as a medium of trade and business, Hastings was skilled in the languages of India ; he was versed in native customs, and familiar with native feeling. We can hardly wonder that his popularity with the Bengalees was such as no later ruler has ever attained, or that after a century of great events Indian mothers still hush their infants with the name of Warren Hastings.

As yet, though English influence was great in the south, Bengal alone was directly in English hands. Warren Hastings recognized a formidable danger to the power of Britain in that of the Mahrattas, freebooters of Hindoo blood whose tribes had for a century past carried their raids over India from the hills of the western coast, and founded sovereignties in Guzerat, Malwa, and Tanjore, and who were bound by a slight tie of subjection to the Mahratta chief who reigned at Poonah. The policy of Hastings was to prevent the Mahrattas from over-running the whole of India, and taking the place which the Mogul Emperors had occupied. He bound native princes, as in Oudh or Berar, by treaties and subsidies, crushed without scruple the Rohillas to strengthen his ally the Nabob Vizier of Oudh, and watched with incessant jealousy the growth of powers even as distant as the Sikhs. The jealousy of France sought in the Mahrattas a counterpoise to the power of Britain, and through their chieftain the French envoys were able to set the whole confederacy in motion against the English presidencies. The danger was met by Hastings with characteristic swiftness of resolve. His difficulties were great. For two years he had been rendered powerless through the opposition of his Council ; and when freed from this obstacle the Company pressed him incessantly for money, and the Crown more than once strove to recall him. His own general, Sir Eyre Coote, was miserly, capricious, and had to be humoured like a child. Censures and complaints reached him with every mail. But his calm self-command never failed. No trace of his embarrassment showed itself in his work. The war with the Mahrattas was pressed with a tenacity of purpose which the blunders of subordinates and the inefficiency of the soldiers he was forced to use

SEC. II

THE INDEPENDENCE  
OF AMERICA1761  
TO  
1782India  
in the  
American  
War

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

TO  
1782

*Hyder Ali*

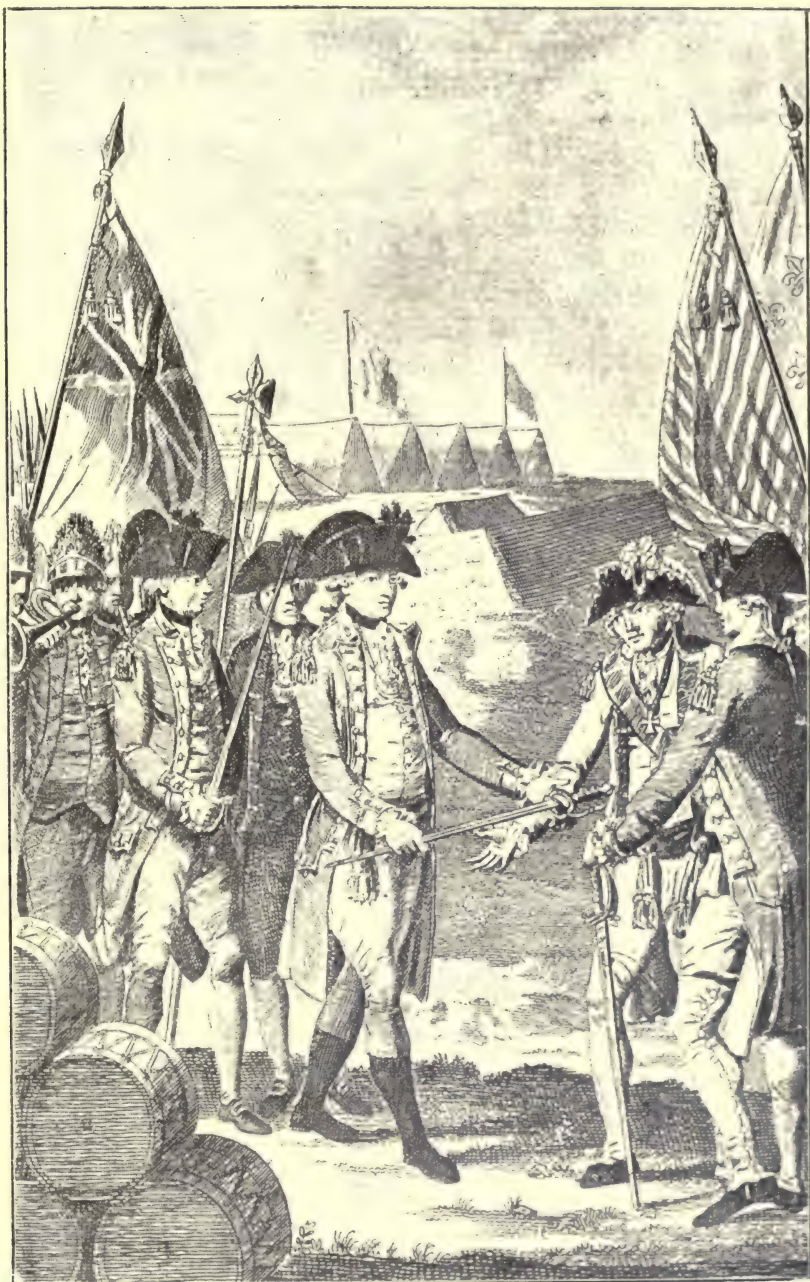
never shook for a moment. Failure followed failure, and success had hardly been wrung from fortune when a new and overwhelming danger threatened from the south. A military adventurer, Hyder Ali, had built up a compact and vigorous empire out of the wreck of older principalities on the table-land of Mysore. Tyrant as he was, no native rule was so just as Hyder's, no statesmanship so vigorous. He was quickwitted enough to discern the real power of Britain, and only the wretched blundering of the Council of Madras forced him at last to the conclusion that war with the English was less dangerous than friendship with them. Old as he was, his generalship retained all its energy; and a disciplined army, covered by a cloud of horse and backed by a train of artillery, poured down in 1780 on the plain of the Carnatic. The small British force which met him was driven into Madras, and Madras itself was in danger. The news reached Hastings when he was at last on the verge of triumph over the Mahrattas; but his triumph was instantly abandoned, a peace was patched up, and every soldier hurried to Madras. The appearance of Eyre Coote checked the progress of Hyder, and after a campaign of some months he was hurled back into the fastnesses of Mysore. India was the one quarter of the world where Britain lost nothing during the American war; and in the annexation of Benares, the extension of British rule along the Ganges, the reduction of Oudh to virtual dependence, the appearance of English armies in Central India, and the defeat of Hyder, the genius of Hastings laid the foundation of an Indian Empire.

1781

End of  
the War

But while England triumphed in the East, the face of the war in America was changed by a terrible disaster. Foiled in an attempt on North Carolina by the refusal of his fellow general, Sir Henry Clinton, to assist him, Lord Cornwallis fell back in 1781 on Virginia, and entrenched himself in the lines of York Town. A sudden march of Washington brought him to the front of the English troops at a moment when the French fleet held the sea, and the army of Cornwallis was driven by famine to a surrender as humiliating as that of Saratoga. The news fell like a thunderbolt on the wretched Minister who had till now suppressed at his master's order his own conviction of the uselessness of further bloodshed. Opening his arms and pacing wildly up and down





SURRENDER OF LORD CORNWALLIS AT YORKTOWN.

*Barnard, "History of England," 17 p.*



SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA  
1761  
TO  
1782  
Mar. 1782

his room, Lord North exclaimed "It is all over," and resigned. England in fact seemed on the brink of ruin. In the crisis of the American struggle Ireland itself turned on her. A force of forty thousand volunteers had been raised in 1779 for the defence of the island against a French invasion. Threats of an armed revolt backed the eloquence of two Parliamentary leaders, Grattan and Flood, in their demand for the repeal of Poynings' Act, which took all power of initiative legislation from the Irish Parliament, and for the recognition of the Irish House of Lords as an ultimate Court of Appeal. The demands were in effect a claim for national independence; but there were no means of resisting them, for England was without a soldier to oppose the volunteers. The fall



THE PARLIAMENT-HOUSE, DUBLIN.

of Lord North recalled the Whigs under Lord Rockingham to office; and on Rockingham fell the double task of satisfying Ireland and of putting an end, at any cost, to the war with the United States. The task involved in both quarters a humiliating surrender; and it needed the bitter stress of necessity to induce the Houses to follow his counsels. The English Parliament abandoned by a formal statute the judicial and legislative supremacy it had till then asserted over the Parliament of Ireland; and negotiations were begun with America and its allies. In the difficulties of England the hopes of her enemies rose high. Spain refused to suspend hostilities at any other price than the surrender

of Gibraltar. France proposed that England should give up all her Indian conquests save Bengal. But the true basis of her world-power lay on the sea ; and at this moment the command of the seas again became her own. Admiral Rodney, the greatest of English seamen save Nelson and Blake, had in January, 1780,

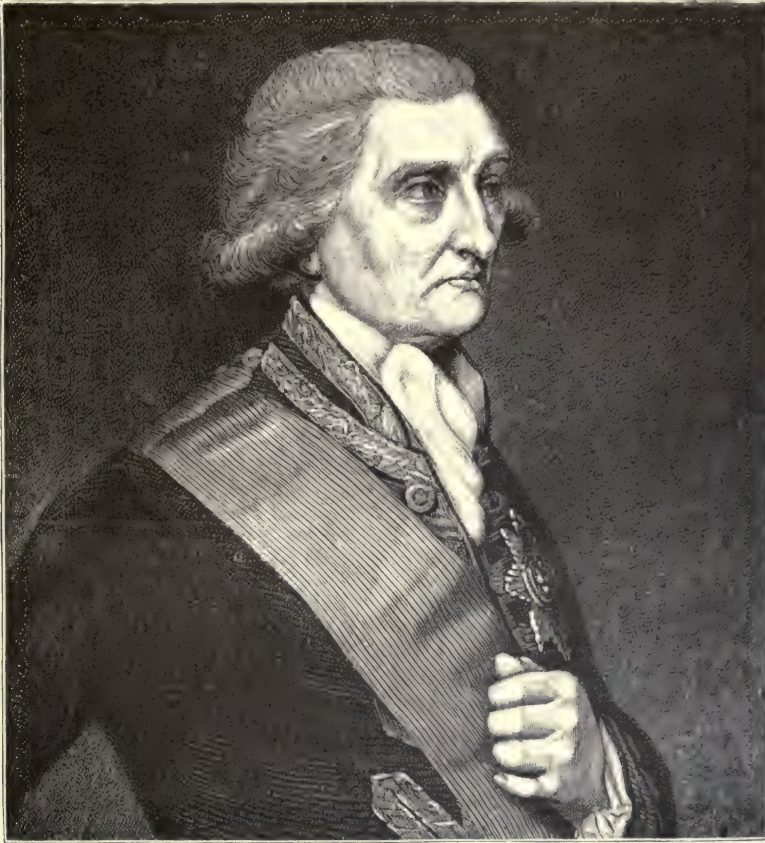
SEC. II

THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761

TO

1782



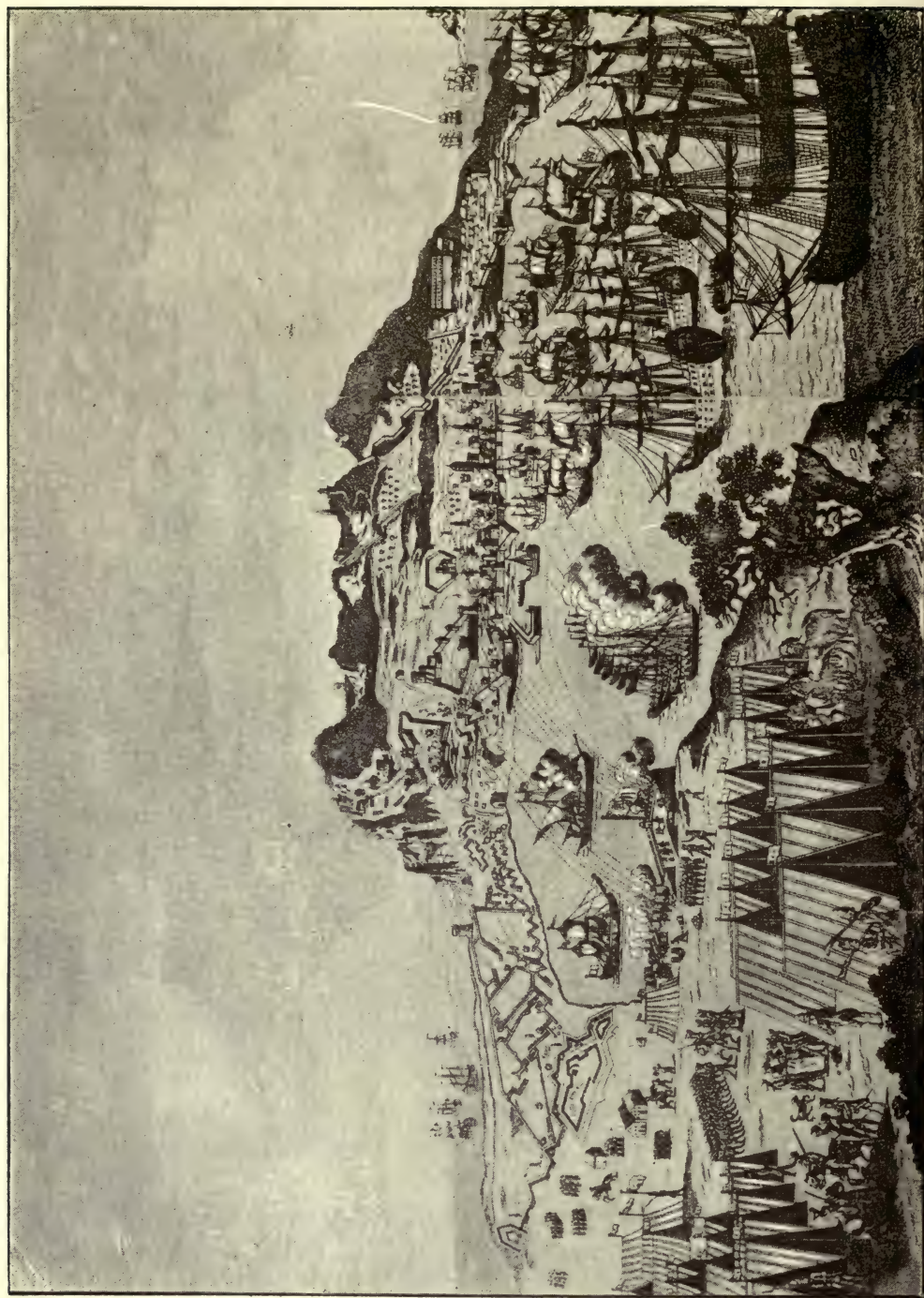
ADMIRAL RODNEY.

*From an engraving by E. Scriven, after Reynolds.*

encountered the Spanish fleet off Cape St. Vincent, and only four of its vessels escaped to Cadiz. Two years later the triumphs of the French Admiral de Grasse called him to the West Indies, and in April 1782, a manœuvre which he was the first to introduce broke his opponent's line, and drove the French fleet shattered

Jan. 16,  
1780





"A PERSPECTIVE VIEW OF GIBRALTAR, WITH THE DISPOSITION OF THE SPANISH ATTACK, AND RELIEF OF THE GARRISON BY THE ENGLISH FLEET UNDER THE COMMAND OF ADMIRAL D'ARBY, ON THE 12TH OF APRIL, 1781."

*European Magazine. 1782.*

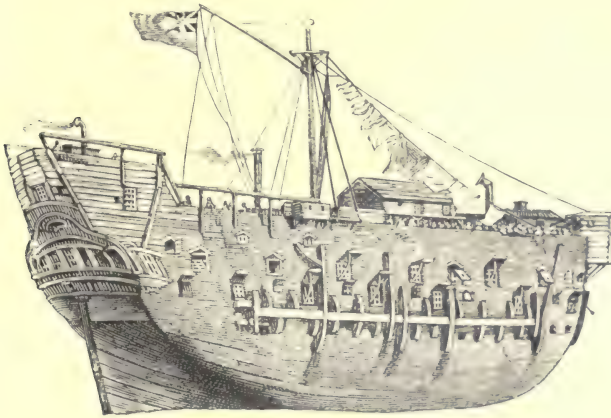


from the Atlantic. In September a last attack of the joint force gathered against Gibraltar was repulsed by the heroism of Eliott. Nor would America wait any longer for the satisfaction of her allies. In November her commissioners signed the preliminaries of a peace, in which Britain reserved to herself on the American continent only Canada and the island of Newfoundland, and acknowledged without reserve the independence of the United States. The treaty of peace with the United States was a prelude to treaties of peace with the Bourbon powers. France indeed won nothing in the treaties with which the war ended; Spain gained only Florida and Minorca. England, on the other hand, had won ground in India; she had retained Canada; her West Indian islands were intact; she had asserted her command of the seas. But at the close of the war there was less thought of what she had retained than of what she had lost. The American Colonies were irrecoverably gone. It is no wonder that in the first shock of such a loss England looked on herself as on the verge of ruin, or that the Bourbon Courts believed her position as a world-power to be practically at an end. How utterly groundless such a conception was the coming years were to show.

SEC. II  
THE INDE-  
PENDENCE  
OF AMERICA

1761  
TO  
1782

*Treaties  
of peace*



THE "DISCOVERY" (COOK'S SHIP).

*Lindsay, "History of Merchant Shipping"; from a drawing by E. W. Cooke, R.A.*

## SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793



THE IMPEACHMENT.

*Satire on Burke, Fox, and Sheridan, by J. Gillray, 1791.*

## Section III.—The Second Pitt, 1783—1793

[*Authorities.*—Mr. Massey's account of this period may be supplemented by Lord Stanhope's "Life of Pitt," Lord Russell's "Memoirs of Fox," and the Correspondence of Lord Malmesbury, Lord Auckland, and Mr. Rose. For the Slave Trade, see the Memoirs of Wilberforce by his sons. Burke may be studied in his Life by Macknight, in Mr. Morley's valuable essay on him, and above all in his own works. The state of foreign affairs in 1789 is best seen in Von Sybel's "History of the French Revolution."]

England  
and the  
World



NEWFOUNDLAND.



CANADA.

That in the creation of the United States the world had reached one of the turning points in its history seems at the time to have entered into the thought of not a single European statesman. What startled men most at the moment was the discovery that England herself was far from being ruined by the greatness of her defeat. She rose from it indeed stronger and more vigorous than ever. Never had she shown a mightier energy than in the struggle against France which followed only ten years after her loss of America, nor did she ever stand higher among the nations than on the day of Waterloo. Her real greatness, however, lay not in the old world but in the new. She was from that hour a mother of nations. In America she had begotten a great people, and her emigrant ships were

still to carry on the movement of the Teutonic race from which she herself had sprung. Her work was to be colonization. Her settlers were to dispute Africa with the Kaffir and the Hottentot ;

SEC. III  
THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793



SEAL OF CAPE OF GOOD HOPE, EASTERN DIVISION.

*Collection of Mr. Allan Wyon.*



SEAL OF NATAL.

*Collection of Mr. Allan Wyon.*

they were to build up in the waters of the Pacific colonies as great as those which she had lost in America. And to the nations that she founded she was to give not only her blood and her speech, but the freedom which she had won. It is the thought of this which flings its grandeur round the pettiest details of our story in the past. The history of France has little result beyond France itself. German or Italian history has no direct issue outside the bounds of Germany or Italy. But England is



NEW SOUTH WALES.



TASMANIA.

only a small part of the outcome of English history. Its greater issues lie not within the narrow limits of the mother island, but in the destinies of nations yet to be. The struggles of her patriots, the wisdom of her statesmen, the steady love of liberty and law in her people at large, were shaping in the past of our little island the future of mankind.

Meanwhile the rapid development of industrial energy and industrial wealth in England itself was telling on the conditions of English statesmanship. Though the Tories and "King's friends" had now grown to a compact body of a hundred and fifty members

The  
Rock-  
ingham  
Ministry



## SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

the Whigs, who held office under Lord Rockingham, were superior to their rivals in numbers and political character, now that the return of the Bedford section to the general body of the party during its steady opposition to the American war had restored much of its old cohesion. But this reunion only strengthened their aristocratic and exclusive tendencies, and widened the breach which was steadily opening on questions such as Parliamentary Reform,



WILLIAM PITT.

*Picture by T. Gainsborough.*

between the bulk of the Whig party and the small fragment which remained true to the more popular sympathies of Chatham. Lord Shelburne stood at the head of the Chatham party, and it was reinforced at this moment by the entry into Parliament of the second son of Chatham himself. William Pitt had hardly reached his twenty-second year; but he left college with the learning of a ripe scholar, and his ready and sonorous eloquence had been matured

by his father's teaching. "He will be one of the first men in Parliament," said a member to the Whig leader, Charles Fox, after Pitt's first speech in the House of Commons. "He is so already," replied Fox. The haughty self-esteem of the new statesman breathed in every movement of his tall, spare figure, in the hard

SE. 111

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793



CHARLES JAMES FOX.

*Picture by Karl Anton Hickel, in the National Portrait Gallery.*

lines of a countenance which none but his closer friends saw lighted by a smile, in his cold and repulsive address, his invariable gravity of demeanour, and his habitual air of command. How great the qualities were which lay beneath this haughty exterior no one knew ; nor had any one guessed how soon this "boy," as his rivals



SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

*Economic  
Reform*  
1782

mockingly styled him, was to crush every opponent and to hold England at his will. He refused any minor post in the Rockingham Administration, claiming, if he took office at all, to be at once admitted to the Cabinet. But Pitt had no desire to take office under Rockingham. To him as to Chatham the main lesson of the war was the need of putting an end to those abuses in the composition of Parliament by which George the Third had been enabled to plunge the country into it. A thorough reform of the House of Commons was the only effectual means of doing this, and Pitt brought forward a bill founded on his father's plans for that purpose. But the great bulk of the Whigs could not resolve on the sacrifice of property and influence which such a reform would involve. Pitt's bill was thrown out ; and in its stead the Ministry endeavoured to weaken the means of corrupt influence which the King had unscrupulously used by disqualifying persons holding government contracts from sitting in Parliament, by depriving revenue officers of the elective franchise (a measure which diminished the influence of the Crown in seventy boroughs), and above all by a bill for the reduction of the civil establishment, of the pension list, and of the secret service fund, which was brought in by Burke. These measures were to a great extent effectual in diminishing the influence of the Crown over Parliament, and they are memorable as marking the date when the direct bribery of members absolutely ceased. But they were absolutely inoperative in rendering the House of Commons really representative of or responsible to the people of England. The jealousy which the mass of the Whigs entertained of the Chatham section and its plans was more plainly shown on the death of Lord Rockingham in July. Shelburne was no sooner called to the head of the Ministry than Fox, who acted on personal grounds, and the bulk of Rockingham's followers resigned. Pitt on the other hand accepted office as Chancellor of the Exchequer.

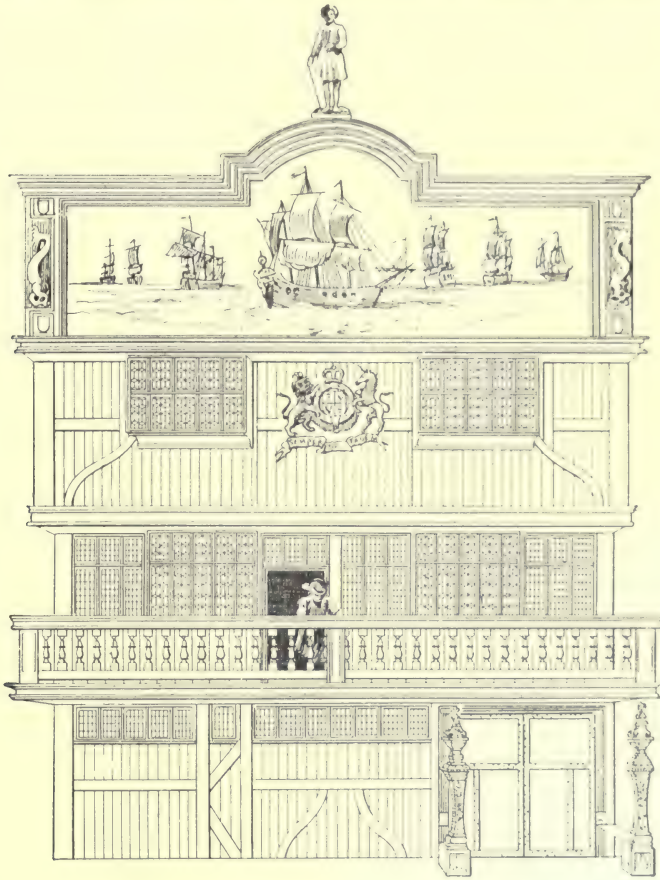
The  
Coalition

The Shelburne Ministry only lasted long enough to conclude the final peace with the United States ; for in the opening of 1783 it was overthrown by the most unscrupulous coalition known in our history, that of the Whig followers of Fox with the Tories who still clung to Lord North. Never had the need of representative reform been more clearly shown than by a coalition which proved how powerless



was the force of public opinion to check even the most shameless faction in Parliament, how completely the lessening of the royal influence by the measures of Burke and Rockingham had tended to the profit, not of the people, but of the borough-mongers who usurped its representation. Pitt's renewed proposal of Parliamentary

SEC. III  
THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793



FRONT OF THE OLD EAST INDIA HOUSE.  
*Daguer's, "India Office Records."*

Reform was rejected by a majority of two to one. Secure in their Parliamentary majority, and heedless of the power of public opinion without the walls of the House of Commons, the new Ministers entered boldly on a greater task than had as yet taxed the constructive genius of English statesmen. To leave such a dominion as Warren Hastings had built up in India to the control

*The  
India  
Bill*



BOMBAY GREEN IN 1767.  
*Forbes, "Oriental Memoirs."*

of a mere company of traders was clearly impossible ; and Fox proposed to transfer the political government from the Directors of the Company to a board of seven Commissioners. The appointment of the seven was vested in the first instance in Parliament, and afterwards in the Crown ; their office was to be held for five years, but they were removeable on address from either House of Parliament. The proposal was at once met with a storm of opposition. The scheme indeed was an injudicious one ; for the new Commissioners would have been destitute of that practical knowledge of India which belonged to the Company, while the want of any immediate link between them and the actual Ministry of the Crown would have prevented Parliament from exercising an effective control over their acts. But the real faults of this India Bill were hardly noticed in the popular outcry against it. The merchant-class was galled by the blow levelled at the greatest merchant-body in the realm : corporations trembled at the cancelling of a charter ; the King viewed the measure as a mere means of transferring the patronage of India to the Whigs. With the nation at large the faults of the bill lay in the character of the Ministry which proposed it. To give the rule and patronage of India over to the existing House of Commons was to give a new and immense power to a body which misused in the grossest way the power it possessed. It was the sense of this popular feeling which encouraged the King to exert his personal influence to defeat the measure in the Lords, and on its defeat to order his Ministers to deliver up the seals. In December 1783 Pitt accepted the post of First Lord of the Treasury ; but his position would at once have been untenable had the country gone with its nominal representatives. He was defeated again and again by large majorities in the Commons ; but the majorities dwindled as a shower of addresses from every quarter, from the Tory University of Oxford as from the Whig Corporation of London, proved that public opinion went with the Minister and not with the House. It was the general sense of this which justified Pitt in the firmness with which, in the teeth of addresses for his removal from office, he delayed the dissolution of Parliament for five months, and gained time for that ripening of national sentiment on which he counted for success. When the election of 1784 came the struggle was at once at an end. The

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND

PITT

1783

TO

1793

*Fall  
of the  
Coalition*



SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

William  
Pitt

public feeling had become strong enough to break through the corrupt influences which commonly governed its representation. Every great constituency returned supporters to Pitt; of the majority which had defeated him in the Commons a hundred and sixty members were unseated; and only a fragment of the Whig party was saved by its command of nomination boroughs.

When Parliament came together after the overthrow of the Coalition, the Minister of twenty-five was master of England as no Minister had been before. Even the King yielded to his sway, partly through gratitude for the triumph he had won for him over the Whigs, partly from a sense of the madness which was soon to strike him down, but still more from a gradual discovery that the triumph which he had won over his political rivals had been won, not to the profit of the Crown, but of the nation at large. The Whigs, it was true, were broken, unpopular, and without a policy, while the Tories clung to the Minister who had "saved the King." But it was the support of a new political power that really gave his strength to the young Minister. The sudden rise of English industry was pushing the manufacturer to the front; and all that the trading classes loved in Chatham, his nobleness of temper, his consciousness of power, his patriotism, his sympathy with a wider world than the world within the Parliament-house, they saw in his son. He had little indeed of the poetic and imaginative side of Chatham's genius, of his quick perception of what was just and what was possible, his far-reaching conceptions of national policy, his outlook into the future of the world. Pitt's flowing and sonorous commonplaces rang hollow beside the broken phrases which still make his father's eloquence a living thing to Englishmen. On the other hand he possessed some qualities in which Chatham was utterly wanting. His temper, though naturally ardent and sensitive, had been schooled in a proud self-command. His simplicity and good taste freed him from his father's ostentation and extravagance. Diffuse and commonplace as his speeches seem, they were adapted as much by their very qualities of diffuseness and commonplace as by their lucidity and good sense to the intelligence of the middle classes whom Pitt felt to be his real audience. In his love of peace, his immense industry, his despatch of business, his skill in debate, his knowledge of finance







THE HOUSE  
*Painted in London by Karl Anton Hickel. Presented June, 1811  
of Hungary to her Excellency I*





IONS IN 1793.

Imperial Majesty the Emperor Francis Joseph of Austria and King  
for the National Portrait Gallery.



he recalled Sir Robert Walpole ; but he had virtues which Walpole never possessed, and he was free from Walpole's worst defects. He was careless of personal gain. He was too proud to rule by corruption. His lofty self-esteem left no room for any jealousy of subordinates. He was generous in his appreciation of youthful merits ; and the "boys" he gathered round him, such as Canning and Lord Wellesley, rewarded his generosity by a devotion which death left untouched. With Walpole's cynical inaction Pitt had no sympathy whatever. His policy from the first was one of active reform, and he faced every one of the problems, financial, constitutional, religious, from which Walpole had shrunk. Above all he had none of Walpole's scorn of his fellow-men. The noblest feature in his mind was its wide humanity. His love for England was as deep and personal as his father's love, but of the sympathy with English passion and English prejudice which had been at once his father's weakness and strength he had not a trace. When Fox taunted him with forgetting Chatham's jealousy of France and his faith that she was the natural foe of England, Pitt answered nobly that "to suppose any nation can be unalterably the enemy of another is weak and childish." The temper of the time and the larger sympathy of man with man, which especially marks the eighteenth century as a turning-point in the history of the human race, was everywhere bringing to the front a new order of statesmen, such as Turgot and Joseph the Second, whose characteristics were a love of mankind, and a belief that as the happiness of the individual can only be secured by the general happiness of the community to which he belongs, so the welfare of individual nations can only be secured by the general welfare of the world. Of these Pitt was one. But he rose high above the rest in the consummate knowledge, and the practical force which he brought to the realisation of his aims.

Pitt's strength lay in finance ; and he came forward at a time when the growth of English wealth made a knowledge of finance essential to a great minister. The progress of the nation was wonderful. Population more than doubled during the eighteenth century, and the advance of wealth was even greater than that of population. The war had added a hundred millions to the national debt, but the burden was hardly felt. The loss of America only

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT

1783

TO

1793

English  
Industry



SEC. III  
THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

*Manufac-  
tures*

increased the commerce with that country ; and industry had begun that great career which was to make Britain the workshop of the world. Though England already stood in the first rank of commercial states at the accession of George the Third, her industrial life at home was mainly agricultural. The wool-trade had gradually established itself in Norfolk, the West Riding of Yorkshire, and the counties of the south-west ; while the manufacture of cotton was still almost limited to Manchester and Bolton, and remained so unimportant that in the middle of the eighteenth century the export of cotton goods hardly reached the value of fifty



WAGON.

*Pyne, "Costumes of Great Britain," 1808.*

thousand a year. There was the same slow and steady progress in the linen trade of Belfast and Dundee, and the silks of Spitalfields. The processes of manufacture were too rude to allow any large increase of production. It was only where a stream gave force to turn a mill-wheel that the wool-worker could establish his factory ; and cotton was as yet spun by hand in the cottages, the "spinsters" of the family sitting with their distaffs round the weaver's handloom. But had the processes of manufacture been more efficient, they would have been rendered useless by the want of a cheap and easy means of transport. The older main roads,

which had lasted fairly through the middle ages, had broken down in later times before the growth of traffic and the increase of wagons and carriages. The new lines of trade lay often along mere country lanes which had never been more than horse-tracks. Much of the woollen trade therefore had to be carried on by means of long trains of pack-horses; and in the case of yet heavier goods, such as coal, distribution was almost impracticable, save along the greater rivers or in districts accessible from the sea. A new era began when the engineering genius of Brindley joined Manchester

SEC III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

Roads  
and  
canals



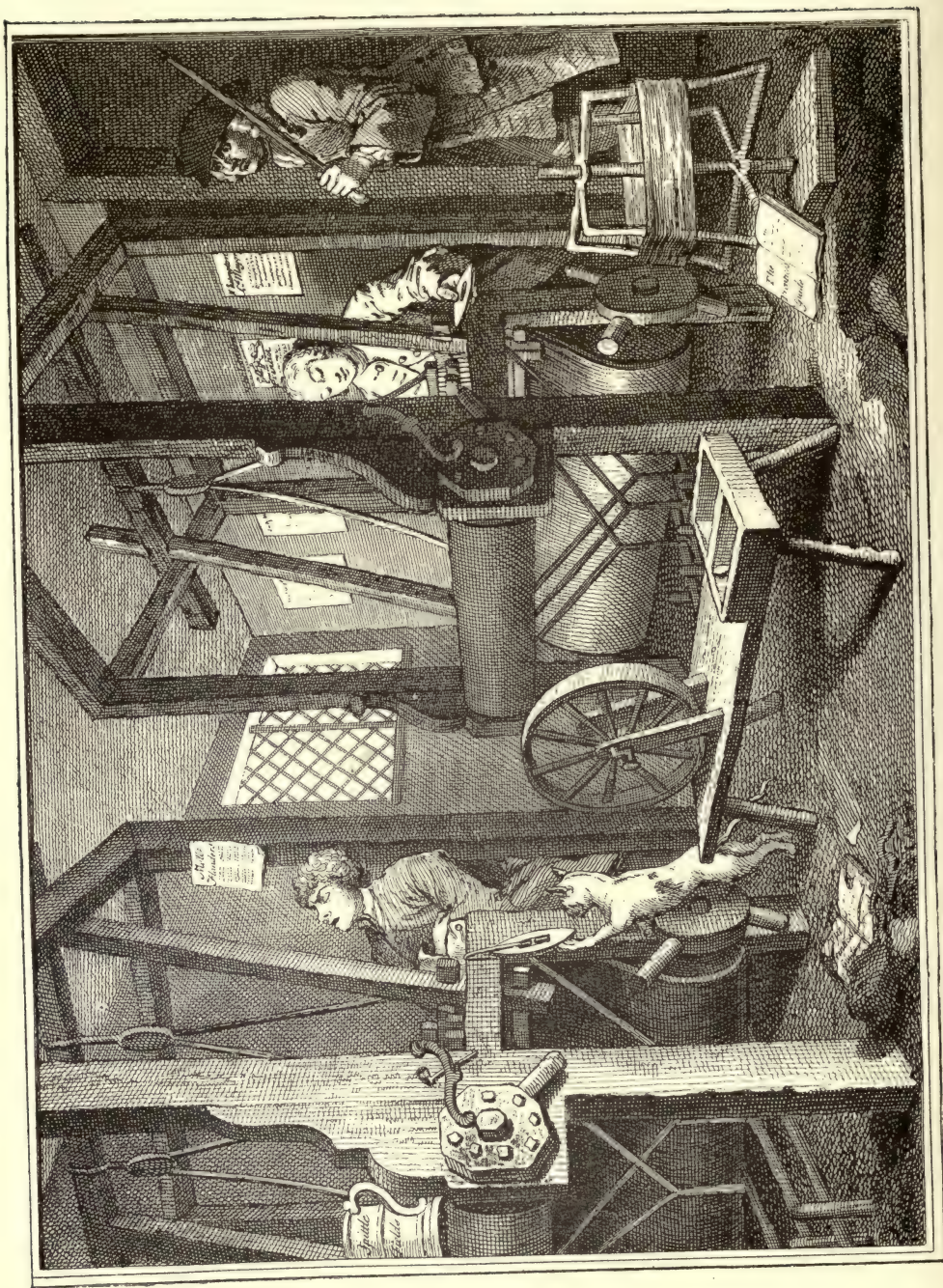
AQUEDUCT OVER THE IRWELL AT BARTON, LANCASHIRE.

*From an engraving by W. Orme, 1793.*

with its port of Liverpool in 1767 by a canal which crossed the Irwell on a lofty aqueduct; the success of the experiment soon led to the universal introduction of water-carriage, and Great Britain was traversed in every direction by three thousand miles of navigable canals. At the same time a new importance was given to the coal which lay beneath the soil of England. The stores of iron which had lain side by side with it in the northern counties had lain there unworked through the scarcity of wood, which was looked upon as the only fuel by which it could be

Coal and  
Iron



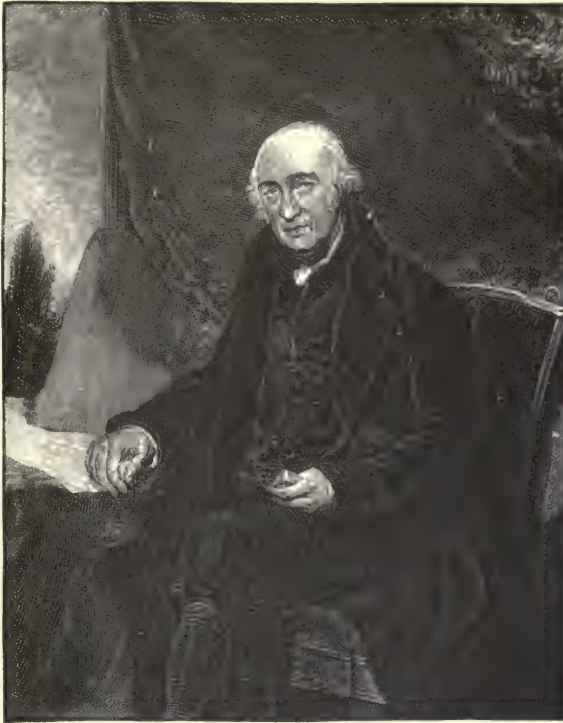


WEAVING AT SPITALFIELDS.  
*Hogarth, "Industry and Idleness."*



smelted. In the middle of the eighteenth century a process for smelting iron with coal turned out to be effective ; and the whole aspect of the iron-trade was at once revolutionized. Iron was to become the working material of the modern world ; and it is its production of iron which more than all else has placed England at the head of industrial Europe. The value of coal as a means of

SEC. III  
THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793



JAMES WATT.

*From an engraving by C. Turner after a portrait by Sir T. Lawrence.*

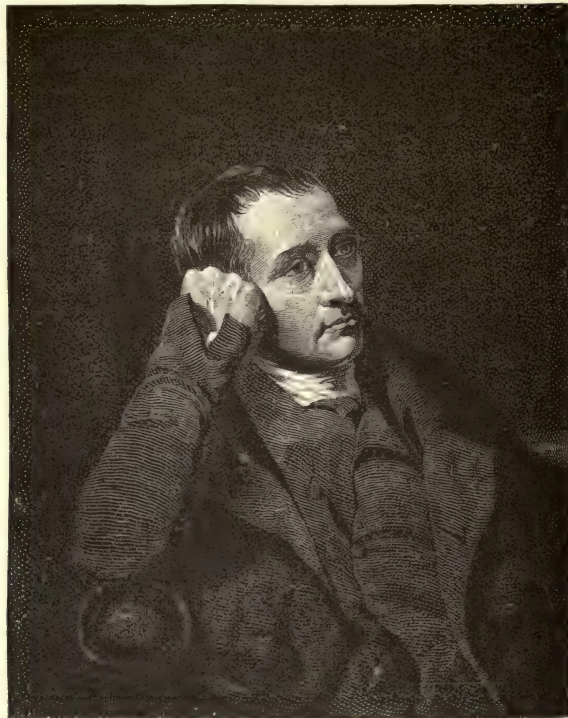
producing mechanical force was revealed in the discovery by which Watt in 1765 transformed the Steam-Engine from a mere toy into the most wonderful instrument which human industry has ever had at its command. The invention came at a moment when the existing supply of manual labour could no longer cope with the demands of the manufacturers. Three successive inventions in twelve years, that of the spinning-jenny in 1764 by the weaver

*The  
Steam-  
Engine*

## SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

Hargreaves, of the spinning-machine in 1768 by the barber Arkwright, of the "mule" by the weaver Crompton in 1776 were followed by the discovery of the power-loom. But these would have been comparatively useless had it not been for the revelation of a new and inexhaustible labour-force in the steam-engine. It was the combination of such a force with such means of applying it that



SAMUEL CROMPTON.

*From an engraving by C. Turner after a portrait by Allingham.*

enabled Britain during the terrible years of her struggle with France and Napoleon to all but monopolize the woollen and cotton trades, and raised her into the greatest manufacturing country that the world had seen.

Adam  
Smith

To deal wisely with such a growth required a knowledge of the laws of wealth which would have been impossible at an earlier time. But it had become possible in the days of Pitt. If books are to be

measured by the effect which they have produced on the fortunes of mankind, the "Wealth of Nations" must rank among the greatest of books. Its author was Adam Smith, an Oxford scholar and a professor at Glasgow. Labour, he contended, was the one source of wealth, and it was by freedom of labour, by suffering the worker to pursue his own interest in his own way, that the public wealth

SEC. III  
—  
THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793  
—



RICHARD ARKWRIGHT.

*Picture by Wright of Derby, in the possession of Mr. P. A. Hurt.*

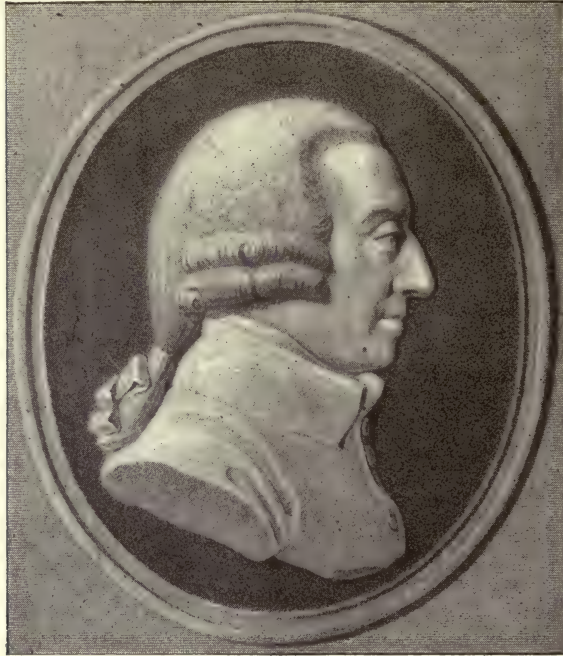
would best be promoted. Any attempt to force labour into artificial channels, to shape by laws the course of commerce, to promote special branches of industry in particular countries, or to fix the character of the intercourse between one country and another, is not only a wrong to the worker or the merchant, but actually hurtful to the wealth of a state. The book was published in 1776, at



## SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

the opening of the American war, and studied by Pitt during his career as an undergraduate at Cambridge. From that time he owned Adam Smith for his master. He had hardly become Minister before he took the principles of the "Wealth of Nations" as the groundwork of his policy. The ten earlier years of his rule marked a new point of departure in English statesmanship. Pitt was the first English Minister who really grasped the part which industry was to play in promoting the welfare of the world. He



ADAM SMITH.  
*Medallion by Tassie.*

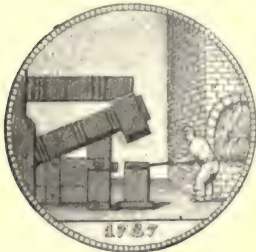
was not only a peace Minister and a financier, as Walpole had been, but a statesman who saw that the best security for peace lay in the freedom and widening of commercial intercourse between nations; that public economy not only lessened the general burdens but left additional capital in the hands of industry; and that finance might be turned from a mere means of raising revenue into a powerful engine of political and social improvement.

That little was done by Pitt himself to carry these principles

into effect was partly owing to the mass of ignorance and prejudice with which he had to contend, and still more to the sudden break of his plans through the French Revolution. His power rested above all on the trading classes, and these were still per-

SEC. III  
—  
THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

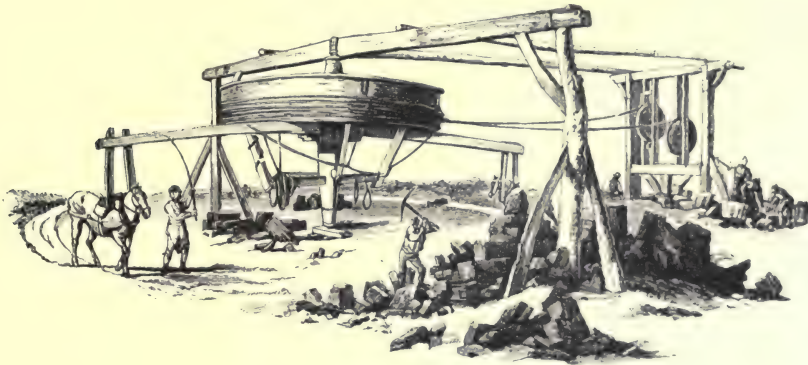
Pitt and  
Reform



TOKEN OF JOHN WILKINSON, IRONMASTER, 1787.  
*W. H. Smith, "Birmingham."*

suaded that wealth meant gold and silver, and that commerce was best furthered by jealous monopolies. It was only by patience and dexterity that the mob of merchants and country squires who backed him in the House of Commons could be brought to acquiesce in the changes he proposed. How small his power was when it struggled with the prejudices around him was seen in the failure of the first great measure he brought

forward. The question of parliamentary reform which had been mooted during the American war had been steadily coming to the front. Chatham had advocated an increase of county members, who were then the most independent part of the Lower House. The Duke of Richmond talked of universal suffrage, equal electoral



COLLIERY.

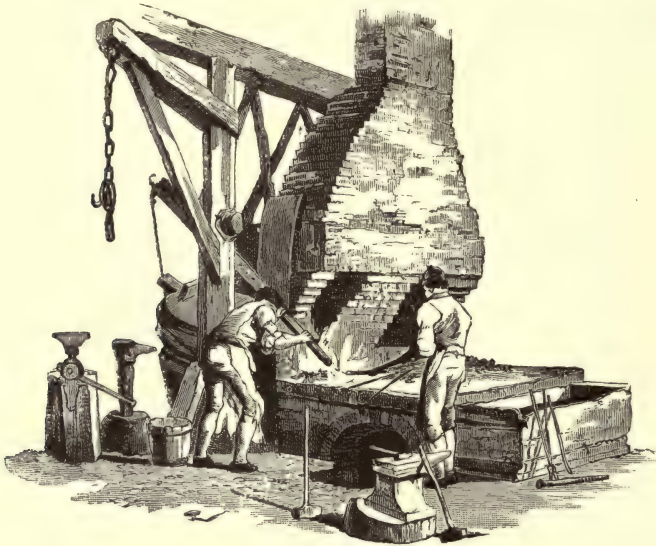
*Pyne, "Microcosm," 1803—1806.*

districts, and annual Parliaments. Wilkes anticipated the Reform Bill of a later time by proposing to disfranchise the rotten boroughs, and to give members in their stead to the counties and to the more populous and wealthy towns. William Pitt had made the question

## SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

his own by bringing forward a motion for reform on his first entry into the House, and one of his first measures as Minister was to bring in a bill in 1785 which, while providing for the gradual extinction of all decayed boroughs, disfranchised thirty-six at once, and transferred their members to counties. He brought the King to abstain from opposition, and strove to buy off the borough-mongers, as the holders of rotten boroughs were called, by offering to compensate them for the seats they lost at their market value. But the bulk of his own party joined the bulk of the Whigs



IRON-FOUNDRY.

Pyne, "*Microcosm*," 1803-1805.

in a steady resistance to the bill. The more glaring abuses, indeed, within Parliament itself, the abuses which stirred Chatham and Wilkes to action, had in great part disappeared. The bribery of members had ceased. Burke's Bill of Economical Reform had just dealt a fatal blow at the influence which the King exercised by suppressing a host of useless offices, household appointments, judicial and diplomatic charges, which were maintained for the purposes of corruption. Above all, the recent triumph of public opinion to which Pitt owed his power had done much to diminish the sense of any real danger from the opposition which Parliament



had shown till now to the voice of the nation. "Terribly disappointed and beat" as Wilberforce tells us Pitt was by the rejection of his measure, the temper of the House and of the people was too plain to be mistaken, and though his opinion remained unaltered, he never brought it forward again.

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

Pitt's  
Finance

The failure of his constitutional reform was more than compensated by triumphs of his finance. When he entered office public credit was at its lowest ebb. The debt had been doubled by the American war, yet large sums still remained unfunded, while the revenue was reduced by a vast system of smuggling which turned every coast-town into a nest of robbers. The



CASTING CANNON BALLS.  
*Pyne, "Microcosm," 1803—1806.*

deficiency was met for the moment by new taxes, but the time which was thus gained served to change the whole face of public affairs. The first of Pitt's financial measures—his plan for gradually paying off the debt by a sinking fund—was undoubtedly an error; but it had a happy effect in restoring public confidence. He met the smuggler by a reduction of Custom-duties which made his trade unprofitable. He revived Walpole's plan of an Excise. Meanwhile the public expenses were reduced, and commission after commission was appointed to introduce economy into every department of the public service. The rapid developement of the national industry which we have already noted no doubt aided the

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

success of these measures. Credit was restored. The smuggling trade was greatly reduced. In two years there was a surplus of a million, and though duty after duty was removed the revenue rose steadily with every remission of taxation. Meanwhile Pitt was showing the political value of the new finance in a wider field. Ireland, then as now, was England's difficulty. The tyrannous misgovernment under which she had groaned ever since the battle of the Boyne was producing its natural fruit ; the miserable land was torn with political faction, religious feuds and peasant con-



THE LINEN HALL, DUBLIN.  
*From an engraving by W. Hincks, 1783.*

spiracies ; and so threatening had the attitude of the Protestant party which ruled it become during the American war that they had forced the English Parliament to relinquish its control over their Parliament in Dublin. Pitt saw that much at least of the misery and disloyalty of Ireland sprang from its poverty. The population had grown rapidly while culture remained stationary and commerce perished. And of this poverty much was the direct result of unjust law. Ireland was a grazing country, but to protect the interest of English graziers the import of its cattle into England was forbidden. To protect the interests of English

clothiers and weavers, its manufactures were loaded with duties. To redress this wrong was the first financial effort of Pitt, and the bill which he introduced in 1785 did away with every obstacle to freedom of trade between England and Ireland. It was a measure which, as he held, would "draw what remained of the shattered empire together," and repair in part the loss of America by creating a loyal and prosperous Ireland; and struggling almost

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793



BAS-RELIEF COMMEMORATING TREATY BETWEEN ENGLAND AND FRANCE, 1787.

*Wedgwood; modelled by Flaxman.*

alone in face of a fierce opposition from the Whigs and the Manchester merchants, he dragged it through the English Parliament, only to see amendments forced into it which ensured its rejection by the Irish Parliament. But the defeat only spurred him to a greater effort elsewhere. France had been looked upon as England's natural enemy; but in 1787 he concluded a Treaty of Commerce with France which enabled the subjects of both countries to reside and travel in either without license or passport



SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT

1783

TO

1793

The  
Trial of  
Hastings

did away with all prohibition of trade on either side, and reduced every import duty.

India owes to Pitt's triumph a form of government which remained unchanged to our own day. The India Bill which he carried in 1784 preserved in appearance the political and commercial powers of the Directors, while establishing a Board of Control, formed from members of the Privy Council, for the approval or annulling of their acts. Practically, however, the powers of the Board of Directors were absorbed by a secret committee of three elected members of that body, to whom all the more important administrative functions had been reserved by the bill, while those of the Board of Control were virtually exercised by its President. As the President was in effect a new Secretary of State for the Indian Department, and became an important member of each Ministry, responsible like his fellow-members for his action to Parliament, the administration of India was thus made a part of the general system of the English Government; while the secret committee supplied the experience of Indian affairs in which the Minister might be deficient. Meanwhile the new temper that was growing up in the English people told on the attitude of England towards its great dependency. Discussions over rival plans of Indian administration diffused a sense of national responsibility for its good government, and there was a general resolve that the security against injustice and misrule which was enjoyed by the poorest Englishman should be enjoyed by the poorest Hindoo. This resolve expressed itself in the trial of Warren Hastings. Hastings returned from India at the close of the war with the hope of rewards as great as those of Clive. He had saved all that Clive had won. He had laid the foundation of a vast empire in the East. He had shown rare powers of administration, and the foresight, courage, and temperance which mark the born ruler of men. But the wisdom and glory of his rule could not hide its terrible ruthlessness. He was charged with having sold for a vast sum the services of British troops to crush the free tribes of the Rohillas, with having wrung half a million by extortion from the Rajah of Benares, with having extorted by torture and starvation more than a million from the Princesses of Oudh. He was accused of having kept his hold upon power by

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

measures as unscrupulous, and with having murdered a native who opposed him by an abuse of the forms of English law. On almost all these charges the cooler judgement of later enquirers has acquitted Warren Hastings of guilt. Personally there can be little doubt that he had done much to secure to the new subjects of Britain a just and peaceable government. What was hardest and most pitiless in his rule had been simply a carrying out of the system of administration which was native to India and which he found existing there. But such a system was alien from the new humanity of Englishmen; and few dared to vindicate Hastings when Burke in words of passionate earnestness moved for his impeachment. The great trial lingered on for years, and in the long run Hastings secured an acquittal. But the end at which the impeachment aimed had really been won. The attention, the sympathy of Englishmen had been drawn across distant seas to a race utterly strange to them; and the peasant of Cornwall or Cumberland had learned how to thrill at the suffering of a peasant of Bengal.

Even while the trial was going on a yet wider extension of English sympathy made itself felt. In the year which followed the adoption of free trade with France the new philanthropy allied itself with the religious movement created by the Wesleys in an attack on the Slave Trade. One of the profits which England bought by the triumphs of Marlborough was a right to a monopoly



THE "FOURTEEN STARS" TAVERN, BRISTOL.  
*Old drawing in British Museum.*

The  
Slave  
Trade



## SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT1783  
TO  
1793

of the slave trade between Africa and the Spanish dominions ; and it was England that had planted slavery in her American colonies and her West Indian islands. But the horrors and iniquity of the trade, the ruin and degradation of Africa which it brought about, the oppression of the negro himself, were now felt widely and

deeply. "After a conversation in the open air at the root of an old tree, just above the steep descent into the Vale of Keston," with the younger Pitt, his friend, William Wilberforce, whose position as a representative of the evangelical party gave weight to his advocacy of such a cause, resolved in 1788 to bring in a bill for the abolition of the slave trade. But the bill fell before the opposition of the Liverpool slave merchants and the general indifference of the House of Commons. The spirit of humanity which breathed through Pitt's policy had indeed to wrestle with diffi-



WILLIAM WILBERFORCE.  
*Monument in Westminster Abbey.*

culties at home and abroad ; and his efforts to sap the enmity of nation against nation by a freer intercourse encountered a foe even more fatal than English prejudice, in the very movement of which his measures formed a part. Across the Channel this movement was growing into a revolution which was to change the face of the world.

England  
and  
Europe

So far as England was concerned the Puritan resistance of the seventeenth century had in the end succeeded in checking the





THE FRUIT-BARROW.  
*After H. Walton.*

general tendency of the time to religious and political despotism. Since the Revolution of 1688 freedom of conscience and the people's right to govern itself through its representatives in Parliament had been practically established. Social equality had begun long before. Every man from the highest to the lowest was subject to, and protected by, the same law. The English aristocracy, though

SEC III  
THE  
SECOND  
PART  
1783  
TO  
1793

exercising a powerful influence on government, were possessed of few social privileges, and prevented from forming a separate class in the nation by the legal and social tradition which counted all save the eldest son of a noble house as commoners. No impassable line parted the gentry from the commercial classes, and these again possessed no privileges which could part them from the lower classes of the community. Public opinion, the general sense of educated Englishmen, had established itself after a short struggle as the dominant element in English government. But in all the other great states of Europe the wars of religion had left only the name of freedom. Government tended to a pure despotism. Privilege was supreme



"Old Chairs to mend."  
Wheatley, "Itinerant Trades of London, 1794-5."

SEC. III  
THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

in religion, in politics, in society. Society itself rested on a rigid division of classes from one another, which refused to the people at large any equal rights of justice or of industry. We have already seen how alien such a conception of national life was from the ideas which the wide diffusion of intelligence during the eighteenth century was spreading throughout Europe; and in almost

every country some enlightened rulers endeavoured by administrative reforms in some sort to satisfy the sense of wrong which was felt around them. The attempts of sovereigns like Frederick



"Strawberries, scarlet strawberries,"  
*Wheatley's "Trades."*



"Do you want any matches?"  
*Wheatley's "Trades."*

the Great in Prussia, and Joseph the Second in Austria and the Netherlands, were rivalled by the efforts of statesmen such as Turgot in France. It was in France indeed that the contrast between the actual state of society and the new ideas of public right was felt most keenly. Nowhere had the victory of the Crown been more complete. The aristocracy had been robbed of all share in public affairs; it enjoyed social privileges and exemption

from any contribution to the public burdens, without that sense of public duty which a governing class to some degree always





"Sweet China oranges."  
Wheatley's "Trades."

possesses. Guilds and monopolies fettered the industry of the trader and the merchant, and cut them off from the working classes, as the value attached to noble blood cut off both from the aristocracy.

If its political position indeed were compared with that of most of the countries round it, France stood high. Its government was less oppressive, its general wealth was larger and more evenly

SEC. III  
THE  
SECOND  
PART  
1783  
TO  
1793

State of  
France

diffused, there was a better administration of justice, and greater security for public order. Poor as its peasantry seemed to English

eyes, they were far above the peasants of Germany or Spain. Its middle class was the quickest and most intelligent in Europe. Under Lewis the Fifteenth opinion was practically free; and a literary class had sprung up which devoted itself with wonderful brilliancy and activity to popularizing the ideas of social and political justice which it learned from English writers, and in the case of Montesquieu and Voltaire from personal contact with English life. The moral conceptions of the time, its



"Knives, scissors and razors to grind."  
Wheatley's "Trades."



## SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

love of mankind, its sense of human brotherhood, its hatred of oppression, its pity for the guilty and the poor, its longing after a higher and nobler standard of life and action, were expressed by a crowd of writers, and above all by Rousseau, with a fire and eloquence which carried them to the heart of the people. But this new force of intelligence only jostled roughly with the social forms with which it found itself in contact. The

philosopher denounced the tyranny of the priesthood. The



"A new love song, only  $\frac{1}{2}$ d. apiece."  
*Wheatley's "Trades."*



"Hot spice gingerbread, smoaking hot."  
*Wheatley's "Trades."*

peasant grumbled at the lord's right to judge him in his courts and to exact feudal services from him. The merchant was galled by the trading restrictions and the heavy taxation. The country gentry rebelled against their exclusion from public life and from the government of the country. Its powerlessness to bring about any change at home turned all this new energy into sympathy with a struggle against tyranny abroad.

Public opinion forced France to ally itself with America in its

contest for liberty, and French volunteers under the Marquis de Lafayette joined Washington's army. But while the American war spread more widely throughout the nation the craving for freedom, it brought on the Government financial embarrassment from which it could only free itself by an appeal to the country at large. Lewis the Sixteenth resolved to summon the States-General, which had not met since the time of Richelieu, and to appeal to the nobles to waive their immunity from taxation. His resolve at once stirred into vigorous life every impulse and desire

SE III  
THE  
SIXTEENTH  
PART  
1783  
TO  
1793



MEDAL COMMEMORATING THE TAKING OF THE BASTILLE.

which had been seething in the minds of the people; and the States-General no sooner met at Versailles in May 1789 than the fabric of despotism and privilege began to crumble. A rising in Paris destroyed the Bastille, and the capture of this fortress was taken for the sign of a new æra of constitutional freedom in France and through Europe. Even in England men thrilled with a strange joy at the tidings of its fall. "How much is this the greatest event that ever happened in the world," Fox cried with a burst of enthusiasm, "and how much the best!"

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND

PITT

1738

TO

1793

Pitt and  
Russia

Pitt regarded the approach of France to sentiments of liberty which had long been familiar to England with greater coolness, but with no distrust. For the moment indeed his attention was distracted by an attack of madness which visited the King in 1788, and by the claim of a right to the Regency which was at once advanced by the Prince of Wales. The Prince belonged to the Whig party; and Fox, who was travelling in Italy, hurried home to support his claim, in full belief that the Prince's Regency would be followed by his own return to power. Pitt successfully resisted it on the constitutional ground that in such a case the right to choose a temporary regent, under what limitations it would, lay with Parliament; and a bill which conferred the Regency on the Prince, in accordance with this view, was already passing the Houses when the recovery of the King put an end to the long dispute. Foreign difficulties, too, absorbed Pitt's attention. Russia had risen into greatness under Catherine the Second; and Catherine had resolved from the first on the annexation of Poland, the expulsion of the Turks from Europe, and the setting up of a Russian throne at Constantinople. In her first aim she was baffled for the moment by Frederick the Great. She had already made herself virtually mistress of the whole of Poland, her armies occupied the kingdom, and she had seated a nominee of her own on its throne, when Frederick in union with the Emperor Joseph the Second forced her to admit Germany to a share of the spoil. If the Polish partition of 1773 brought the Russian frontier westward to the upper waters of the Dwina and the Dnieper, it gave Galicia to Maria Theresa, and West Prussia to Frederick himself. Foiled in her first aim, she waited for the realization of her second till the alliance between the two German powers was at an end through the resistance of Prussia to Joseph's schemes for the annexation of Bavaria, and till the death of Frederick removed her most watchful foe. Then in 1788 Joseph and the Empress joined hands for a partition of the Turkish Empire. But Prussia was still watchful, and England was no longer fettered as in 1773 by troubles with America. The friendship established by Chatham between the two countries, which had been suspended by Bute's treachery and all but destroyed during the Northern League of Neutral Powers, had been restored by Pitt through his co-operation

*League  
against  
Russia*



with Frederick's successor in the restoration of the Dutch Stat-  
holderate. Its political weight was now seen in an alliance of  
England, Prussia, and Holland in 1789 for the preservation of the  
Turkish Empire. A great European struggle seemed at hand;  
and in such a struggle the sympathy and aid of France was of the  
highest importance. But with the treaty the danger passed away.  
In the spring of 1790 Joseph died broken-hearted at the failure  
of his plans and the revolt of the Netherlands against his in-  
novations; and Austria practically withdrew from the war with  
the Turks.

Meanwhile in France things moved fast. By breaking down  
the division between its separate orders the States-General became

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

Pitt and  
France



MEDAL COMMEMORATING THE RETURN OF THE KING TO PARIS, 1789.

a National Assembly, which abolished the privileges of the  
provincial parliaments, of the nobles, and the Church. In October  
the mob of Paris marched on Versailles and forced the King to  
return with them to the capital; and a Constitution hastily put  
together was accepted by Lewis the Sixteenth in the stead of his  
old despotic power. To Pitt the tumult and disorder with which  
these great changes were wrought seemed transient matters. In

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

*England  
and the  
Revolution*

January 1790 he still believed that "the present convulsions in France must sooner or later culminate in general harmony and regular order," and that when her own freedom was established, "France would stand forth as one of the most brilliant powers of Europe." But the coolness and good-will with which Pitt looked on the Revolution was far from being universal in the nation at large. The cautious good sense of the bulk of Englishmen, their love of order and law, their distaste for violent changes and for abstract theories, as well as their reverence for the past, were fast



MEDAL COMMEMORATING THE "GENERAL CONFEDERATION," 1790.

rousing throughout the country a dislike of the revolutionary changes which were hurrying on across the Channel; and both the political sense and the political prejudice of the nation were being fired by the warnings of Edmund Burke. The fall of the Bastille, though it kindled enthusiasm in Fox, roused in Burke only distrust. "Whenever a separation is made between liberty and justice," he wrote a few weeks later, "neither is safe." The night of the fourth of August, when the privileges of every class were abolished, filled him with horror. He saw, and rightly saw, in it the critical moment which revealed the character of the Revolution,

and his part was taken at once. "The French," he cried in January, while Pitt was foretelling a glorious future for the new Constitution, "the French have shown themselves the ablest architects of ruin who have hitherto existed in the world. In a short space of time they have pulled to the ground their army, their navy, their commerce, their arts and their manufactures." But in Parliament Burke stood alone. The Whigs, though distrustfully, followed Fox in his applause of the Revolution. The Tories, yet more distrustfully, followed Pitt; and Pitt warmly expressed his sympathy with the constitutional government which was ruling France. At this moment indeed the revolutionary party gave a signal proof of its friendship for England. Irritated by an English settlement at Nootka Sound in California, Spain appealed to France for aid in accordance with the Family Compact: and the French Ministry, with a party at its back which believed things had gone far enough, resolved on a war as the best means of checking the progress of the Revolution and restoring the power of the Crown. The revolutionary party naturally opposed this design; after a bitter struggle the right of declaring war, save with the sanction of the Assembly, was taken from the King; and all danger of hostilities passed away. "The French Government," Pitt asserted, "was bent on cultivating the most unbounded friendship for Great Britain," and he saw no reason in its revolutionary changes why Britain should not return the friendship of France. He was convinced that nothing but the joint action of France and England would in the end arrest the troubles of Eastern Europe. His intervention foiled for the moment a fresh effort of Prussia to rob Poland of Dantzic and Thorn. But though Russia was still pressing Turkey hard, a Russian war was so unpopular in England that a hostile vote in Parliament forced Pitt to discontinue his armaments; and a fresh union of Austria and Prussia, which promised at this juncture to bring about a close of the Turkish struggle, promised also a fresh attack on the independence of Poland.

But while Pitt was pleading for friendship between the two countries, Burke was resolved to make friendship impossible. He had long ceased, indeed, to have any hold over the House of Commons. The eloquence which had vied with that of Chatham

SEC III  
THE  
SPANISH  
PITTY  
1783  
1793

*Nootka  
Sound*

Burke  
and the  
Revolution



SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

during the discussions on the Stamp Act had become distasteful to the bulk of its members. The length of his speeches, the profound and philosophical character of his argument, the splendour and often the extravagance of his illustrations, his passionate earnestness, his want of temper and discretion, wearied and perplexed the squires and merchants about him. He was known at last as "the dinner-bell of the House," so rapidly did its benches thin at his rising. For a time his energies found scope in the impeachment of Hastings; and the grandeur of his appeals to the justice of England hushed detraction. But with the close of the impeachment his repute had again fallen; and the approach of old age, for he was now past sixty, seemed to counsel retirement from an assembly where he stood unpopular and alone. But age and disappointment and loneliness were all forgotten as Burke saw rising across the Channel the embodiment of all that he hated—a Revolution founded on scorn of the past, and threatening with ruin the whole social fabric which the past had reared; the ordered structure of classes and ranks crumbling before a doctrine of social equality; a State rudely demolished and reconstituted; a Church and a Nobility swept away in a night. Against the enthusiasm of what he rightly saw to be a new political religion he resolved to rouse the enthusiasm of the old. He was at once a great orator and a great writer; and now that the House was deaf to his voice, he appealed to the country by his pen. The "Reflections on the French Revolution" which he published in October 1790 not only denounced the acts of rashness and violence which sullied the great change that France had wrought, but the very principles from which the change had sprung. Burke's deep sense of the need of social order, of the value of that continuity in human affairs "without which men would become like flies in a summer," blinded him to all but the faith in mere rebellion, and the yet sillier faith in mere novelty, which disguised a real nobleness of aim and temper even in the most ardent of the revolutionists. He would see no abuses in the past, now that it had fallen, or anything but the ruin of society in the future. He preached a crusade against men whom he regarded as the foes of religion and civilization, and called on the armies of Europe to put down

a Revolution whose principles threatened every state with destruction.

SEC. III

THE

SECOND

PITT

1783

TO

1793

Pitt

and the  
Revolution

The great obstacle to such a crusade was Pitt : and one of the grandest outbursts of the "Reflections" closed with a bitter taunt at the Minister's policy. "The age of chivalry," Burke cried, "is gone ; that of sophisters, economists, and calculators has succeeded, and the glory of Europe is extinguished for ever." But neither taunt nor invective moved Pitt from his course. At the moment when the "Reflections" appeared he gave a fresh assurance to France of his resolve to have nothing to do with any crusade against the Revolution. "This country," he wrote, "means to persevere in the neutrality hitherto scrupulously observed with respect to the internal dissensions of France ; and from which it will never depart unless the conduct held there makes it indispensable as an act of self-defence." So far indeed was he from sharing the reactionary panic which was spreading around him that he chose this time for supporting Fox in his Libel Act, a measure which, by transferring the decision on what was libellous in any publication from the judge to the jury, completed the freedom of the press ; and himself passed a Bill which, though little noticed among the storms of the time, was one of the noblest of his achievements. He boldly put aside the dread which had been roused by the American war, that the gift of self-government to our colonies would serve only as a step towards their secession from the mother-country, and established a House of Assembly and a Council in the two Canadas. "I am convinced," said Fox (who, however, differed from Pitt as to the nature of the Constitution to be given to Canada), "that the only method of retaining distant colonies with advantage is to enable them to govern themselves ;" and the policy of the one statesman and the foresight of the other have been justified by the later history of our dependencies. Nor had Burke better success with his own party. Fox remained an ardent lover of the Revolution, and answered a fresh attack of Burke upon it with more than usual warmth. A close affection had bound till now the two men together ; but the fanaticism of Burke declared it at an end. "There is no loss of friendship," Fox exclaimed, with a sudden burst of tears. "There is !" Burke repeated. "I know the price

Constitu-  
tion  
given to  
Canada  
1791





of my conduct. Our friendship is at an end." Within the walls of Parliament Burke stood utterly alone. His "Appeal from the New to the Old Whigs," in June 1791, failed to detach a follower from Fox. Pitt coldly counselled him rather to praise the English Constitution than to rail at the French. "I have made many enemies and few friends," Burke wrote sadly to the French princes who had fled from their country and were gathering in arms at Coblenz, "by the part I have taken." But the opinion of the people was slowly drifting to his side. A sale of thirty thousand copies showed that the "Reflections" echoed the general sentiment of Englishmen. The mood of England indeed at this moment was unfavourable to any fair appreciation of the Revolution across the Channel. Her temper was above all industrial. Men who were working hard and fast growing rich, who had the narrow and practical turn of men of business, looked angrily at this sudden disturbance of order, this restless and vague activity, these rhetorical appeals to human feeling, these abstract and often empty theories. In England it was a time of political content and social well-being, of steady economic progress, and of a powerful religious revival; and an insular lack of imaginative interest in other races hindered men from seeing that every element of this content, of this order, of this peaceful and harmonious progress, of this reconciliation of society and religion was wanting abroad. The sympathy which the Revolution had roused at first among Englishmen died away before the violence of its legislative changes, and the growing anarchy of the country. Sympathy in fact was soon limited to a few groups of reformers who gathered in "Constitutional Clubs," and whose reckless language quickened the national reaction. But in spite of Burke's appeals and the cries of the nobles who had fled from France and longed only to march against their country, Europe held back from war, and Pitt preserved his attitude of neutrality, though with a greater appearance of reserve.

SEC. III  
THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

*Burke's  
success  
with the  
country*

So anxious, in fact, did the aspect of affairs in the East make Pitt for the restoration of tranquillity in France, that he foiled a plan which its emigrant nobles had formed for a descent on the French coast, and declared formally at Vienna that England would remain absolutely neutral should hostilities arise between

Confer-  
ence of  
Pillnitz

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

*Coalition  
against  
France*

France and the Emperor. But the Emperor was as anxious to avoid a French war as Pitt himself. Though Catherine, now her strife with Turkey was over, wished to plunge the two German Powers into a struggle with the Revolution which would leave her free to annex Poland single-handed, neither Leopold nor Prussia would tie their hands by such a contest. The flight of Lewis the Sixteenth from Paris in June 1791 brought Europe for a moment to the verge of war; but he was intercepted and brought back; and for a while the danger seemed to incline the revolutionists in France to greater moderation. Lewis too not only accepted the Constitution, but pleaded earnestly with the Emperor against any armed intervention as certain to bring ruin to his throne. In their conference at Pillnitz therefore, in August, Leopold and the King of Prussia contented themselves with a vague declaration inviting the European powers to co-operate in restoring a sound form of government in France, availed themselves of England's neutrality to refuse all military aid to the French princes, and dealt simply with the affairs of Poland. But the peace they desired soon became impossible. The Constitutional Royalists in France availed themselves of the irritation caused by the Declaration of Pillnitz to rouse again the cry for a war which, as they hoped, would give strength to the throne. The more violent revolutionists, or Jacobins, on the other hand, under the influence of the "Girondists," or deputies from the south of France, whose aim was a republic, and who saw in a great national struggle a means of overthrowing the monarchy, decided in spite of the opposition of their leader, Robespierre, on a contest with the Emperor. Both parties united to demand the breaking up of an army which the emigrant princes had formed on the Rhine; and though Leopold assented to this demand, France declared war against his successor, Francis, in April 1792.

Pitt's  
Struggle  
for Peace

Misled by their belief in a revolutionary enthusiasm in England, the French had hoped for her alliance in this war; and they were astonished and indignant at Pitt's resolve to stand apart from the struggle. It was in vain that Pitt strove to allay this irritation by demanding only that Holland should remain untouched, and promising neutrality even though Belgium should be occupied by a French army, or that he strengthened these

pledges by a reduction of military forces, and by bringing forward a peace-budget which rested on a large remission of taxation. The revolutionists still clung to the hope of England's aid in the emancipation of Europe, but they came now to believe that England must itself be emancipated before such an aid could be given. Their first work therefore they held to be the bringing about a revolution in England which might free the people from the aristocracy which held it down, and which oppressed, as they believed, great peoples beyond the bounds of England itself. To rouse India, to rouse Ireland to a struggle which should shake off the English yoke, became necessary steps to the establishment of freedom in England. From this moment therefore French agents were busy "sowing the revolution" in each quarter. In Ireland they entered into communication with the United Irishmen. In India they appeared at the courts of the native princes. In England itself they strove through the Constitutional Clubs to rouse the same spirit which they had roused in France; and the French envoy, Chauvelin, protested warmly against a proclamation which denounced this correspondence as seditious. The effect of these revolutionary efforts on the friends of the Revolution was seen in a declaration which they wrested from Fox, that at such a moment even the discussion of parliamentary reform was inexpedient. Meanwhile Burke was working hard, in writings whose extravagance of style was forgotten in their intensity of feeling, to spread alarm throughout Europe. He had from the first encouraged the emigrant princes to take arms, and sent his son to join them at Coblenz. "Be alarmists," he wrote to them; "diffuse terror!" But the royalist terror which he sowed had roused a revolutionary terror in France itself. At the threat of war against the Emperor the two German Courts had drawn together, and reluctantly abandoning all hope of peace with France, gathered eighty thousand men under the Duke of Brunswick, and advanced slowly in August on the Meuse. France, though she had forced on the struggle, was really almost defenceless; her forces in Belgium broke at the first shock of arms into shameful rout; and the panic spreading from the army to the nation at large, took violent and horrible forms. At the first news of Brunswick's advance the mob of Paris broke into the Tuileries on the 10th of

SEC. III

THE  
SECOND  
PITT

1783

TO

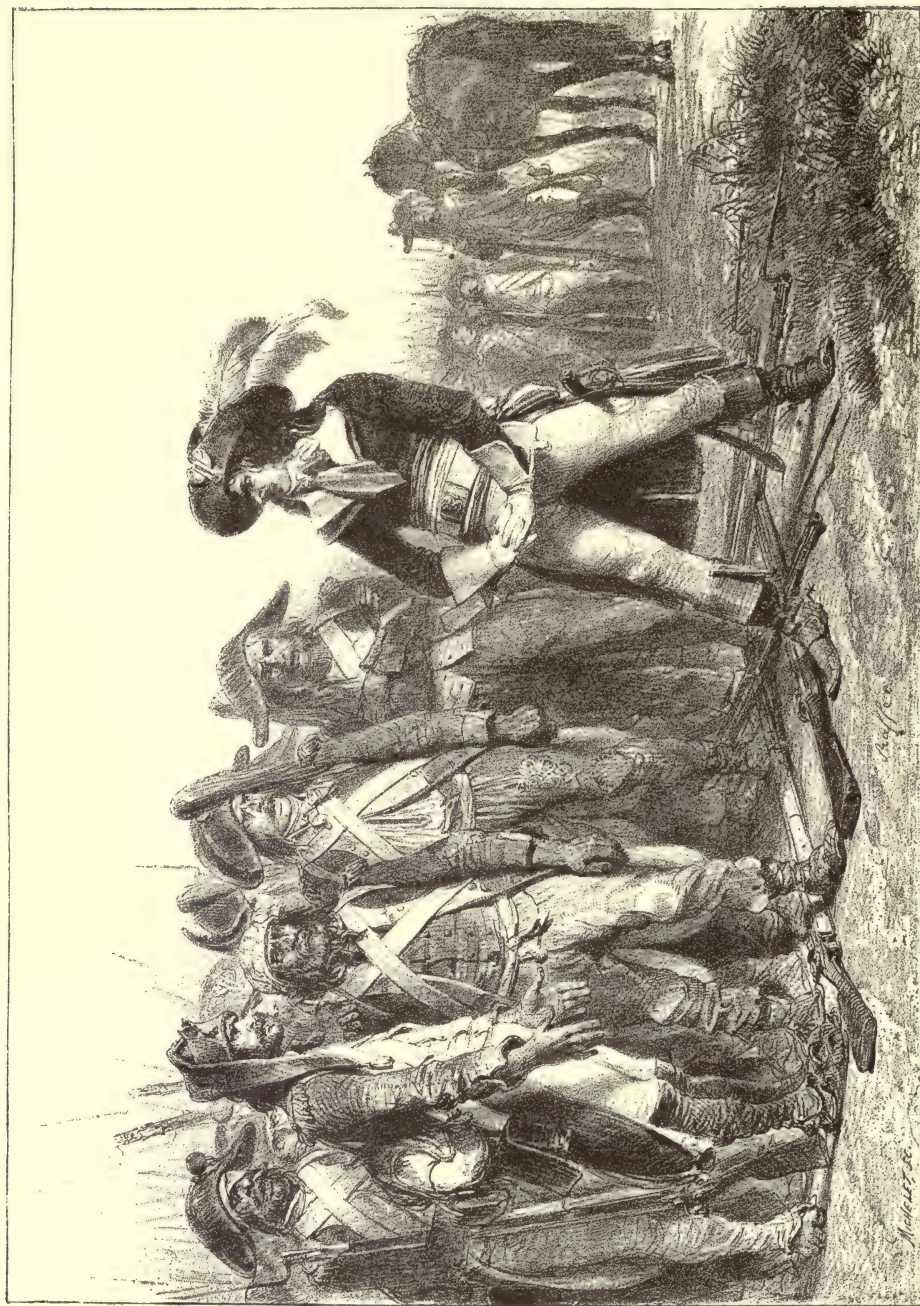
1793

1792

*The  
Coalition  
attacks  
France*

1792





"DE QUOI VOUS PLAIGNEZ-VOUS?"  
After Raftet.

August; and at its demand Lewis, who had taken refuge in the Assembly, was suspended from his office and imprisoned in the Temple. In September, while General Dumouriez by boldness and adroit negotiations arrested the progress of the allies in the defiles of the Argonne, bodies of paid murderers butchered the royalist prisoners who crowded the gaols of Paris, with a view of influencing the elections to a new Convention which met to proclaim the abolition of royalty. The retreat of the Prussian army, whose numbers had been reduced by disease till an advance on Paris became impossible, and a brilliant victory won by Dumouriez at Jemappes which laid the Netherlands at his feet, turned the panic of the French into a wild self-confidence. In November the Convention decreed that France offered the aid of her soldiers to all nations who would strive for freedom. "All Governments are our enemies," said its President; "all peoples are our allies." In the teeth of treaties signed only two years before, and of the stipulation made by England when it pledged itself to neutrality, the French Government resolved to attack Holland, and ordered its generals to enforce by arms the opening of the Scheldt.

To do this was to force England into war. Public opinion was pressing harder day by day upon Pitt. The horror of the massacres of September, the hideous despotism of the Parisian mob, had done more to estrange England from the Revolution than all the eloquence of Burke. But even while withdrawing our Minister from Paris on the imprisonment of the King, Pitt clung stubbornly to the hope of peace. His hope was to bring the war to an end through English mediation, and to "leave France, which I believe is the best way, to arrange its own internal affairs as it can." No hour of Pitt's life is so great as the hour when he stood alone in England, and refused to bow to the growing cry of the nation for war. Even the news of the September massacres could only force from him a hope that France might abstain from any war of conquest, and escape from its social anarchy. In October the French agent in England reported that Pitt was about to recognize the Republic. At the opening of November he still pressed on Holland a steady neutrality. It was France, and not England, which at last wrenched from his grasp the peace to

SEC. III  
THE  
SECOND  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793

France  
declares  
War on  
England



# PROCLAMATION

D U

## CONSEIL EXÉCUTIF

### PROVISOIRE.

*EXTRAIT des Registres du Conseil, du 20  
Janvier 1793, l'an second de la République.*

LE Conseil exécutif provisoire délibérant sur les mesures à prendre pour l'exécution du décret de la Convention nationale, des 15, 17, 19 & 20 janvier 1793, arrête les dispositions suivantes :

1.<sup>o</sup> L'exécution du jugement de Louis Capet se fera demain lundi 21.

2.<sup>o</sup> Le lieu de l'exécution sera la *Place de la Révolution*, ci-devant *Louis XV*, entre le pied-d'escal & les *Champs-élysées*.

3.<sup>o</sup> Louis Capet partira du Temple à huit heures du matin, de manière que l'exécution puisse être faite à midi.

4.<sup>o</sup> Des Commissaires du Département de Paris,

des Commissaires de la Municipalité, deux membres du Tribunal criminel assisteront à l'exécution ; le Secrétaire-greffier de ce Tribunal en dressera le procès-verbal, & lesdits Commissaires & Membres du Tribunal, aussitôt après l'exécution consommée, viendront en rendre compte au Conseil, lequel restera en séance permanente pendant toute cette journée.

*Le Conseil exécutif provisoire.*

ROLAND, CLAVIERE, MONGE, LEBRUN, GARAT,  
PASCHE,

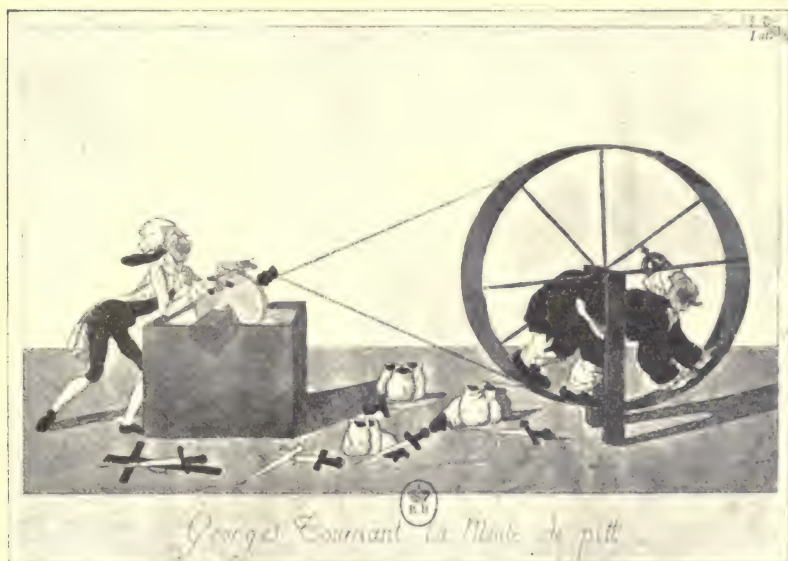
*Par le Conseil, GROUVELLE.*

A PARIS, DE L'IMPRIMERIE NATIONALE EXÉCUTIVE DU LOUVRE. 1793.

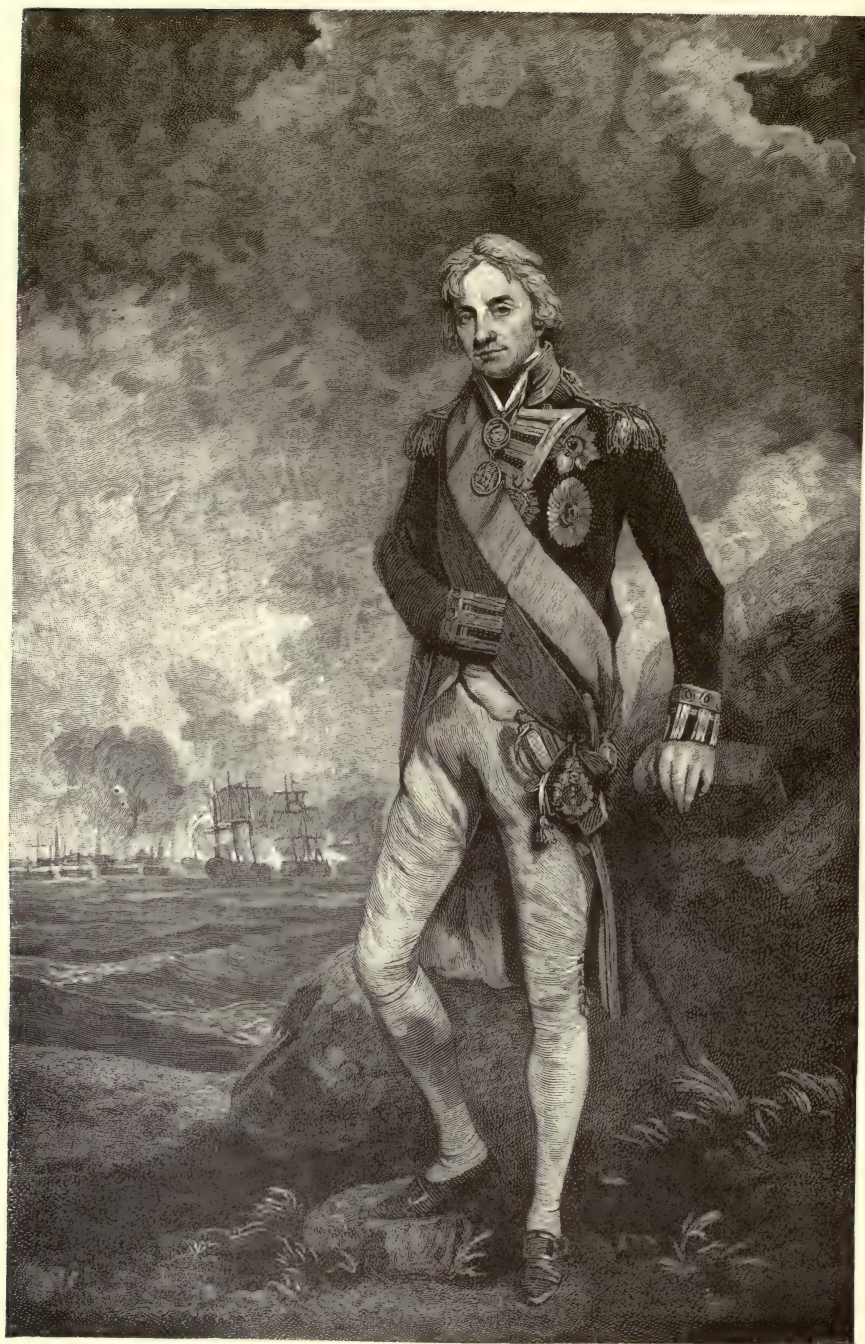


which he clung so desperately. The decree of the Convention and the attack on the Dutch left him no choice but war, for it was impossible for England to endure a French fleet at Antwerp, or to desert allies like the United Provinces. But even in December the news of the approaching partition of Poland nerved him to a last struggle for peace; he offered to aid Austria in acquiring Bavaria if she would make terms with France, and pledged himself to France to abstain from war if that power would cease from violating the independence of her neighbour states. But across the Channel his moderation was only taken for fear, while in England the general mourning which followed on the news of the French King's execution showed the growing ardour for the contest. The rejection of his last offers indeed made a contest inevitable. Both sides ceased from diplomatic communications, and in February, 1793, France issued her Declaration of War.

SE. 161  
THE  
S. 161  
PITT  
1783  
TO  
1793



FRENCH SATIRE ON GEORGE III. AND PITT.  
*Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris.*



HORATIO NELSON.  
*Portrait by J. Hoppner, in St. James's Palace.*



## Section IV.—The War with France, 1793—1815

SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

[*Authorities.*—To those mentioned before we may add Moore's *Life of Sheridan*; the *Lives of Lord Castlereagh, Lord Eldon, and Lord Sidmouth*; *Romilly's Memoirs*; *Lord Cornwallis's Correspondence*; *Mr. Yonge's Life of Lord Liverpool*; the *Diaries and Correspondence of Lord Malmesbury, Lord Colchester, and Lord Auckland*. For the general history of England at this time, see Alison's "*History of Europe*;" for its military history, Sir William Napier's "*History of the Peninsular War*."]

From the moment when France declared war against England Pitt's power was at an end. His pride, his immoveable firmness, and the general confidence of the nation still kept him at the head of affairs; but he could do little save drift along with a tide of popular feeling which he never fully understood. The very excellences of his character unfitted him for the conduct of a war. He was in fact a Peace Minister, forced into war by a panic and enthusiasm which he shared in a very small degree, and unaided by his father's gift of at once entering into the sympathies and passions around him, and of rousing passions and sympathies in return. Around him the country broke out in a fit of frenzy and alarm which rivalled the passion and panic over-sea. The confidence of France in its illusions as to opinion in England deluded for the moment even Englishmen themselves. The partisans of Republicanism were in reality but a few handfuls of men who played at gathering Conventions, and at calling themselves citizens and patriots, in childish imitation of what was going on across the Channel. But in the mass of Englishmen the dread of revolution passed for the hour into sheer panic. Even the bulk of the Whig party forsook Fox when he still proclaimed his faith in France and the Revolution. The "Old Whigs," as they called themselves, with the Duke of Portland, Earls Spencer and Fitzwilliam, and

Pitt and  
the War



ENGLISH SAILOR, 1779.  
*Contemporary Print.*

*The  
English  
panic*



SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

Mr. Windham at their head, followed Burke in giving their adhesion to the Government. Pitt himself, though little touched by the political reaction around him, was shaken by the dream of social danger, and believed in the existence of "thousands of bandits," who were ready to rise against the throne, to plunder every landlord, and to sack London. "Paine is no fool," he said to his niece, who quoted to him a passage from the "Rights of Man," in which that author had vindicated the principles of the Revolution; "he is perhaps right; but if I did what he wants, I should have thousands of bandits on my hands to-morrow, and



London burnt." It was this sense of social danger which alone reconciled him to the war. Bitter as the need of the struggle which was forced upon England was to him, he accepted it with the less reluctance that war, as he trusted, would check the progress of "French principles" in England itself. The worst issue of this panic was the series of legislative measures in which it found expression. The Habeas Corpus Act was suspended, a bill against seditious assemblies restricted the liberty of public meeting and a wider scope was given to the Statute of Treasons. Prosecution after prosecution was directed against the Press; the sermons of some dissenting ministers were indicted as seditious;

Results  
of the  
panic

and the conventions of sympathizers with France were roughly broken up. The worst excesses of the panic were witnessed in Scotland, where young Whigs, whose only offence was an advocacy of Parliamentary reform, were sentenced to transportation, and where a brutal judge openly expressed his regret that the practice of torture in seditious cases should have fallen into disuse. The panic indeed soon passed away for sheer want of material to feed on. In 1794 the leaders of the Corresponding Society, a body which professed sympathy with France, were brought to trial on a charge of high treason, but their acquittal proved that all active terror was over. Save for occasional riots, to which the poor were goaded by sheer want of bread, no social disturbance troubled England through the twenty years of the war. But the blind reaction against all reform which had sprung from the panic lasted on when the panic was forgotten.

SECT. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



For nearly a quarter of a century it was hard to get a hearing for any measure which threatened change to an existing institution, beneficial though the change might be. Even the philanthropic movement which so nobly characterized the time found itself checked and hampered by the dread of revolution.

At first indeed all seemed to go ill for France. She was girt in by a ring of enemies : the Empire, Austria, Prussia, Sardinia, Spain, and England were leagued in arms against her ; and their efforts were seconded by civil war. The peasants of Poitou and Brittany rose

France  
and the  
Coalition

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

in revolt against the government at Paris, while Marseilles and Lyons were driven into insurrection by the violent leaders who now seized on power in the capital. The French armies were driven back from the Netherlands when ten thousand English soldiers, under the Duke of York, joined the Austrians in Flanders in 1793. But the chance of crushing the Revolution was lost by the greed of the two German powers. Russia, as Pitt had foreseen, was now free to carry out her schemes in the East; and Austria and Prussia saw themselves forced, in the interest of a balance of power, to share in her annexations at the cost of Poland. But



NAPOLÉON BONAPARTE.

*From an engraving by Fiesinger of a picture by Guérin.*

this new division of Poland would have become impossible had France been enabled by a restoration of its monarchy to take up again its natural position in Europe, and to accept the alliance which Pitt would in such a case have offered her. The policy of the German courts therefore was to prolong an anarchy which left them free for the moment to crush Poland: and the allied armies which might have marched upon Paris were purposely frittered away in sieges in the Netherlands and the Rhine. Such a policy gave France time to recover from the shock of her



disasters. Whatever were the crimes and tyranny of her leaders, France felt in spite of them the value of the Revolution, and rallied enthusiastically to its support. The revolts in the West and South were crushed. The Spanish invaders were held at bay at the foot of the Pyrenees, and the Piedmontese were driven from Nice and Savoy. The great port of Toulon, which called for foreign aid against the Government of Paris, and admitted an English garrison within its walls, was driven to surrender by measures counselled by a young artillery officer from Corsica, Napoleon Buonaparte. At the opening of 1794 a victory at Fleurus which again made the French masters of the Netherlands showed that the tide had turned. France was united within by the cessation of the Terror and of the tyranny of the Jacobins, while on every border victory followed the gigantic efforts with which she met the coalition against her. Spain sued for peace; Prussia withdrew her armies from the Rhine; the Sardinians were driven back from the Maritime Alps; the Rhine provinces were wrested from the Austrians; and before the year ended Holland was lost. Pichegru crossed the Waal in mid-winter with an overwhelming force, and the wretched remnant of ten thousand men who had followed the Duke of York to the Netherlands, thinned by disease and by the hardships of retreat, re-embarked for England.

The victories of France broke up the confederacy which had threatened it with destruction. The Batavian republic which Pichegru had set up after his conquest of Holland was now an ally of France. Prussia bought peace by the cession of her possessions west of the Rhine. Peace with Spain followed in the summer, while Sweden and the Protestant cantons of Switzerland recognized the Republic. In France itself discord came well-nigh to an end. The fresh severities against the ultra-republicans which followed on the establishment of a Directory indicated the moderate character of the new government, and Pitt seized on this change in the temper of the French government as giving an opening for peace. Pitt himself was sick of the strife. England had maintained indeed her naval supremacy. The triumphs of her seamen were in strange contrast with her weakness on land; and at the outset of the contest, in 1794, the French fleet was defeated off Brest by Lord Howe in a victory which bore the

SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

*Revival  
of France*

Break up  
of the  
Coalition

1795



"THE GLORIOUS FIRST OF JUNE."  
*From engraving by T. Medland of a picture by R. Cleavelly, R.N.*



name of the day on which it was won, the First of June. Her colonial gains too had been considerable. Most of the West Indian islands, which had been held by France, and the far more valuable settlements of the Dutch, the Cape of Good Hope, Ceylon, and the famous Spice Islands of the Malaccas and Java had been transferred to the British Crown. But Pitt was without means of efficiently carrying on the war. The army was small and without military experience, while its leaders were utterly incapable. "We have no General," wrote Lord Grenville, "but some old woman in a red riband." Wretched too as had been the conduct of the war, its cost was already terrible. If England was without soldiers, she had wealth, and Pitt had been forced to turn her wealth into an engine of war. He became the paymaster of the coalition, and his subsidies kept the allied armies in the field. But the immense loans which these called for, and the quick growth of expenditure, undid all his financial reforms. Taxation, which had reached its lowest point under Pitt's peace administration, mounted to a height undreamt of before. The public debt rose by leaps and bounds. In three years nearly eighty millions had been added to it.

SEC. IV  
—  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
—

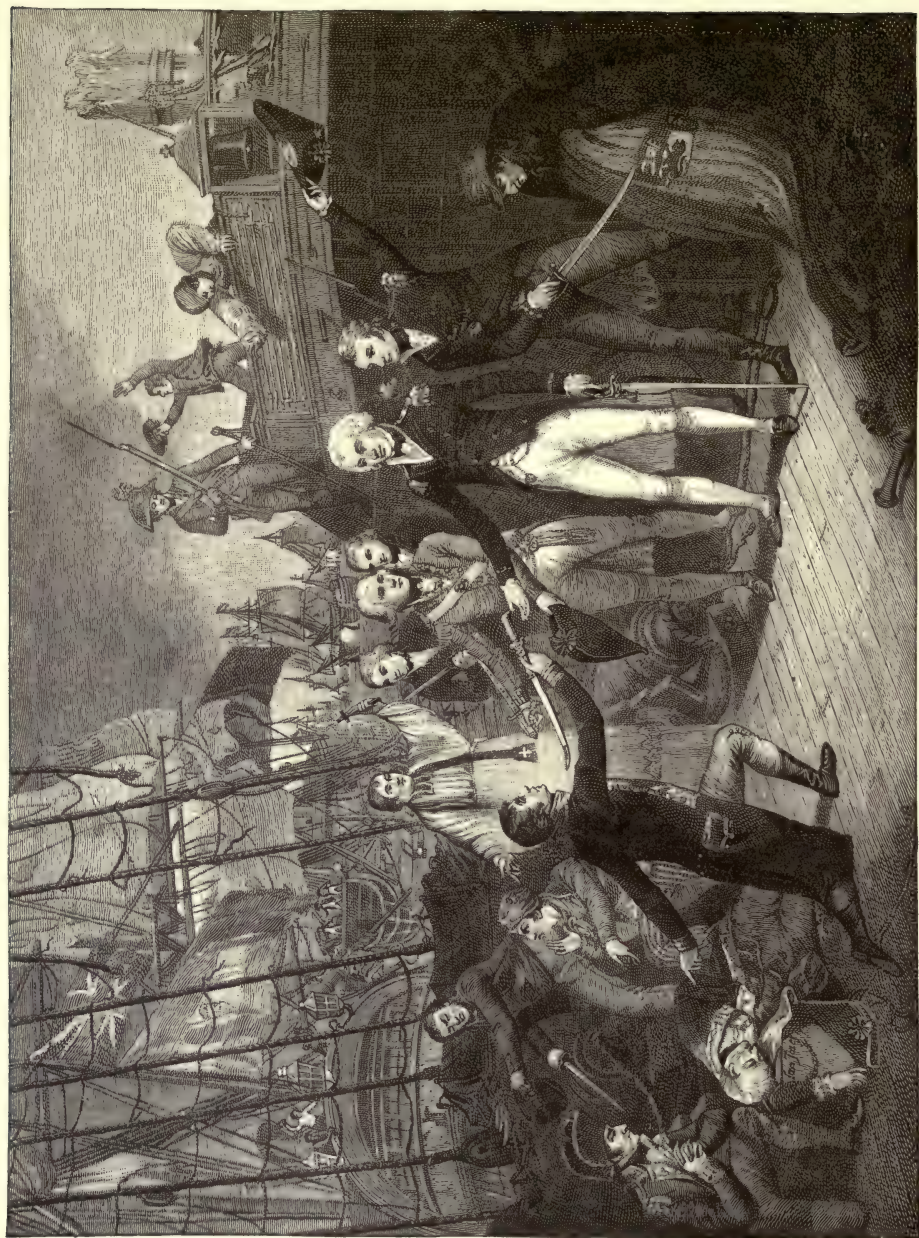
But though the ruin of his financial hopes, and his keen sense of the European dangers which the contest involved, made Pitt earnest to close the struggle with the Revolution, he stood almost alone in his longings for peace. The nation at large was still ardent for war, and its ardour was fired by Burke in his "Letters on a Regicide Peace," the last outcry of that fanaticism which had done so much to plunge the world in blood. Nor was France less ardent for war than England. At the moment when Pitt sought to open negotiations, her victories had roused hopes of wider conquests, and though General Moreau was foiled in a march on Vienna, the wonderful successes of Napoleon Buonaparte, who now took the command of the army of the Alps, laid Piedmont at her feet. Lombardy was soon in the hands of the French, the Duchies south of the Po pillaged, and the Pope driven to purchase an armistice. Fresh victories enabled Buonaparte to wring a peace from Austria in the treaty of Campo Formio, which not only gave France the Ionian Islands, a part of the old territory of Venice, as well as the Netherlands and the whole left bank of the Rhine, but

Progress  
of the  
War

1796

Oct. 1797





NELSON RECEIVING THE SURRENDER OF THE SPANISH ADMIRAL AT CAPE ST. VINCENT.

*Picture by D. Orme, 1800*

united Lombardy with the Duchies south of the Po, and the Papal States as far as the Rubicon, into a "Cisalpine Republic," which was absolutely beneath her control. The withdrawal of Austria left France without an enemy on the Continent, and England without an ally. The stress of the war was pressing more heavily on her every day. The alarm of a French invasion of Ireland brought about a suspension of specie payments on the part of the Bank. A mutiny in the fleet was suppressed with difficulty. It was in this darkest hour of the struggle that Burke passed away, protesting to the last against the peace which, in spite of his previous failure, Pitt tried in 1797 to negotiate at Lille. Peace seemed more needful to him than ever; for the naval supremacy of

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



FLAG OF THE "NIGER" DURING MUTINY AT THE NORE.  
*United Service Museum.*

Britain was threatened by a coalition such as had all but crushed her in the American war. Again the Dutch and Spanish fleets were allied with the fleets of France, and if they gained command of the Channel, it would enable France to send overwhelming forces in aid of the rising which was planned in Ireland. But the danger had hardly threatened when it was dispelled by two great victories. When in 1797 the Spanish fleet put out to sea, it was attacked by Admiral Jervis off Cape St. Vincent and driven back to Cadiz with the loss of four of its finest vessels; while the Dutch fleet from the Texel, which was to protect a French force in its descent upon Ireland, was met by a far larger fleet under Admiral Duncan, and almost annihilated in a battle off Camperdown, after

*Cape St.  
Vincent  
Feb. 14*





ONORE FORT AFTER SIEGE IN 1783.  
*Forbes, "Oriental Memoirs."*



an obstinate struggle which showed the Hollanders still worthy of their old renown. The ruin of its hopes in the battle of Camperdown drove Ireland to a rising of despair ; but the revolt was crushed by the defeat of the insurgents at Vinegar Hill in May, 1798, and the surrender of General Humbert, who landed in August with a French force. Of the threefold attack on which the Directory relied, two parts had now broken down. England still held the seas, and the insurrection in Ireland had failed. The next year saw the crowning victory of the Nile. The genius of Buonaparte had seized on the schemes for a rising in India, where Tippoo Sahib, the successor of Hyder Ali in Mysore, had vowed to drive the English from the south ; and he laid before the Directory a plan for the conquest of Egypt as a preliminary to a campaign in Southern India.

In 1798 he landed in Egypt ; and its conquest was rapid and complete. But the thirteen men - of - war which had escorted his expedition were found by Admiral Nelson in Aboukir Bay, moored close to the coast in a line guarded at either end by gun-boats and batteries. Nelson resolved to thrust his own ships between the French and the shore ; his flagship led the way ; and after a terrible fight of twelve hours, nine of the French vessels were captured and destroyed, two were burnt, and five thousand French seamen were killed or made prisoners. All communication between France and Buonaparte's army was cut off ; and his hopes of making Egypt a starting-point for the conquest of India fell at a blow.

Freed from the dangers that threatened her rule in Ireland and in India, and mistress of the seas, England was free to attack France ; and in such an attack she was aided at this moment by the temper of the European powers, and the ceaseless aggressions of France. Russia formed a close alliance with Austria ; and it was with renewed hope that Pitt lavished subsidies on the two

SEC. IV

THE  
WAR OF 18  
1793  
1815

*Camperdown*  
Oct. 11



MECHANICAL TIGER MADE FOR TIPPPOO SULTAN.  
*India Museum.*

*Battle of the Nile*  
Aug. 1,  
1798

The  
Peace of  
Luneville

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

allies. A union of the Russian and Austrian armies drove the French back again across the Alps and the Rhine; but the stubborn energy of General Massena enabled his soldiers to hold their ground in Switzerland; and the attempt of a united force of Russians and English to wrest Holland from its French masters was successfully repulsed. In the East, however, England was more successful. Foiled in his dreams of Indian conquests, Buonaparte conceived the design of the conquest of Syria, and of the creation of an army among its warlike mountaineers, with which he might march upon Constantinople or India at his will. But Acre, the key of Syria, was stubbornly held by the Turks, the French battering train was captured at sea by an English captain,



MEDAL COMMEMORATING BATTLE OF MARENGO.

Sir Sidney Smith, whose seamen aided in the defence of the place, and the besiegers were forced to fall back upon Egypt. The French general despairing of success left his army and returned to France. His arrival in Paris was soon followed by the overthrow of the Directors. Three consuls took their place; but under the name of First Consul Buonaparte became in effect sole ruler of the country. His energy at once changed the whole face of European affairs. The offers of peace which he made to England and Austria were intended to do little more than to shake the coalition, and gain breathing time for the organization of a new force which was gathering in secrecy at Dijon, while Moreau with the army of the Rhine pushed again along the Danube. The First Consul crossed the Saint Bernard in 1800, and a victory at Marengo

Nov. 10,  
1799

June 14,  
1800

forced the Austrians to surrender Lombardy; while a truce arrested the march of Moreau, who had captured Munich and was pushing on to Vienna. On the resumption of the war in the autumn the Austrians were driven back on Vienna; and Moreau crushed their army on the Iser in the victory of Hohenlinden. In February, 1801, the Continental War was brought suddenly to an end by the Peace of Luneville.

It was but a few months before the close of the war that Pitt brought about the Union of Ireland with England. The history of Ireland, during the fifty years that followed its conquest by William the Third, is one which no Englishman can recall without shame. After the surrender of Limerick every Catholic Irishman, and there were five Irish Catholics to every Irish Protestant, was treated as a stranger and a foreigner in his own country. The House of Lords, the House of Commons, the magistracy, all corporate offices in towns, all ranks in the army, the bench, the bar, the whole administration of government or justice, were closed against Catholics. The very right of voting for their representatives in Parliament was denied them. Few Catholic landowners had been left by the sweeping confiscations which had followed the successive revolts of the island, and oppressive laws forced even these few with scant exceptions to profess Protestantism. Necessity, indeed, had brought about a practical toleration of their religion and their worship; but in all social and political matters the native Catholics, in other words the immense majority of the people of Ireland, were simply hewers of wood and drawers of water to their Protestant masters, who looked on them-

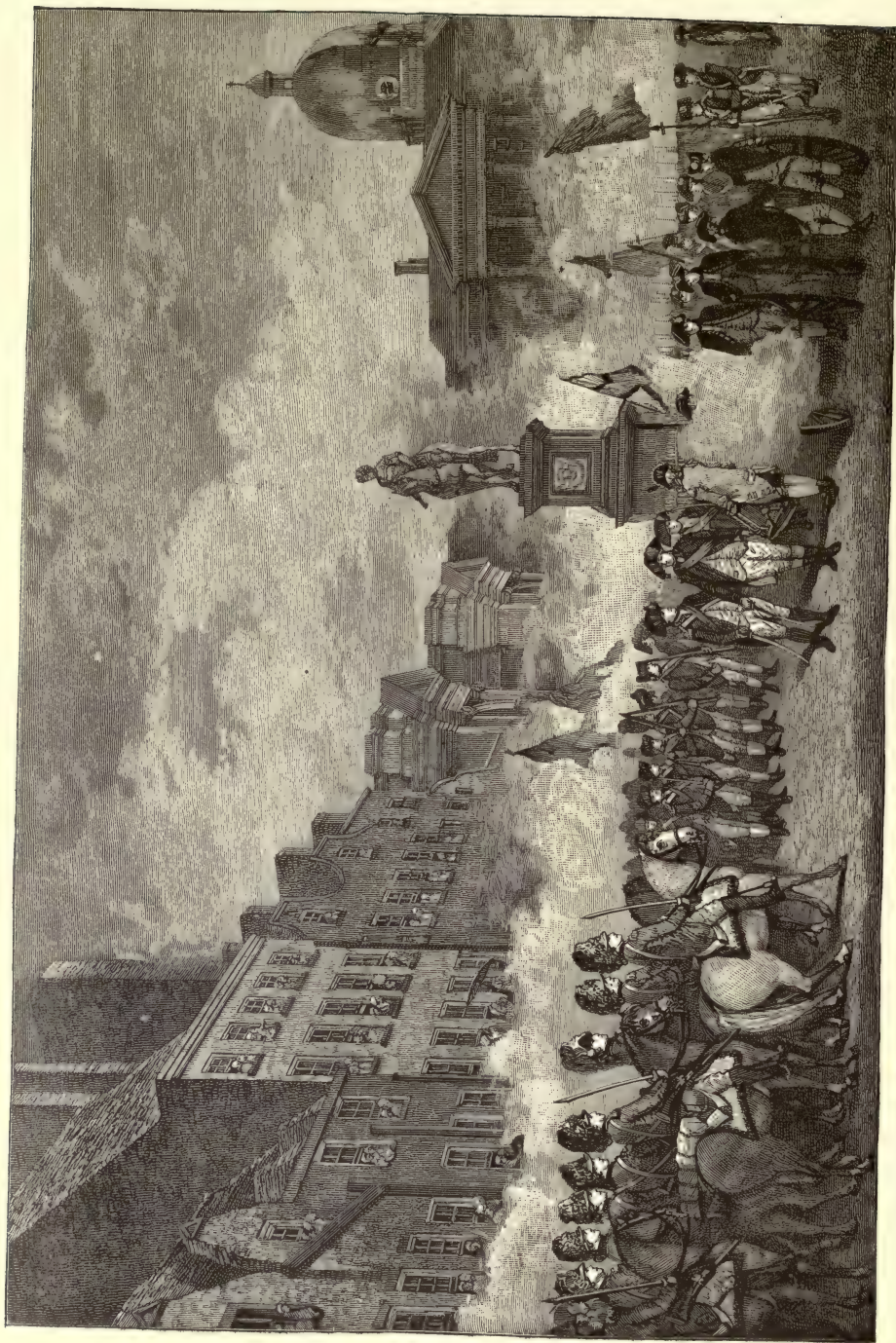
SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
Dec. 2

Ireland  
under the  
Georges



AN IRISH CHIEF.  
*Caricature by Gilray*





THE DUBLIN VOLUNTEERS SALUTING THE STATUE OF WILLIAM III. ON COLLEGE GREEN, NOVEMBER 4. 1779.  
*Picture by Francis Wheatley*

selves as mere settlers, who boasted of their Scotch or English extraction, and who regarded the name of "Irishman" as an insult. But small as was this Protestant body, one half of it fared little better, as far as power was concerned, than the Catholics; for the Presbyterians, who formed the bulk of the Ulster settlers, were shut out by law from all civil, military, and municipal offices.

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



JOHN PHILPOT CURRAN.

*From J. Raphael Smith's engraving of a picture by Lawrence.*

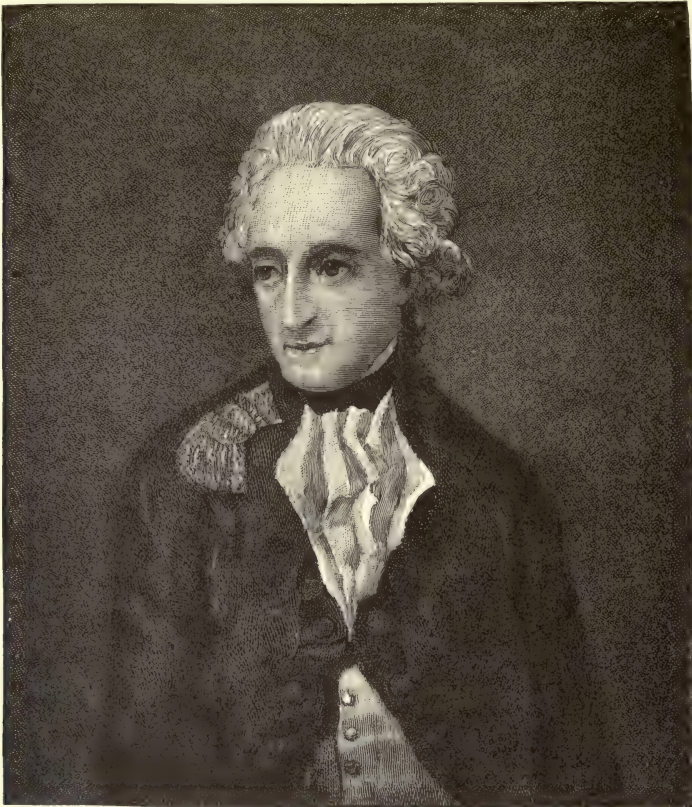
The administration and justice of the country were thus kept rigidly in the hands of members of the Established Church, a body which comprised about a twelfth of the population of the island; while its government was practically monopolized by a few great Protestant landowners. The rotten boroughs, which had originally been created to make the Irish Parliament dependent on the Crown, had fallen under the influence of the adjacent landlords, who were thus masters of the House of Commons, while they formed in person the House of Peers. During the first half of the

*Government in  
Ireland*



SEC. IV  
—  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
—

eighteenth century two-thirds of the House of Commons, in fact, was returned by a small group of nobles, who were recognized as "parliamentary undertakers," and who undertook to "manage" Parliament on their own terms. Irish politics were for these men a means of public plunder; they were glutted with pensions, preferments, and bribes in hard cash in return for their services;



HENRY GRATTAN.

*Picture by F. Wheatley (1782), in National Portrait Gallery.*

they were the advisers of every Lord-Lieutenant, and the practical governors of the country. The only check to the tyranny of this narrow and corrupt oligarchy was in the connexion of Ireland with England and the subordination of its Parliament to the English Privy Council. The Irish Parliament had no power of originating legislative or financial measures, and could only say "yes" or "no" to Acts submitted to it by the Privy Council in England.



The English Parliament too claimed the right of binding Ireland as well as England by its enactments, and one of its statutes transferred the appellate jurisdiction of the Irish Peerage to the English House of Lords. But as if to compensate for the benefits of its protection, England did her best to annihilate Irish commerce and to ruin Irish agriculture. Statutes passed by the jealousy of English landowners forbade the export of Irish cattle or sheep to English ports. The export of wool was forbidden, lest

SER. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



HENRY FLOOD.

*From an engraving in Barrington's "Historic Memoirs," of a drawing by Comerford.*

it might interfere with the profits of English wool-growers. Poverty was thus added to the curse of misgovernment; and poverty deepened with the rapid growth of the native population, till famine turned the country into a hell.

The bitter lesson of the last conquest, however, long sufficed to check all dreams of revolt among the natives, and the outbreaks which sprang from time to time out of the general misery and discontent were purely social in their character, and were roughly repressed by the ruling class. When political revolt threatened at

Pitt and  
Ireland

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE

1793  
TO  
1815

last, the threat came from the ruling class itself. At the very outset of the reign of George the Third, the Irish Parliament insisted on its claim to the exclusive control of money bills, and a cry was raised for the removal of the checks imposed on its independence. But it was not till the American war that this cry became a political danger, a danger so real that England was forced to give way. From the close of the war, when the Irish Volunteers wrung legislative independence from the Rockingham



IRISH LINEN MANUFACTURE, 1783:—PLOUGHING—SOWING—HARROWING.

*Independence of Ireland*  
1782

Ministry, England and Ireland were simply held together by the fact that the sovereign of the one island was also the sovereign of the other. During the next eighteen years Ireland was “independent;” but its independence was a mere name for the uncontrolled rule of a few noble families and of the Irish Executive backed by the support of the English Government. To such a length had the whole system of monopoly and patronage been carried, that at the time of the Union more than sixty seats were in the hands of three families alone, those of the Hills, the Ponsonbys, and the Beresfords; while the dominant influence in

the Parliament now lay with the Treasury boroughs at the disposal of the Government. The victory of the Volunteers immediately produced measures in favour of the Catholics and Presbyterians. The Volunteers had already in 1780 won for the Presbyterians, who formed a good half of their force, full political liberty by the abolition of the Sacramental Test ; and the Irish Parliament of 1782 removed at once the last grievances of the Protestant Dissenters. The Catholics were rewarded for their aid by the repeal of the more grossly oppressive enactments of the

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



PULLING FLAX—STOOKING—RIPLING—BOGGING.

penal laws. But when Grattan, supported by the bulk of the Irish party, pleaded for Parliamentary reform, and for the grant of equal rights to the Catholics, he was utterly foiled by the small group of borough owners, who chiefly controlled the Government and the Parliament. The ruling class found government too profitable to share it with other possessors. It was only by hard bribery that the English Viceroys could secure their co-operation in the simplest measures of administration. "If ever there was a country unfit to govern itself," said Lord Hutchinson, "it is Ireland. A corrupt aristocracy, a ferocious commonalty, a



SEC. IV  
—  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
—

distracted Government, a divided people!" In Pitt's eyes the danger of Ireland lay above all in the misery of its people. Although the Irish Catholics were held down by the brute force of their Protestant rulers, he saw that their discontent was growing fast into rebellion, and that one secret of their discontent at any rate lay in Irish poverty, a poverty increased if not originally brought about by the jealous exclusion of Irish products from their natural markets in England itself. In 1779 Ireland had won from Lord



TAKING FLAX OUT OF BOG—SPREADING TO DRY—STORING—BEETLING—BREAKING.

1785 North large measures of free-trade abroad ; but the heavy duties laid by the English Parliament on all Irish manufactures save linen and woollen yarn still shut them out of England. One of Pitt's first commercial measures aimed at putting an end to this exclusion by a bill which established freedom of trade between the two islands. His first proposals were accepted in the Irish Parliament ; but the fears and jealousies of the English farmers and manufacturers forced into the Bill amendments which gave to the British Parliament powers over Irish navigation and commerce, thus over-riding their newly-won independence, and

the measure in its new form was rejected in Ireland. The outbreak of the revolutionary struggle, and the efforts which the French revolutionists at once made to excite rebellion amongst the Irish, roused Pitt to fresh measures of conciliation and good government. In 1793 he forced the Irish Administration to abandon a resistance which had wrecked his projects the previous year; and the Irish Parliament passed without opposition measures for the admission of Catholics to the electoral franchise, and to civil and military office within the island, which promised to open a new era

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



BUTTLING —SCUTCHING —HACKLING.

of religious liberty. But the promise came too late. The hope of conciliation was lost in the fast rising tide of religious and social passion. The Society of "United Irishmen," which was founded in 1791 at Belfast by Wolfe Tone with a view of forming a union between Protestants and Catholics to win Parliamentary reform, drifted into a correspondence with France and projects of insurrection. The peasantry, brooding over their misery and their wrongs, were equally stirred by the news from France; and their discontent broke out in outrages of secret societies which spread panic among the ruling classes. The misery was increased by



SEC. IV  
—  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
—

faction fights between the Protestants and Catholics, which had already broken out before the French Revolution. The Catholics banded themselves together as "Defenders" against the outrages of the "Peep-o'-day Boys," who were mainly drawn from the more violent Presbyterians ; and these factions became later merged in the larger associations of the "United Irishmen" and the "Orange-men."

The  
Union

At last the smouldering discontent and disaffection burst into flame. The panic roused in 1796 by an attempted French



BREAKING AND SCUTCHING BY MACHINERY.

invasion under Hoche woke passions of cruelty and tyranny which turned Ireland into a hell. Soldiers and yeomanry marched over the country torturing and scourging the "croppies," as the Irish peasantry were called in derision from their short-cut hair, robbing, ravishing, and murdering. Their outrages were sanctioned by the landowners who formed the Irish Parliament in a Bill of Indemnity, and protected for the future by an Insurrection Act. Meanwhile the United Irishmen prepared for an insurrection, which was delayed by the failure of the French expeditions



on which they counted for support, and above all by the victory of Camperdown. Atrocities were answered by atrocities when the revolt at last broke out in 1798. Loyalists were lashed and tortured in their turn, and every soldier taken was butchered without mercy. The rebels however no sooner mustered fourteen thousand men strong in a camp on Vinegar Hill, near Enniscorthy, than the camp was stormed by the English troops, and the revolt utterly suppressed. The suppression came only just in time to prevent greater disasters. A few weeks after the close of the

SEC. IV  
—  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE.  
1793  
TO  
1815

May 21,  
1798

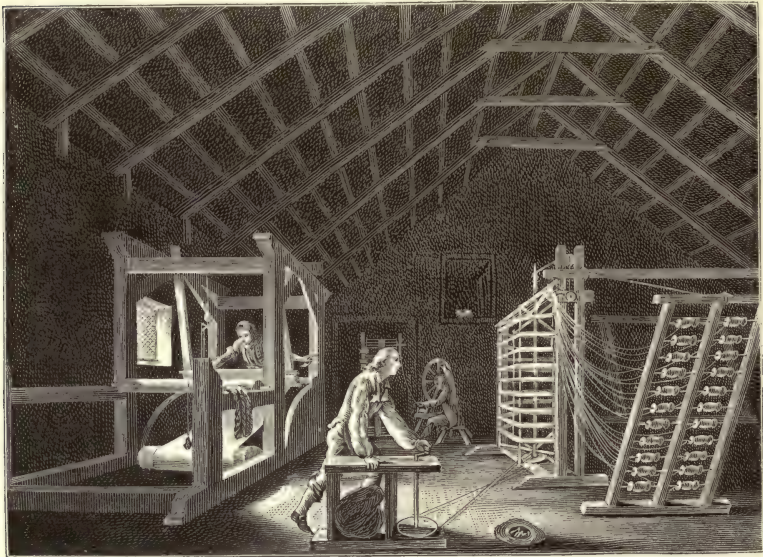


SPINNING—REELING WITH THE CLOCK-REEL—BOILING YARN.

rebellion nine hundred French soldiers under General Humbert landed in Mayo, broke a force of thrice their number in a battle at Castlebar, and only surrendered when the Lord-Lieutenant, Lord Cornwallis, faced them with thirty thousand men. Pitt's disgust at "the bigoted fury of Irish Protestants" backed Lord Cornwallis in checking the reprisals of his troops and of the Orangemen; but the hideous cruelty which he was forced to witness brought about a firm resolve to put an end to the farce of "Independence," which left Ireland helpless in such hands. The political necessity for a union of the two islands had been brought home to every

SEC. IV  
 THE  
 WAR WITH  
 FRANCE  
 1793  
 TO  
 1815

English statesman by the course of the Irish Parliament during the disputes over the Regency ; for while England repelled the claims of the Prince of Wales to the Regency as of right, the legislature of Ireland admitted them. As the only union left between the two peoples was their obedience to a common ruler, such an act might conceivably have ended in their entire severance ; and the sense of this danger secured a welcome in England for Pitt's proposal to unite the two Parliaments. The



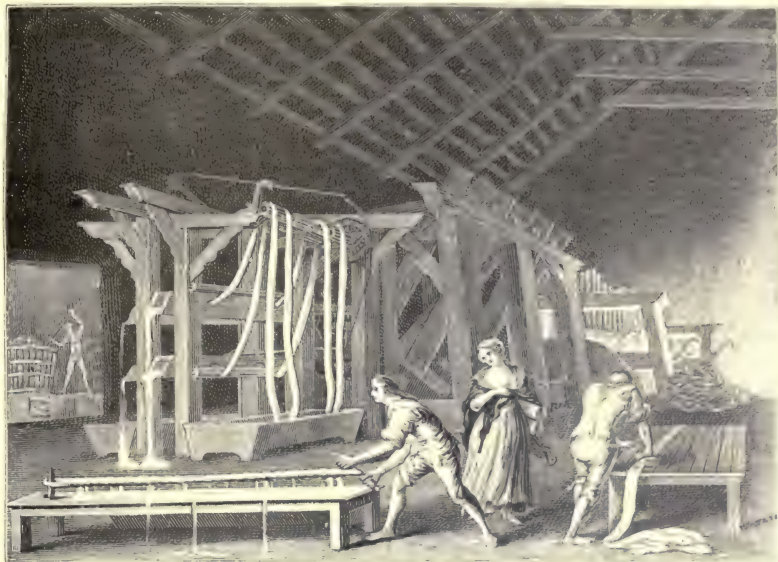
WINDING—WARPING—WEAVING.

1799 opposition of the Irish boroughmongers was naturally stubborn and determined. But with them it was a sheer question of gold ; and their assent was bought with a million in money, and with a liberal distribution of pensions and peerages. Base and shameless as were such means, Pitt may fairly plead that they were the only means by which the bill for the Union could have been passed. As the matter was finally arranged in June 1800, one hundred Irish members became part of the House of Commons at Westminster, and twenty-eight temporal with four spiritual peers, chosen for life by their fellows, took their seats in the House

of Lords. Commerce between the two countries was freed from all restrictions, and every trading privilege of the one thrown open to the other ; while taxation was proportionately distributed between the two peoples.

The lavish creation of peers which formed a part of the price paid for the Union of Ireland brought about a practical change in our constitution. Few bodies have varied more in the number of their members than the House of Lords. At the close of the Wars

SEC. IV  
THE  
WARRIORS  
FRANCE.  
1793  
1815  
Pitt  
and the  
Peerage



WASH MILL.—RUBBING BOARDS.—BEETLING ENGINE (FOR GLAZING).—BOILING HOUSE.

of the Roses the lay lords who remained numbered fifty-two ; in Elizabeth's reign they numbered only sixty ; the prodigal creations of the Stuarts raised them to one hundred and seventy-six. At this point, however, they practically remained stationary during the reigns of the first two Georges ; and, as we have seen, only the dogged opposition of Walpole prevented Lord Stanhope from limiting the peerage to the number it had at that time reached. Mischievous as such a measure would have been, it would at any rate have prevented the lavish creation of peerages on which George the Third relied in the early days of his reign as one of his



## SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

*Increase  
of the  
Peers*

means of breaking up the party government which restrained him. But what was with the King a mere means of corruption became with Pitt a settled purpose of bringing the peerage into closer relations with the landowning and opulent classes, and rendering the Crown independent of factious combinations among the existing peers. While himself disdainful of hereditary honours, he lavished them as no Minister had lavished them before. In his first five years of rule he created forty-eight new peers. In two later years alone, 1796-7, he created thirty-five. By 1801 the



WET AND DRY BLEACHING—BLEACH-MILL.

peerages which were the price of the Union with Ireland had helped to raise his creations to upwards of one hundred and forty. So busily was his example followed by his successors that at the end of George the Third's reign the number of hereditary peers had become double what it was at his accession. The whole character of the House of Lords was changed. Up to this time it had been a small assembly of great nobles, bound together by family or party ties into a distinct power in the State. From this time it became the stronghold of property, the representative of the great estates and great fortunes which the vast increase of

English wealth was building up. For the first time, too, in our history it became the distinctly conservative element in our constitution. The full import of Pitt's changes has still to be revealed, but in some ways their results have been clearly marked. The larger number of the peerage, though due to the will of the Crown, has practically freed the House from any influence which the Crown can exert by the distribution of honours. This change, since the power of the Crown has been practically wielded by the

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



LAPPING-ROOM—MEASURING—CRIMPING—FOLDING

House of Commons, has rendered it far harder to reconcile the free action of the Lords with the regular working of constitutional government. On the other hand, the increased number of its members has rendered the House more responsive to public opinion, when public opinion is strongly pronounced; and the political tact which is inherent in great aristocratic assemblies has hitherto prevented any collision with the Lower House from being pushed to an irreconcilable quarrel.

But the legislative union of the two countries was only part of the plan which Pitt had conceived for the conciliation of Ireland.

Catholic  
Eman-  
cipation

SEC. IV  
 —  
 THE  
 WAR WITH  
 FRANCE  
 1793  
 TO  
 1815  
 —

With the conclusion of the Union his projects of free trade between the countries, which had been defeated a few years back, came into play ; and in spite of insufficient capital and social disturbance the growth of the trade, shipping, and manufactures of Ireland has gone steadily on from that time to this. The change which brought Ireland directly under the common Parliament was followed too by a gradual revision of its oppressive laws, and an amendment in their administration ; taxation was lightened, and a faint beginning made of public instruction. But in Pitt's mind



BROWN LINEN MARKET, BANBRIDGE.

*Pitt's  
 policy*

the great means of conciliation was the concession of religious equality. In proposing to the English Parliament the union of the two countries he pointed out that when thus joined to a Protestant country like England all danger of a Catholic supremacy in Ireland, should Catholic disabilities be removed, would be practically at an end ; and had suggested that in such a case "an effectual and adequate provision for the Catholic clergy" would be a security for their loyalty. His words gave strength to the hopes of "Catholic Emancipation," or the removal of what remained of the civil disabilities of Catholics, which were held out by the



viceroys, Lord Castlereagh, in Ireland itself, as a means of hindering any opposition to the project of Union on the part of the Catholics. It was agreed on all sides that their opposition would have secured its defeat; but no Catholic opposition showed itself. After the passing of the bill, Pitt prepared to lay before the Cabinet a measure which would have raised the Irish Catholic to perfect equality of civil rights. He proposed to remove all religious tests which limited the exercise of the franchise, or were required for admission to Parliament, the magistracy, the bar, municipal offices, or posts in the army, or the service of the State. An oath of allegiance and of fidelity to the Constitution was substituted for the Sacramental test; while the loyalty of the Catholic and Dissenting clergy was secured by a grant of some provision to both by the State. To win over the Episcopal Church, measures were added for strengthening its means of discipline, and for increasing the stipends of its poorer ministers. A commutation of tithes was to remove a constant source of quarrel in Ireland between the Protestant clergy and the Irish people. The scheme was too large and statesmanlike to secure the immediate assent of the Cabinet; and before that assent could be won the plan was communicated through the treachery of the Chancellor, Lord Loughborough, to George the Third. "I count any man my personal enemy," the King broke out angrily to Dundas, "who proposes any such measure." Pitt answered this outburst by submitting his whole plan to the King. "The political circumstances under which the exclusive laws originated," he wrote, "arising either from the conflicting powers of hostile and nearly balanced sects, from the apprehension of a Popish Queen as successor, a disputed succession and a foreign pretender, a division in Europe between Catholic and Protestant Powers, are no longer applicable to the present state of things." But argument was wasted upon George the Third. In spite of the decision of the lawyers whom he consulted, the King held himself bound by his Coronation Oath to maintain the tests. On this point his bigotry was at one with the bigotry of the bulk of his subjects, as well as with their political distrust of Catholics and Irishmen; and his obstinacy was strengthened by a knowledge that his refusal must drive Pitt from office. In February 1801, the month of the Peace of Luneville, Pitt resigned, and was succeeded

Sec. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
1815

*Its defeat*

Pitt  
resigns

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

The  
Addington  
Ministry

by the Speaker of the House of Commons, Mr. Addington, a weak and narrow-minded man, and as bigoted as the King himself. Of Lord Hawkesbury, who succeeded Lord Grenville in the conduct of foreign affairs, nothing was known outside the House of Commons.

*The Continental System*

It was with anxiety that England found itself guided by men like these at a time when every hour brought darker news. The scarcity of bread was mounting to a famine. Taxes were raised anew, and yet the loan for the year amounted to five and twenty millions. The country stood utterly alone; while the peace of Luneville secured France from all hostility on the Continent. And it was soon plain that this peace was only the first step in a new policy on the part of the First Consul. What he had done was to free his hands for a decisive conflict with Britain itself, both as a world-power and as a centre of wealth. England was at once the carrier of European commerce, and the workshop of European manufactures. While her mines, her looms, her steam-engines, were giving her almost a monopoly of industrial production, the carrying trade of France and Holland alike had been transferred to the British flag, and the conquest during the war of their richer settlements had thrown into British hands the whole colonial trade of the world. In his gigantic project of a "Continental System" the aim of Buonaparte was to strike at the trade of England by closing the ports of Europe against her ships. By a league of the Northern powers he sought to wrest from her the command of the seas. Denmark and Sweden, who resented the severity with which Britain enforced that right of search which had brought about their armed neutrality at the close of the American war, were enlisted in a league of neutrals which was in effect a declaration of war against England, and which Prussia was prepared to join. The Czar Paul of Russia on his side saw in the power of Britain the chief obstacle to his designs upon Turkey. A squabble over Malta, which had been taken from the Knights of St. John by Buonaparte on his way to Egypt, and had ever since been blockaded by English ships, but whose possession the Czar claimed as his own on the ground of an alleged election as Grand Master of the Order, served him as a pretext for a quarrel with England, and Paul openly prepared for hostilities. It was plain that as soon

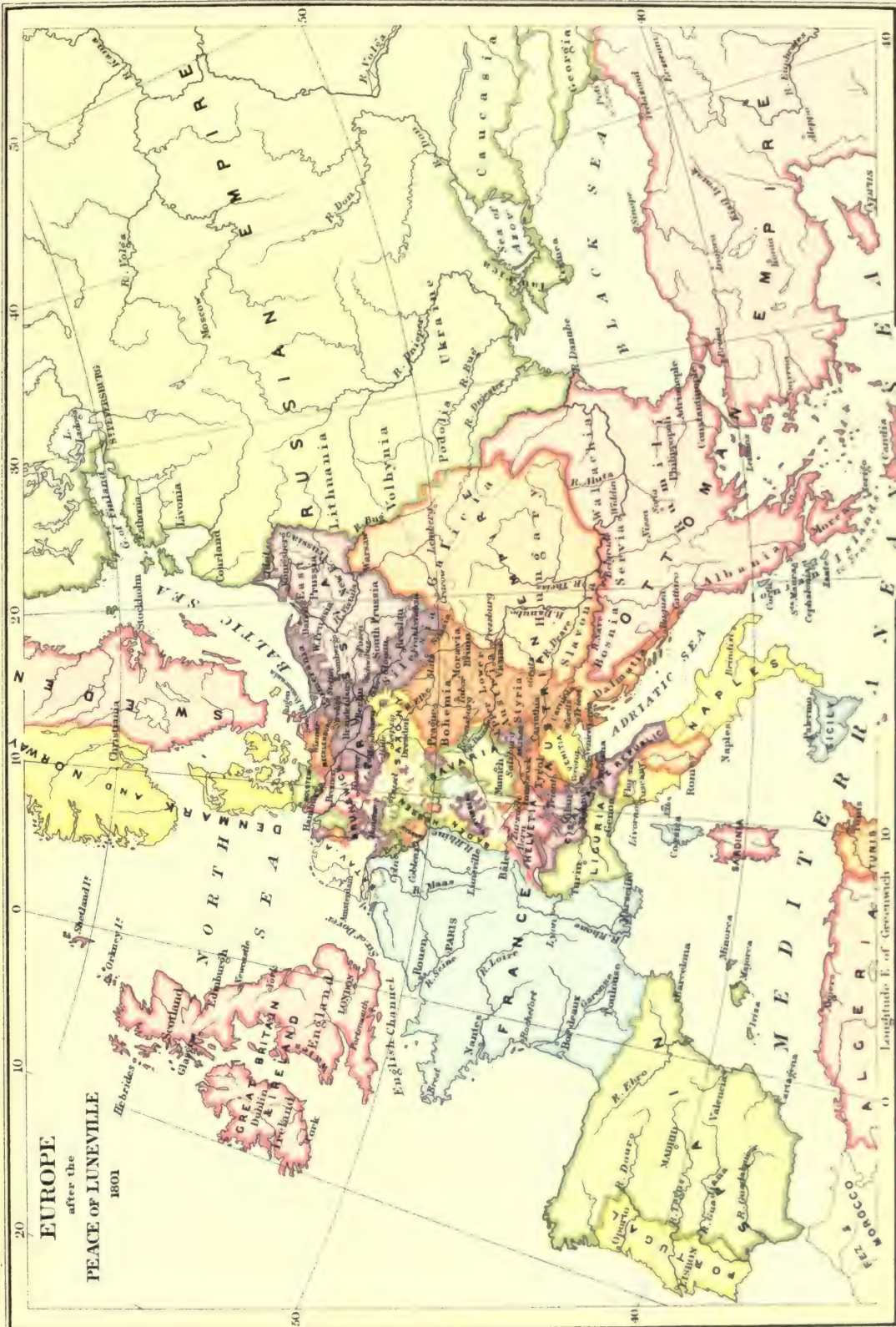


EUROPE

after the

PEACE OF LUNEVILLE

1801







as spring opened the Baltic, the fleets of Russia, Sweden, and Denmark would act in practical union with those of France and Spain. But dexterous as the combination was it was shattered at a blow. In April a British fleet appeared before Copenhagen, and after a desperate struggle silenced the Danish batteries, captured six Danish ships, and forced Denmark to conclude an armistice which enabled English ships to enter the Baltic. The Northern Coalition too was broken up by the death of the Czar. In June a Convention between England and Russia settled the vexed questions of the right of search and contraband of war, and this Convention was accepted by Sweden and Denmark. Meanwhile, at the very moment of the attack on Copenhagen, a stroke as effective

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
The  
Coalition  
broken up  
1801



MEDAL GIVEN TO INDIAN TROOPS FOR VICTORIES IN EGYPT, 1801  
*Tancred, "Historical Record of Medals."*

had wrecked the projects of Buonaparte in the East. The surrender of Malta to the English fleet left England the mistress of the Mediterranean; and from Malta she now turned to Egypt itself. A force of 15,000 men under General Abercromby anchored in Aboukir Bay. The French troops that Buonaparte had left in Egypt rapidly concentrated, and on the 21st of March their general attacked the English army. After a stubborn battle, in which Abercromby fell mortally wounded, the French drew off with heavy loss; and at the close of June the capitulation of the 13,000 soldiers who remained closed the French rule over Egypt.

Both parties in this gigantic struggle however were at last anxious to suspend the war. It was to give time for such an organization of France and its resources as might enable him to

The  
Peace of  
Amiens



PROCLAMATION OF THE PEACE OF AMIENS AT THE ROYAL EXCHANGE, LONDON, 1802.  
*Contemporary print.*



reopen the struggle with other chances of success that Buonaparte opened negotiations for peace at the close of 1801. His offers were at once met by the English Government. The terms of the Peace of Amiens, which was concluded in March 1802, were necessarily simple, for England had no claim to interfere with the settlement of the Continent. France promised to retire from Southern Italy, and to leave to themselves the republics it had set up along its border in Holland, Switzerland, and Piedmont. England recognized the French Government, gave up her newly conquered colonies save Ceylon and Trinidad, acknowledged the

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

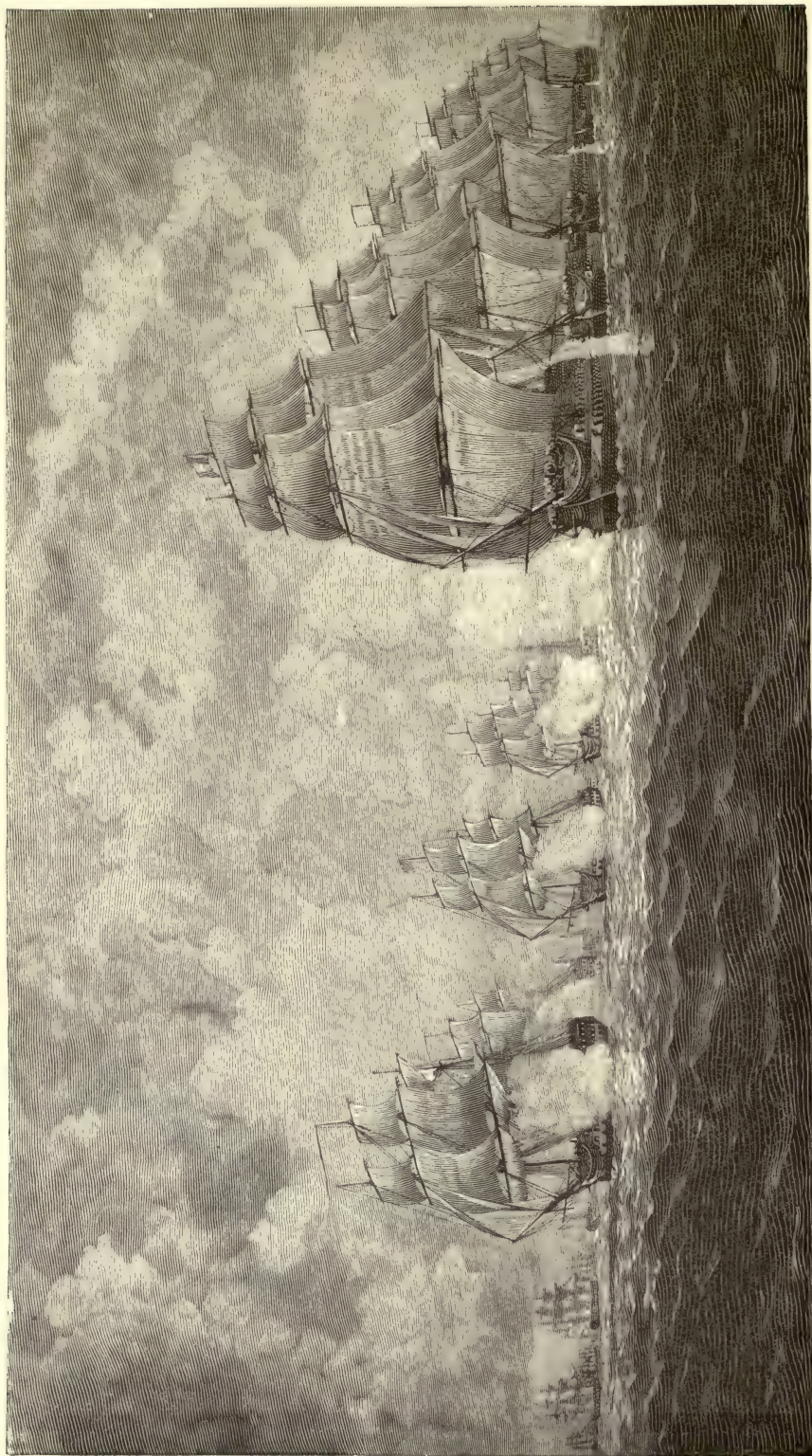


MALTA.

*After J. M. W. Turner.*

Ionian Islands as a free Republic, and engaged to replace the Knights of St. John in the isle of Malta. There was a general sense of relief at the close of the long struggle; and the new French ambassador was drawn in triumph on his arrival through the streets of London. But shrewd observers saw the dangers that lay in the temper of the First Consul. Whatever had been the errors of the French revolutionists, even their worst attacks on the independence of the nations around them had been veiled by a vague notion of freeing the peoples whom they invaded from the yoke of their rulers. But the aim of Buonaparte was simply that

*Designs of  
Napoleon*



THE ACTION OFF PULO AOR, BETWEEN FRENCH MEN-OF-WAR AND SHIPS OF THE EAST INDIA COMPANY, 1804.  
*Picture by T. Butternorth, in India Office.*



of a vulgar conqueror. He was resolute to be master of the Western world, and no notions of popular freedom or sense of national right interfered with his resolve. The means at his command were immense. The political life of the Revolution had been cut short by his military despotism, but the new social vigour which it had given to France through the abolition of privileges and the creation of a new middle class on the ruins of the clergy and the nobles still lived on. While the dissensions which tore France asunder were hushed by the policy of the First Consul, by his restoration of the Church as a religious power, his recall of the exiles, and the economy and wise administration which distinguished his rule, the centralized system of government bequeathed by the Monarchy to the Revolution, and by the Revolution to Buonaparte, enabled him easily to seize this national vigour for the profit of his own despotism. The exhaustion of the brilliant hopes raised by the Revolution, the craving for public order, the military enthusiasm and the impulse of a new glory given by the wonderful victories France had won, made a Tyranny possible; and in the hands of Buonaparte this tyranny was supported by a secret police, by the suppression of the press and of all freedom of opinion, and above all by the iron will and immense ability of the First Consul himself. Once chosen Consul for life, he felt himself secure at home, and turned restlessly to the work of outer aggression. The pledges given at Amiens were set aside. The republics established on the borders of France were brought into mere dependence on his will. Piedmont and Parma were annexed to France; and a French army occupied Switzerland. The temperate protests of the English Government were answered by demands for the expulsion of the French exiles who had been living in England ever since the Revolution, and for its surrender of Malta, which was retained till some security could be devised against a fresh seizure of the island by the French fleet. It was plain that a struggle was inevitable; huge armaments were preparing in the French ports, and a new activity was seen in those of Spain. In May 1803 the British Government anticipated Buonaparte's attack by a declaration of war.

The breach only quickened Buonaparte's resolve to attack the enemy at home. The difficulties in his way he set contemptuously

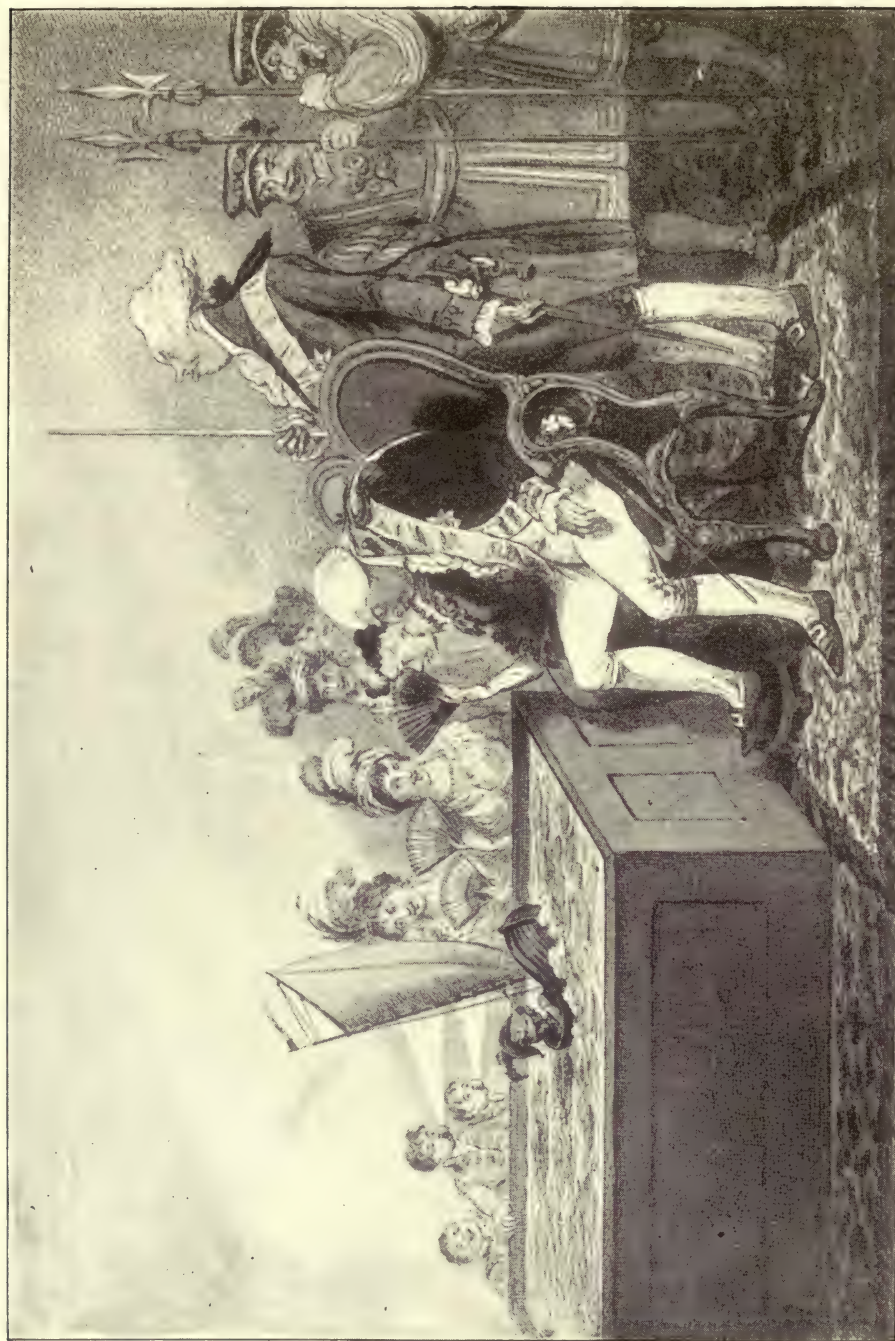
SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
701  
1815

*Declara-  
tion of  
war*

Trafalgar





THE KING OF BROBDINGNAG AND GULLIVER.  
*Satire by J. Gillray, 1804.*

aside. "Fifteen millions of people," he said, in allusion to the disproportion between the population of England and France, "must



MEDAL COMMEMORATING THE  
OATH AT BOULOGNE.

give way to forty millions ;" and an invasion of England itself was planned on a gigantic scale. A camp of one hundred thousand men was formed at Boulogne, and a host of flat-bottomed boats gathered for their conveyance across the Channel. The peril of the nation forced Addington from office and recalled Pitt to power. His health was broken, and as the days went by his appearance became so haggard and depressed that it

was plain death was drawing near. But dying as he really was, the nation clung to him with all its old faith. He was still the representative of national union ; and he proposed to include Fox and the leading Whigs in his new ministry, but he was foiled by the bigotry of the King ; and the refusal of Lord Grenville and of Windham to take office without Fox, as well as the loss of his post at a later time by his ablest supporter, Dundas, left him almost alone. But lonely as he was, he faced difficulty and danger with the same courage as of old. The invasion seemed imminent when Buonaparte, who now assumed the title of the Emperor Napoleon, appeared in the camp at Boulogne. "Let us be masters of the



MEDAL STRUCK BY NAPOLEON IN ANTICIPATION OF  
INVASION OF ENGLAND.



Channel for six hours," he is reported to have said, "and we are masters of the world." A skilfully combined plan by which the British fleet would

have been divided, while the whole French navy was concentrated in the Channel, was delayed by the death of the admiral destined to execute it. But the alliance with Spain placed the Spanish fleet at

SE. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
*The  
Camp at  
Boulogne*

to my Country and for  
the benefit of Europe  
in general a great and  
Glorious Victory, and may  
no misconduct in any  
one tarnish it and  
may humanity after  
Victory be the predomi-  
nant feature in the  
British fleet, nor  
myself individually  
I commit my life  
to him who made



Napoleon's disposal, and in 1805 he planned its union with that of France, the crushing of the squadron which blocked the ports of the Channel before the English ships which were watching the Spanish armament could come to its support, and a crossing of the vast armament thus protected to the English shore. The three hundred thousand volunteers mustered in England to meet the coming attack would have offered small hindrance to the veterans of the Grand Army, had they once crossed the Channel. But Pitt had already found work for France elsewhere. The alarm of the Continental Powers had been brought to a head by Napoleon's annexation of Genoa; Pitt's subsidies had removed the last obstacle in the way of a league; and Russia, Austria, and Sweden joined in an alliance to wrest Italy and the Low Countries from the grasp of the French Emperor. Napoleon meanwhile swept the sea in vain for a glimpse of the great armament whose assembly in the Channel he had so skilfully planned. Admiral Villeneuve, uniting the Spanish ships with his own squadron from Toulon, drew Nelson in pursuit to the West Indies, and then, suddenly returning to Cadiz, hastened to form a junction with the French squadron at Brest and crush the English fleet in the Channel. But a headlong pursuit brought Nelson up with him ere the manœuvre was complete, and the two fleets met on the 21st of October, 1805, off Cape Trafalgar. "England," ran Nelson's famous signal, "expects every man to do his duty;" and though he fell himself in the hour of victory, twenty French sail had struck their flag ere the day was done. "England has saved herself by her courage," Pitt said in what were destined to be his last public words: "she will save Europe by her example!" But even before the victory of Trafalgar Napoleon had abandoned the dream of invading England to meet the coalition in his rear; and swinging round his forces on the Danube he forced an Austrian army to capitulation in Ulm three days before his naval defeat. From Ulm he marched on Vienna, and crushed the combined armies of Austria and Russia in the battle of Austerlitz. "Austerlitz," Wilberforce

Fig. IV  
THE  
WAR OF 1805  
FRANCE  
1793  
1815

League  
against  
France

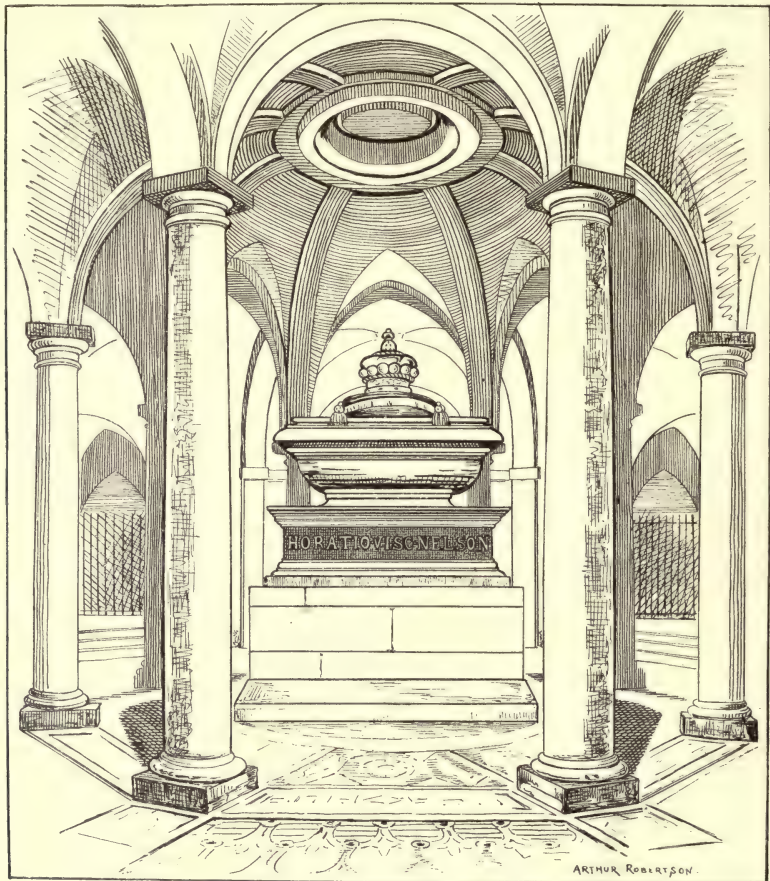


OLD BRITISH  
VOLUNTEER.  
Nelson and Taylor  
"British Power and  
Prevalence."

Nov. 1805

SEC. IV  
—  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
—

wrote in his diary, "killed Pitt." Though he was still but forty-seven, the hollow voice and wasted frame of the great Minister had long told that death was near; and the blow to his hopes proved fatal. "Roll up that map," he said, pointing to a map of Europe which hung upon the wall: "it will not be wanted these ten



NELSON'S MONUMENT, IN CRYPT OF S. PAUL'S CATHEDRAL.

*Death of Pitt* years!" Once only he rallied from stupor; and those who bent over him caught a faint murmur of "My country! How I leave my country!" On the 23rd of January, 1806, he breathed his last; and was laid in Westminster Abbey in the grave of Chatham. "What grave," exclaimed Lord Wellesley, "contains such a father

and such a son! What sepulchre embosoms the remains of so much human excellence and glory!"

SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

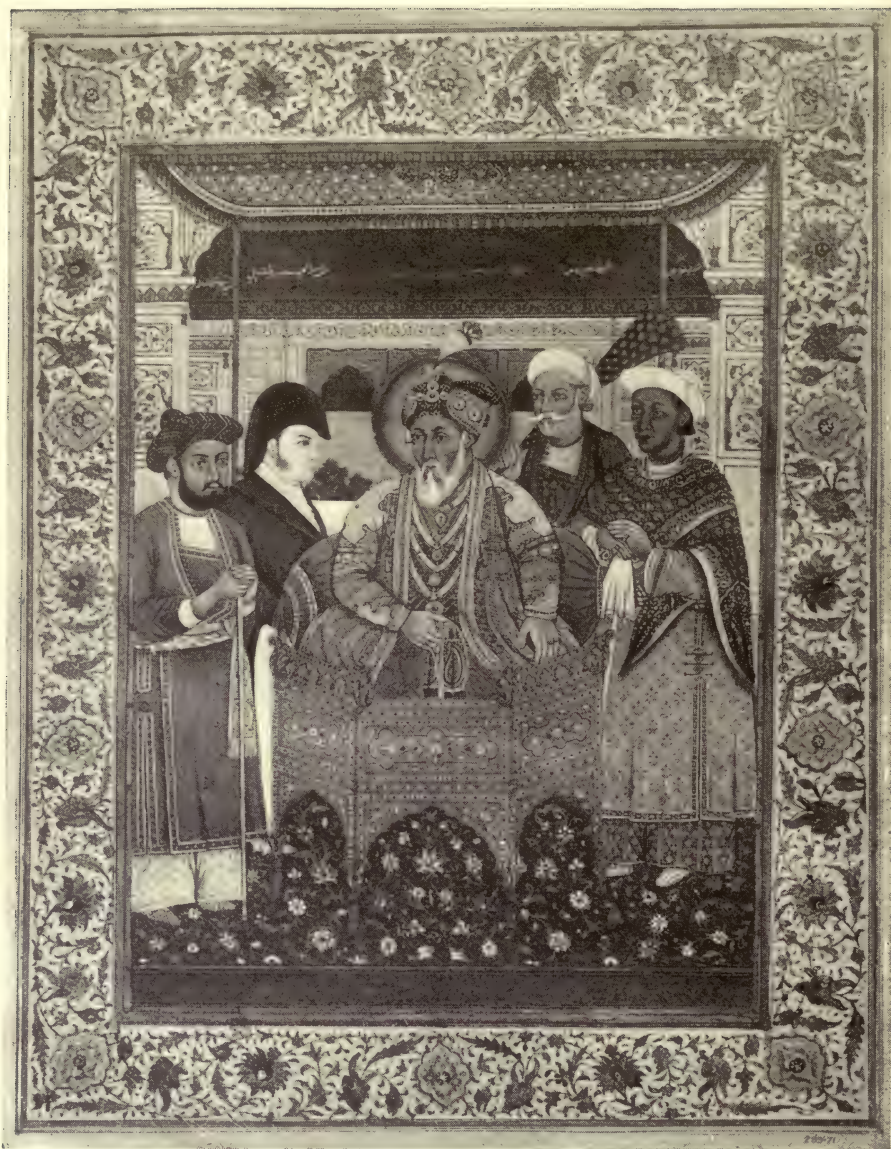
The  
Grenville  
Ministry

So great was felt to be the loss that nothing but the union of parties, which Pitt had in vain desired during his lifetime, could fill up the gap left by his death. In the new Ministry Fox, with the small body of popular Whigs who were bent on peace and internal reform, united with the aristocratic Whigs under Lord Grenville and with the Tories under Lord Sidmouth. All home questions in fact were subordinated to the need of saving Europe from the ambition of France, and in the resolve to save Europe Fox was as resolute as Pitt himself. His hopes of peace, indeed, were stronger; but they were foiled by the evasive answer which Napoleon gave to his overtures, and by a new war which he undertook against Prussia, the one power which seemed able to resist his arms. On the 14th of October, 1806, a decisive victory at Jena laid North Germany at Napoleon's feet. Death only a month before saved Fox from witnessing the overthrow of his hopes; and his loss weakened the Grenville Cabinet at the opening of a new and more desperate struggle with France. Napoleon's earlier attempt at the enforcement of a Continental System had broken down with the failure of the Northern League; but in his mastery of Europe he now saw a more effective means of realizing his dream; and he was able to find a pretext for his new attack in England's own action. By a violent stretch of her rights as a combatant she had declared the whole coast occupied by France and its allies, from Dantzic to Trieste, to be in a state of blockade. It was impossible to enforce such a "paper blockade," even with the immense force at her disposal; and Napoleon seized on the opportunity to retaliate by the entire exclusion of British commerce from the Continent, an exclusion which he trusted would end the war by the ruin it would bring on the English manufacturers. A decree was issued from Berlin which—without a single ship to carry it out—placed the British Islands in a state of blockade. All commerce or communication with them was prohibited; all English goods or manufactures found in the territory of France or its allies were declared liable to confiscation; and their harbours were closed, not only against vessels coming from Britain but against all who had touched at her ports. The

*Jena*

The  
Berlin  
Decree  
Nov. 1806





AKBER, KING OF DELHI, AND SIR THOMAS METCALFE.  
*Illumination, c. 1830, in India Museum.*

attempt to enforce such a system was foiled indeed by the rise of a widespread contraband trade, by the reluctance of Holland to aid in its own ruin, by the connivance of officials along the Prussian and Russian shores, and by the pressure of facts. It was impossible even for Napoleon himself to do without the goods he pretended to exclude ; an immense system of licences soon neutralized his decree ; and the French army which marched to Eylau was clad in great-coats made at Leeds, and shod with shoes made at Northampton. But if it failed to destroy British industry, it told

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



CALCUTTA MILITIA, 1802.  
*Gentlemen's Messing.*

far more fatally on British commerce. Trade began to move from English vessels, which were subject to instant confiscation, and to pass into the hands of neutrals, and especially of the Americans. The merchant class called on the Government to protect it, and it was to this appeal that the Grenville Ministry replied in January, 1807, by an Order in Council which declared all the ports of the coast of France and her allies under blockade, and any neutral vessels trading between them to be good prize. Such a step was far from satisfying the British merchants. But their appeal was no longer to Lord Grenville. The forces of

*Orders in  
Council*



## SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

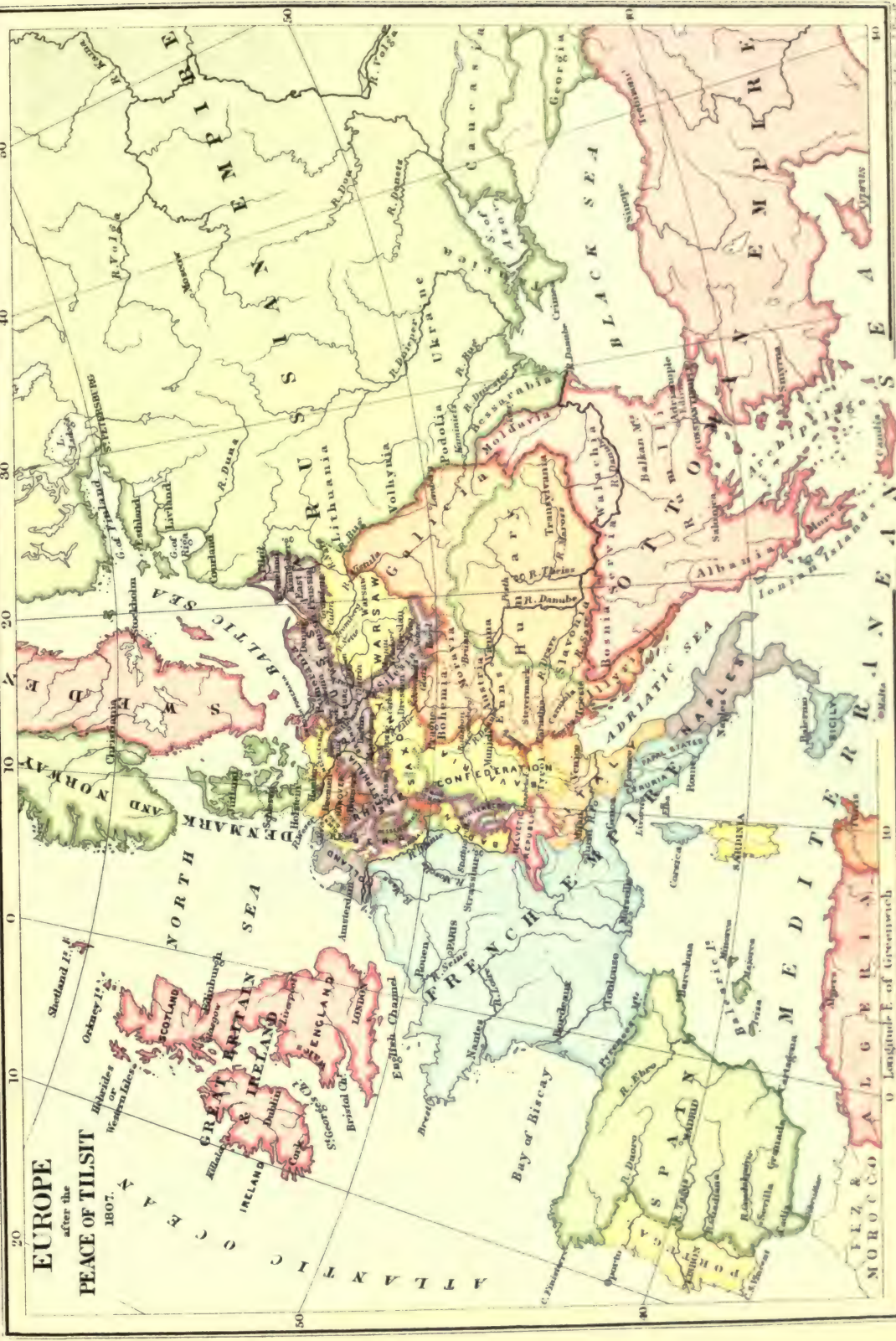
ignorance and bigotry which had been too strong for Pitt were too strong for the Grenville Ministry. Its greatest work, the abolition of the slave trade, in February, was done in the teeth of a vigorous opposition from the Tories and the merchants of Liverpool; and in March the first indication of its desire to open the question of religious equality by allowing Catholic officers to serve in the army was met on the part of the King by the demand of a pledge not to meddle with the question. On the refusal of this pledge the Ministry was dismissed.

## Canning

Its fall was the final close of the union of parties brought about by the peril of French invasion; and from this time to the end of the war England was wholly governed by the Tories. The nominal head of the Ministry which succeeded that of Lord Grenville was the Duke of Portland; its guiding spirit was the Foreign Secretary, George Canning, a young and devoted adherent of Pitt, whose brilliant rhetoric gave him power over the House of Commons, while the vigour and breadth of his mind gave a new energy and colour to the war. At no time had opposition to Napoleon seemed so hopeless. From Berlin the Emperor marched into the heart of Poland, and though checked in the winter by the Russian forces in the hard-fought battle of Eylau, his victory of Friedland brought the Czar Alexander in the summer of 1807 to consent to the Peace of Tilsit. From foes the two Emperors of Western and Eastern Europe became friends, and the hope of French aid in the conquest of Turkey drew Alexander to a close alliance with Napoleon. Russia not only enforced the Berlin decrees against British commerce, but forced Sweden, the one ally that England still retained on the Continent, to renounce her alliance. The Russian and Swedish fleets were thus placed at the service of France; and the two Emperors counted on securing the fleet of Denmark, and again threatening by this union the maritime supremacy which formed England's real defence. The hope was foiled by the appearance off Elsinore in July 1807 of an expedition, promptly and secretly equipped by Canning, with a demand for the surrender of the Danish fleet into the hands of England, on pledge of its return at the close of the war. On the refusal of the Danes the demand was enforced by a bombardment of Copenhagen; and the whole Danish fleet, with a vast mass of naval stores, was

*Peace of  
Tilsit*

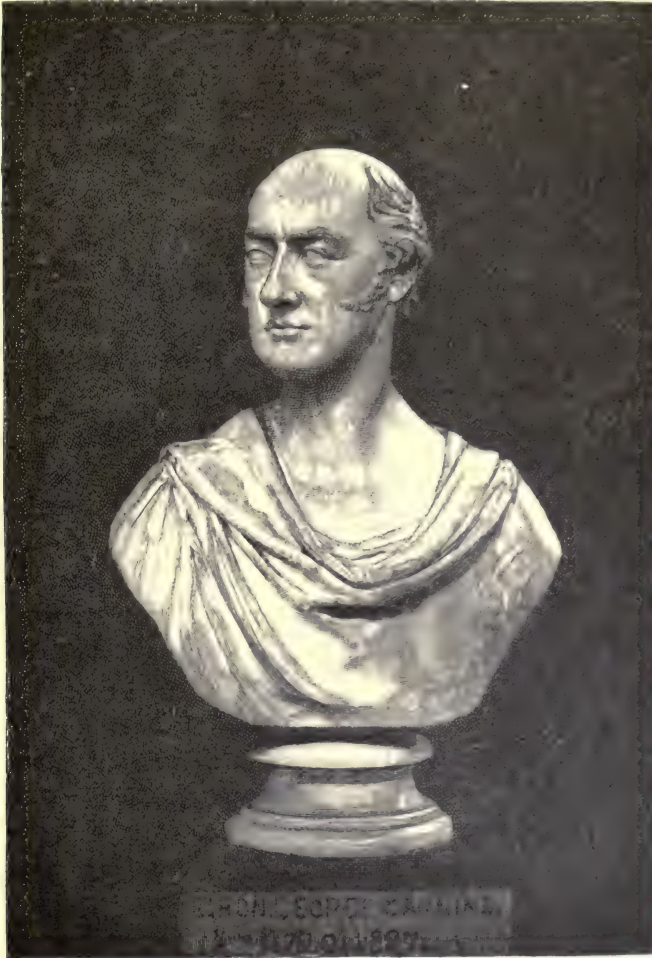






carried into British ports. It was in the same spirit of almost reckless decision that Canning turned to meet Napoleon's Continental System. In November he issued fresh Orders in Council. By these France, and every Continental state from

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



GEORGE CANNING.  
*Bust in National Portrait Gallery.*

which the British flag was excluded, was put in a state of blockade, and all vessels bound for their harbours were held subject to seizure unless they had touched at a British port. The orders were at once met by another decree of Napoleon issued at

The  
Milan  
Decree



SEC. IV  
—  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
—

The Pen-  
insular  
War

Milan in December, which declared every vessel, of whatever nation, coming from or bound to Britain or any British colony, to have forfeited its character as a neutral, and to be liable to seizure.

Meanwhile the effect of the Continental System upon Napoleon was to drive him to aggression after aggression in order to maintain the material union of Europe against Britain. He was absolutely master of Western Europe, and its whole face changed as at an enchanter's touch. Prussia was occupied by French troops. Holland was changed into a monarchy by a simple decree of the French Emperor, and its crown bestowed on his brother Louis. Another brother, Jerome, became King of Westphalia, a new realm built up out of the Electorates of Hesse Cassel and Hanover. A third brother, Joseph, was made King of Naples: while the rest of Italy,



HUSSAR OFFICER.  
*Print, 1807.*



OFFICER, 1792.  
*"The Fortieth Regiment."*

and even Rome itself, was annexed to the French Empire. It was the hope of effectually crushing the world-power of Britain which drove him to his worst aggression, the aggression upon Spain. He acted with his usual subtlety. In October 1807 France and Spain agreed to divide Portugal between them; and on the advance of their forces the reigning house of Braganza fled helplessly from Lisbon to a refuge in Brazil. But the seizure of Portugal was only a prelude to the seizure of Spain. Charles the Fourth, whom a riot in his capital drove at this moment to abdication, and his son, Ferdinand the Seventh, were drawn to Bayonne in May 1808, and forced to resign their claims to the Spanish crown; while a French army entered Madrid and proclaimed Joseph Buonaparte King of Spain. But this high-handed act of aggression was

hardly completed when Spain rose as one man against the stranger ; and desperate as the effort of its people seemed, the news of the rising was welcomed throughout England with a burst of enthusiastic joy. "Hitherto," cried Sheridan, a leader of the

BOOK IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE

1793

TO

1815

The  
Rising of  
Spain



FRENCH EAGLE FROM SPAIN.  
*United Service Institution.*

Whig opposition, "Buonaparte has contended with princes without dignity, numbers without ardour, or peoples without patriotism. He has yet to learn what it is to combat a people who are animated by one spirit against him." Tory and Whig alike held that "never had so happy an opportunity existed in Britain to strike a bold stroke for the rescue of the world ;" and Canning at once resolved to change the system of desultory descents on colonies and

sugar islands for a vigorous warfare in the Peninsula. Supplies were sent to the Spanish insurgents with reckless profusion, and two small armies placed under the command of Sir John Moore

and Sir Arthur Wellesley for service in the Peninsula. In July 1808 the surrender at Baylen of a French force which had invaded Andalusia gave the first shock to the power of Napoleon, and the blow was followed by one almost as severe. Landing at the Mondego with fifteen thousand men, Sir Arthur Wellesley drove the French army of Portugal from the field of Vimiera, and forced it to surrender in the Convention of Cintra on the 30th of August. But the tide of success was soon roughly turned. Napoleon appeared in Spain with an army of two hundred



SPANISH COCKADE.  
*United Service Institution.*

thousand men ; and Moore, who had advanced from Lisbon to Salamanca to support the Spanish armies, found them crushed on the Ebro, and was driven to fall hastily back on the coast. His force saved its honour in a battle before Corunna,

SEC. IV  
 THE  
 WAR WITH  
 FRANCE  
 1793  
 TO  
 1815  
 Jan. 16,  
 1809

which enabled it to embark in safety ; but elsewhere all seemed lost. The whole of northern and central Spain was held by the French armies ; and even Zaragoza, which had once



MAJOR-GENERAL WELLESLEY, AFTERWARDS DUKE OF WELLINGTON.  
*Engraved by O. Lacour from a painting by Robert Home, 1806.*

heroically repulsed them, submitted after a second equally desperate resistance.

**Wellesley** The landing of the wreck of Moore's army and the news of the Spanish defeats turned the temper of England from the wildest hope to the deepest despair ; but Canning remained unmoved. On



the day of the evacuation of Corunna he signed a treaty of alliance with the Spanish Junta at Cadiz ; and the English force at Lisbon, which had already prepared to leave Portugal, was reinforced with thirteen thousand fresh troops, and placed under the command of Sir Arthur Wellesley. "Portugal," Wellesley wrote coolly, "may be defended against any force which the French can bring against it." At this critical moment the best of the French troops with the Emperor himself were drawn from the Peninsula to the Danube ; for the Spanish rising had roused Austria as well as England to a renewal of the struggle. When Marshal Soult therefore threatened Lisbon from the north, Wellesley marched boldly against him, drove him from Oporto in a disastrous retreat, and, suddenly changing his line of operations, pushed with twenty thousand men by Abrantes on Madrid. He was joined on the march by a Spanish force of thirty thousand men ; and a bloody action with a French army of equal force at Talavera, in July 1809, restored the renown of English arms. The losses on both sides were enormous, and the French fell back at the close of the struggle ; but the fruits of the victory were lost by a sudden appearance of Soult on the English line of advance, and Wellesley was forced to retreat hastily on Badajoz. His failure was embittered by heavier disasters elsewhere. Austria was driven to sue for peace by Napoleon's victory at Wagram ; and a force of forty thousand English soldiers which had been despatched against Antwerp returned home baffled after losing half its numbers in the marshes of Walcheren.

The failure at Walcheren brought about the fall of the Portland Ministry. Canning attributed the disaster to the incompetence of Lord Castlereagh, an Irish peer who, after taking the chief part in bringing about the union between England and Ireland, had been raised by the Duke of Portland to the post of Secretary at War ; and the quarrel between the two Ministers ended in a duel, and in their resignation of their offices. The Duke of Portland retired with Canning ; and a new ministry was formed out of the more Tory members of the late administration under the guidance of Spencer Perceval, an industrious mediocrity of the narrowest type ; the Marquis of Wellesley, a brother of the English general in Spain, becoming Foreign Secretary. But if Perceval and his colleagues

SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE

1793

TO

1815

Torres  
Vedras*The  
Perceval  
Ministry*

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
—

possessed few of the higher qualities of statesmanship, they had one characteristic which in the actual position of English affairs was beyond all price. They were resolute to continue the war. In the nation at large the fit of enthusiasm had been followed by a fit of despair ; and the City of London even petitioned for a withdrawal of the English forces from the Peninsula. Napoleon seemed irresistible, and now that Austria was crushed and England stood alone in opposition to him, the Emperor resolved to put an end to the strife by a vigorous prosecution of the war in Spain. Andalusia, the one province which remained independent, was invaded in the opening of 1810, and with the exception of Cadiz reduced to submission ; while Marshal Massena with a fine army of eighty thousand men marched upon Lisbon. Even Perceval abandoned all hope of preserving a hold on the Peninsula in face of these new efforts, and threw on Wellesley, who had been raised to the peerage as Lord Wellington after Talavera, the responsibility of resolving to remain there. But the cool judgement and firm temper which distinguished Wellington enabled him to face a responsibility from which weaker men would have shrunk. " I conceive," he answered, " that the honour and interest of our country require that we should hold our ground here as long as possible ; and, please God, I will maintain it as long as I can." By the addition of Portuguese troops who had been trained under British officers, his army was now raised to fifty thousand men ; and though his inferiority in force compelled him to look on while Massena reduced the frontier fortresses of Ciudad Rodrigo and Almeida, he inflicted on him a heavy check at the heights of Busaco, and finally fell back, in October 1810, on three lines of defence which he had secretly constructed at Torres Vedras, along a chain of mountain heights crowned with redoubts and bristling with cannon. The position was impregnable ; and able and stubborn as Massena was, he found himself forced after a month's fruitless effort to fall back in a masterly retreat ; but so terrible were the privations of the French army in passing again through the wasted country that it was only with forty thousand men that he reached Ciudad Rodrigo, in the spring of 1811. Reinforced by fresh troops, Massena turned fiercely to the relief of Almeida, which Wellington had besieged ; but two days' bloody and obstinate fighting, in May 1811, failed to

drive the English army from its position at Fuentes d'Onore, and the Marshal fell back on Salamanca and relinquished his effort to drive Wellington from Portugal.

Great as was the effect of Torres Vedras in restoring the spirit of the English people and in reviving throughout Europe the hope

of resistance to the tyranny of Napoleon, its immediate result was little save the deliverance of Portugal. The French remained masters of all Spain save Cadiz and the eastern provinces, and even the east coast was reduced in 1811 by the vigour of General Suchet. While England thus failed to rescue Spain from the aggression of Napoleon, she was suddenly brought face to face with the result of

her own aggression in America. The Orders in Council with which Canning had attempted to prevent the transfer of the carrying trade from English to neutral ships, by compelling all vessels on their way to ports under blockade to touch at British

harbours, had at once created serious embarrassments with America. In the long strife between France and England, America had already borne much from both combatants, but above all from Britain. Not only had the English Government exercised its right of search, but it asserted a right of seizing English seamen found in American vessels; and as there

were few means of discriminating between English seamen and American, the sailor of Maine or Massachusetts was often impressed to serve in the British fleet. Galled however as was America by outrages such as these, she was hindered from resenting them by her strong disinclination to war, as well as by the profit which she drew from the maintenance of her neutral position. But the Orders in Council and the Milan decree forced her into action, and she at once answered them by an embargo of trade with Europe. After a year's trial, however, America found it impossible to maintain the embargo; and at the opening of 1809 she exchanged

SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE

1793

1815

England  
and  
America

1807



SILVER PENNY OF WASHINGTON, 1792.



LIVERPOOL HALFPENNY, 1793.



SEC. IV  
 THE  
 WAR WITH  
 FRANCE  
 1793  
 TO  
 1815  
 1809

the embargo for an Act of Non-Intercourse with France and England alone. But the Act was equally ineffective. The American Government was utterly without means of enforcing it on its land frontier; and it had small means of enforcing it at sea. Vessels sailed daily for British ports; and at last the Non-Intercourse Act was repealed altogether. All that America persisted in maintaining was an offer that if either Power would repeal its edicts it would prohibit American commerce with the other. Napoleon seized on



SAILOR, 1807.  
 Atkinson, "Costumes of Great Britain."



MIDSHIPMAN, 1799.  
 After T. W. Rowlandson.

May 1810 this offer, and after promising to revoke his Berlin and Milan Decrees he called on America to redeem her pledge. In February 1811, therefore, the United States announced that all intercourse with Great Britain and her dependencies was at an end. The effect of this step was seen in a reduction of English exports during this year by a third of their whole amount. It was in vain that Britain pleaded that the Emperor's promises remained unfulfilled, and that the enforcement of non-intercourse with England was thus an unjust

act, and an act of hostility. The pressure of the American policy, as well as news of the warlike temper which had at last grown up in the United States, made submission inevitable ; for the industrial state of England was now so critical that to expose it to fresh shocks was to court the very ruin which Napoleon had planned.

During the earlier years of the war, indeed, the increase of wealth had been enormous. England was sole mistress of the seas. The war gave her possession of the colonies of Spain, of Holland, and of France ; and if her trade was checked for a time by the Berlin Decree, the efforts of Napoleon were soon rendered fruitless by the vast smuggling system which sprang up along the southern coasts and the coast of North Germany. English exports had nearly doubled since the opening of the century. Manufactures profited by the discoveries of Watt and Arkwright; and the consumption of raw cotton in the mills of Lancashire rose during the same period from fifty to a hundred millions of pounds. The vast accumulation of capital, as well as the vast increase of the population at this time, told upon the land, and forced agriculture into a feverish and unhealthy prosperity. Wheat rose to famine prices, and the value of land rose in proportion with the price of wheat. Inclosures went on with prodigious rapidity; the income of every landowner was doubled, while the farmers were able to introduce improvements into the processes of agriculture which changed the whole face of the country. But if the increase of wealth was enormous, its distribution was partial. During the fifteen years which preceded Waterloo, the number of the population rose from ten to thirteen millions, and this rapid increase kept down the rate of wages, which would naturally have advanced in a corresponding degree with the increase in the national wealth. Even manufactures, though destined in the long run to benefit the labouring classes, seemed at first rather to depress them ; for one of the earliest results of the introduction of machinery was the ruin of a number of small trades which were carried on at home, and the pauperization of families who relied on them for support. In the winter of 1811 the terrible pressure of this transition from handicraft to machinery was seen in the Luddite, or machine-breaking, riots which broke out over the northern and midland counties, and which were only suppressed by military force. While labour was thus thrown out of its older grooves, and the

SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

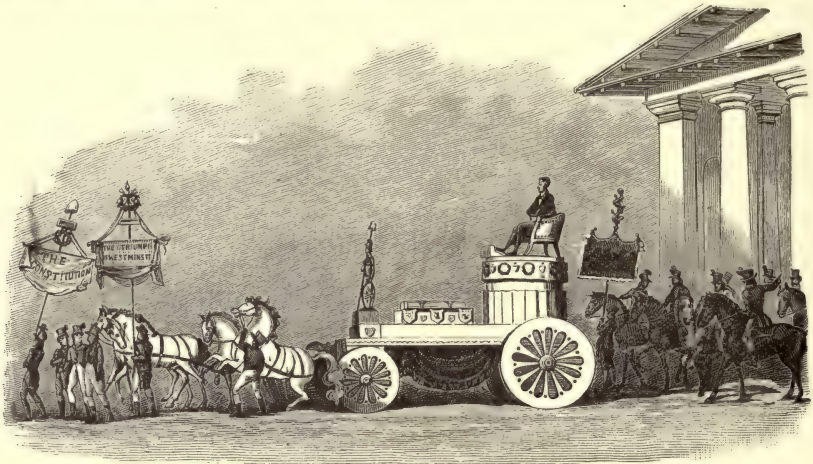
State of  
England

SEC. IV  
—  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815  
—

rate of wages kept down at an artificially low figure by the rapid increase of population, the rise in the price of wheat, which brought wealth to the landowner and the farmer, brought famine and death to the poor, for England was cut off by the war from the vast corn-fields of the Continent or of America, which nowadays redress from their abundance the results of a bad harvest. Scarcity was followed by a terrible pauperization of the labouring classes. The amount of the poor-rate rose fifty per cent. ; and with the increase of poverty followed its inevitable result, the increase of crime.

Revival  
of  
Reform

The natural relation of trade and commerce to the general wealth of the people at large was thus disturbed by the peculiar



PROCESSION AND CHAIRING OF SIR F. BURDETT, JUNE 29, 1807.

*Contemporary print in British Museum.*

circumstances of the time. The war enriched the landowner, the farmer, the merchant, the manufacturer ; but it impoverished the poor. It is indeed from these fatal years which lie between the Peace of Luneville and Waterloo that we must date that war of classes, that social severance between employers and employed, which still forms the main difficulty of English politics. But it is from these years too that we must date the renewal of that progressive movement in politics which had been suspended since the opening of the war. The publication of the *Edinburgh Review* in 1802 by a knot of young lawyers at Edinburgh marked a revival of the policy of constitutional and administrative progress which had been reluctantly abandoned by William Pitt. Jeremy



Bentham gave a new vigour to political speculation by his advocacy of the doctrine of Utility, and his definition of "the greatest happiness of the greatest number" as the aim of political action. In 1809 Sir Francis Burdett revived the question of Parliamentary Reform. Only fifteen members supported his motion ; and a reference to the House of Commons, in a pamphlet which he subsequently published, as "a part of our fellow-subjects collected together by means which it is not necessary to describe" was met by his committal to the Tower, where he remained till the prorogation of the Parliament. A far greater effect was produced by the perseverance with which Canning pressed year by year the question of Catholic Emancipation. So long as Perceval lived both efforts at Reform were equally vain ; but on the accession of Lord Liverpool to power the advancing strength of a more liberal sentiment in the nation was felt by the policy of "moderate concession" which was adopted by the new ministry. Catholic Emancipation became an open question in the Cabinet itself, and was adopted in 1812 by a triumphant majority in the House of Commons, though still rejected by the Lords.

Sec. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

With social and political troubles thus awaking about them, even Tory statesmen were not willing to face the terrible consequences of a ruin of English industry, such as might follow from the junction of America with Napoleon. They were, in fact, preparing to withdraw the Orders in Council, when their plans were arrested by the dissolution of the Perceval Ministry. Its position had from the first been a weak one. A return of the King's madness had made it necessary in the beginning of 1811 to confer the Regency by Act of Parliament on the Prince of Wales ; and the Whig sympathies of the Prince threatened the Perceval Cabinet with dismissal. The insecurity of their position told on the conduct of the war ; for the apparent inactivity of Wellington during 1811 was really due to the hesitation and timidity of the ministers at home. In May 1812 the assassination of Perceval by a maniac named Bellingham brought about the fall of his ministry ; and fresh efforts were made by the Regent to install the Whigs in office. Mutual distrust, however, foiled his attempts ; and the old ministry was restored under the headship of Lord Liverpool, a man of no great abilities, but temperate, well informed, and endowed with a remarkable skill in holding

War with  
America

The  
Liverpool  
Ministry

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE

1793  
TO  
1815

discordant colleagues together. The most important of these colleagues was Lord Castlereagh, who became Secretary for Foreign Affairs. His first work was to meet the danger in which Canning had involved the country by his Orders in Council. At the opening of 1812 America, in despair of redress, had resolved on war; Congress voted an increase of both army and navy, and laid an embargo on all vessels in American harbours. Actual hostilities might still have been averted by the repeal of the Orders, on which the English Cabinet was resolved, but in the confusion which followed the murder of Perceval the opportunity was lost. On the 23rd of June, only twelve days after the ministry had been formed, the Orders were repealed; but when the news of the repeal reached America, it came six weeks too late. On the 18th of June an Act of Congress had declared America at war with Great Britain.

Sala-  
manca  
and  
Moscow

The moment when America entered into the great struggle was a critical moment in the history of mankind. Six days after President Madison issued his declaration of war, Napoleon crossed the Niemen on his march to Moscow. Successful as his policy had been in stirring up war between England and America, it had been no less successful in breaking the alliance which he had made with the Emperor Alexander at Tilsit and in forcing on a contest with Russia. On the one hand, Napoleon was irritated by the refusal of Russia to enforce strictly the suspension of all trade with England, though such a suspension would have ruined the Russian landowners. On the other, the Czar saw with growing anxiety the advance of the French Empire which sprang from Napoleon's resolve to enforce his system by a seizure of the northern coasts. In 1811 Holland, the Hanseatic towns, part of Westphalia, and the Duchy of Oldenburg were successively annexed, and the Duchy of Mecklenburg threatened with seizure. A peremptory demand on the part of France for the entire cessation of intercourse with England brought the quarrel to a head; and preparations were made on both sides for a gigantic struggle. The best of the French soldiers were drawn from Spain to the frontier of Poland; and Wellington, whose army had been raised to a force of forty thousand Englishmen and twenty thousand Portuguese, profited by the withdrawal to throw off his system of defence and to assume an attitude of attack. Ciudad Rodrigo and Badajoz

Welling-  
ton in  
Spain

were taken by storm during the spring of 1812; and three days before Napoleon crossed the Niemen in his march on Moscow Wellington crossed the Agueda in a march on Salamanca. After a series of masterly movements on both sides, Marmont with the French army of the north attacked the English on the hills in the neighbourhood of that town. While he was marching round the right of the English position, his left wing remained isolated; and with a sudden exclamation of "Marmont is lost!" Wellington flung on it the bulk of his force, crushed it, and drove the whole army from the field. The loss on either side was nearly equal, but failure had demoralized the French army; and its retreat forced Joseph to leave Madrid, and Soult to evacuate Andalusia and to concentrate the southern army on the eastern coast. While

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

July 22



MEDAL COMMEMORATING WELLINGTON'S ENTRY INTO MADRID.

Napoleon was still pushing slowly over the vast plains of Poland, Wellington made his entry into Madrid in August, and began the siege of Burgos. The town however held out gallantly for a month, till the advance of the two French armies, now concentrated in the north and south of Spain, forced Wellington in October to a hasty retreat on the Portuguese frontier. If he had shaken the rule of the French in Spain in this campaign, his ultimate failure showed how firm a military hold they still possessed there. But the disappointment was forgotten in the news which followed it. At the moment when the English troops fell back from Burgos began the retreat of the Grand Army from Moscow. Victorious in a battle at Borodino, Napoleon had entered the older capital of Russia in triumph, and waited impatiently to receive

The  
Retreat  
from  
Moscow



## SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE

1793

TO

1815

Fall of  
Napoleon

proposals of peace from the Czar, when a fire kindled by its own inhabitants reduced the city to ashes. The French army was forced to fall back amidst the horrors of a Russian winter. Of the four hundred thousand combatants who formed the Grand Army at its first outset, only a few thousand recrossed the Niemen in December.

In spite of the gigantic efforts which Napoleon made to repair the loss of the Grand Army, the spell which he had cast over Europe was broken by the retreat from Moscow. Prussia rose against him as the Russians crossed the Niemen in the spring of 1813; and the forces which held it were at once thrown back on the Elbe. In this emergency the military genius of the French Emperor rose to its height. With a fresh army of two hundred thousand men whom he had gathered up at Mainz he marched on the allied armies of Russia and Prussia in May, cleared Saxony by a victory over them at Lutzen, and threw them back on the Oder by a fresh victory at Bautzen. Disheartened by defeat, and by the neutral attitude which Austria still preserved, the two powers consented in June to an armistice, and negotiated for peace. But Austria, though unwilling to utterly ruin France to the profit of her great rival in the East, was as resolute as either of the allies to wrest from Napoleon his supremacy over Europe; and at the moment when it became clear that Napoleon was only bent on playing with her proposals, she was stirred to action by news that his army was at last driven from Spain. Wellington had left Portugal in May with an army which had now risen to ninety thousand men; and, overtaking the French forces in retreat at Vitoria, he inflicted on them a defeat which drove them in utter rout across the Pyrenees. Madrid was at once evacuated; and Clauzel fell back from Zaragoza into France. The victory not only freed Spain from its invaders; it restored the spirit of the Allies. The close of the armistice was followed by a union of Austria with the forces of Prussia and the Czar; and in October a final overthrow of Napoleon at Leipzig forced the French army to fall back in rout across the Rhine. The war now hurried to its close. Though held at bay for a while by the sieges of San Sebastian and Pampeluna, as well as by an obstinate defence of the Pyrenees, Wellington succeeded in the very month of the triumph at Leipzig in winning a victory on the Bidassoa, which enabled him to enter

June 21,  
1813

France. He was soon followed by the Allies. On the last day of 1813 their forces crossed the Rhine ; and a third of France passed, without opposition, into their hands. For two months more Napoleon maintained a wonderful struggle with a handful of raw conscripts against their overwhelming numbers ; while in the south, Soult, forced from his entrenched camp near Bayonne and defeated at Orthes, fell back before Wellington on Toulouse. Here their two armies met in April in a stubborn and indecisive engagement. But though neither leader knew it, the war was even then at an end. The struggle of Napoleon himself had ended at the close of March with the surrender of Paris ; and the submission of the capital was at once followed by the abdication of the Emperor and the return of the Bourbons.

SEC. IV  
—  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
—  
1815  
—

England's triumph over its enemy was dashed by the more doubtful fortunes of the struggle across the Atlantic. The declaration of war by America seemed an act of sheer madness ; for its navy consisted of a few frigates and sloops ; its army was a mass of half-drilled and half-armed recruits ; while the States themselves were divided on the question of the war, and Connecticut with Massachusetts refused to send either money or men. Three attempts to penetrate into Canada during the summer and autumn were repulsed with heavy loss. But these failures were more than redeemed by unexpected successes at sea. In two successive engagements between English and American frigates, the former were forced to strike their flag. The effect of these victories was out of all proportion to their real importance ; for they were the first heavy blows which had been dealt at England's supremacy over the seas. In 1813 America followed up its naval triumphs by more vigorous efforts on land. Its forces cleared Lake Ontario, captured Toronto, destroyed the British flotilla on Lake Erie, and made themselves masters of Upper Canada. An attack on Lower Canada, however, was successfully beaten back ; and a fresh advance of the British and Canadian forces in the heart of the winter again recovered the Upper Province. The reverse gave fresh strength to the party in the United States which had throughout been opposed to the war, and whose opposition to it had been embittered by the terrible distress brought about by the blockade and the ruin of American commerce. Cries of secession

The  
American  
War

## SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE1793  
TO  
1815

began to be heard, and Massachusetts took the bold step of appointing delegates to confer with delegates from the other New England States "on the subject of their grievances and common concerns." In 1814, however, the war was renewed with more vigour than ever; and Upper Canada was again invaded. But the American army, after inflicting a severe defeat on the British forces in the battle of Chippewa in July, was itself defeated a few weeks after in an equally stubborn engagement, and thrown back on its own frontier; while the fall of Napoleon enabled the



MEDAL GIVEN BY ENGLAND TO INDIAN  
CHIEFS IN THE AMERICAN WAR.

*Tancred, "Record of Medals."*

English Government to devote its whole strength to the struggle with an enemy which it had ceased to despise. General Ross, with a force of four thousand men, appeared in the Potomac, captured Washington, and before evacuating the city burnt its public buildings to the ground. Few more shameful acts are recorded in our history; and it was the more shameful in that it was done under strict orders from the Government at home. The raid upon Washington, however,

was intended simply to strike terror into the American people; and the real stress of the war was thrown on two expeditions whose business was to penetrate into the States from the north and from the south. Both proved utter failures. A force of nine thousand Peninsular veterans which marched in September to the attack of Plattsburg on Lake Champlain was forced to fall back by the defeat of the English flotilla which accompanied it. A second force under General Packenham appeared in December at the mouth of the Mississippi and attacked New Orleans, but was repulsed by General Jackson with the loss of half its numbers. Peace, however, had already been concluded.



The close of the French war, if it left untouched the grounds of the struggle, made the United States sensible of the danger of pushing it further ; Britain herself was anxious for peace ; and the warring claims, both of England and America, were set aside in silence in the treaty of 1814.

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
1815

Return  
of  
Napoleon

The close of the war with America freed England's hands at a moment when the reappearance of Napoleon at Paris called her to a new and final struggle with France. By treaty with the Allied Powers Napoleon had been suffered to retain a fragment of his former empire—the island of Elba off the coast of Tuscany ; and from Elba he had looked on at the quarrels which sprang up between his conquerors as soon as they gathered at Vienna to complete the settlement of Europe. The most formidable of these quarrels arose from the claim of Prussia to annex Saxony, and that of Russia to annex Poland ; but their union for this purpose was met by a counter-league of England and Austria with their old enemy France, whose ambassador, Talleyrand, laboured vigorously to bring the contest to an issue by force of arms. At the moment, however, when a war between the two leagues seemed close at hand, Napoleon quitted Elba, landed on the coast near Cannes, and, followed only by a thousand of his guards, marched over the mountains of Dauphiné upon Grenoble and Lyons. He counted, and counted justly, on the indifference of the country to its new Bourbon rulers, on the longing of the army for a fresh struggle which should restore its glory, and above all on the spell of his name over soldiers whom he had so often led to victory. In twenty days from his landing he reached the Tuileries unopposed, while Lewis the Eighteenth fled helplessly to Ghent. But whatever hopes he had drawn from the divisions of the Allied Powers were at once dispelled by their resolute action on the news of his descent upon France. Their strife was hushed and their old union restored by the consciousness of a common danger. An engagement to supply a million of men for the purposes of the war, and a recall of their armies to the Rhine, answered Napoleon's efforts to open negotiations with the Powers. England furnished subsidies to the amount of eleven millions, and hastened to place an army on the frontier of the Netherlands. The best troops of the force which had been employed in the Peninsula, however,

March 1,  
1815

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815

were still across the Atlantic ; and of the eighty thousand men who gathered round Wellington only about a half were Englishmen, the rest principally raw levies from Belgium and Hanover. The Duke's plan was to unite with the one hundred and fifty thousand Prussians under Marshal Blucher who were advancing on the Lower Rhine, and to enter France by Mons and Namur, while the forces of Austria and Russia closed in upon Paris by way of Belfort and Elsass.

Waterloo

1815

June 16

But Napoleon had thrown aside all thought of a merely defensive war. By amazing efforts he had raised an army of two hundred and fifty thousand men in the few months since his arrival in Paris ; and in the opening of June one hundred and twenty thousand Frenchmen were concentrated on the Sambre at Charleroi, while Wellington's troops still lay in cantonments on the line of the Scheldt from Ath to Nivelles, and Blucher's on that of the Meuse from Nivelles to Liège. Both the allied armies hastened to unite at Quatre Bras ; but their junction was already impossible. Blucher with eighty thousand men was himself attacked by Napoleon at Ligny, and after a desperate contest driven back with terrible loss upon Wavre. On the same day Ney with twenty thousand men, and an equal force under D'Erlon in reserve, appeared before Quatre Bras, where as yet only ten thousand English and the same force of Belgian troops had been able to assemble. The Belgians broke before the charges of the French horse ; but the dogged resistance of the English infantry gave time for Wellington to bring up corps after corps, till at the close of the day Ney saw himself heavily outnumbered, and withdrew baffled from the field. About five thousand men had fallen on either side in this fierce engagement : but heavy as was Wellington's loss, the firmness of the English army had already done much to foil Napoleon's effort at breaking through the line of the Allies. Blucher's retreat, however, left the English flank uncovered ; and on the following day, while the Prussians were falling back on Wavre, Wellington with nearly seventy thousand men—for his army was now well in hand—withdrew in good order upon Waterloo, followed by the mass of the French forces under the Emperor himself. Napoleon had detached Marshal Grouchy with thirty thousand men to hang upon the rear of the beaten

Prussians, while with a force of eighty thousand he resolved to bring Wellington to battle. On the morning of the 18th of June the two armies faced one another on the field of Waterloo, in front of the Forest of Soignies, on the high road to Brussels. Napoleon's one fear had been that of a continued retreat. "I have them!" he cried, as he saw the English line drawn up on a low rise of ground which stretched across the high road from the

SEC. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



HOUGOMONT.  
*After J. M. W. Turner.*

château of Hougomont on its right to the farm and straggling village of La Haye Sainte on its left. He had some grounds for his confidence of success. On either side the forces numbered between seventy and eighty thousand men; but the French were superior in guns and cavalry, and a large part of Wellington's force consisted of Belgian levies, who broke and fled at the outset of the fight. A fierce attack upon Hougomont opened the battle at eleven; but it was not till midday that the corps of D'Erlon



## SEC. IV

THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE

1793

TO

1815

advanced upon the centre near La Haye Sainte, which from that time bore the main brunt of the struggle. Never has greater courage, whether of attack or endurance, been shown on any field than was shown by both combatants at Waterloo. The columns of D'Erlon, repulsed by the English foot, were hurled back in disorder by a charge of the Scots Greys; but the victorious horsemen were crushed in their turn by the French cuirassiers, and the mass of the French cavalry, twelve thousand strong, flung itself in charge after charge on the English front, carrying the English guns and sweeping with desperate bravery round the unbroken squares whose fire thinned their ranks. With almost equal bravery the French columns of the centre again advanced, wrested at last the farm of La Haye Sainte from their opponents, and pushed on vigorously though in vain under Ney against the troops in its rear. But meanwhile every hour was telling against Napoleon. To win the battle he must crush the English army before Blucher joined it; and the English army was still uncrushed. Terrible as was his loss, and many of his regiments were reduced to a mere handful of men, Wellington stubbornly held his ground while the Prussians, advancing from Wavre through deep and miry forest roads, were slowly gathering to his support, disregarding the attack on their rear by which Grouchy strove to hold them back from the field. At half-past four their advanced guard deployed at last from the woods; but the main body was far behind, and Napoleon was still able to hold his ground against them till their increasing masses forced him to stake all on a desperate effort against the English front. The Imperial Guard—his only reserve, and which had as yet taken no part in the battle—was drawn up at seven in two huge columns of attack. The first, with Ney himself at its head, swept all before it as it mounted the rise beside La Haye Sainte, on which the thin English line still held its ground, and all but touched the English front when its mass, torn by the terrible fire of musketry with which it was received, gave way before a charge. The second, three thousand strong, advanced with the same courage over the slope near Hougomont, only to be repulsed and shattered in its turn. At the moment when these masses fell slowly and doggedly back down the fatal rise, the Prussians pushed forward on

Napoleon's right, their guns swept the road to Charleroi, and Wellington seized the moment for a general advance. From that hour all was lost. Only the Guard stood firm in the wreck of the French army; and though darkness and exhaustion checked the English in their pursuit of the broken troops as they hurried from the field, the Prussian horse continued the chase through the night. Only forty thousand Frenchmen with some thirty guns recrossed the Sambre, while Napoleon himself fled hurriedly to Paris. His second abdication was followed by the triumphant entry of the English and Prussian armies into the French capital; and the long war ended with his exile to St. Helena, and the return of Lewis the Eighteenth to the throne of the Bourbons.

SECT. IV  
THE  
WAR WITH  
FRANCE  
1793  
TO  
1815



THE "BELLEROPHON," THE SHIP ON BOARD OF WHICH NAPOLEON SURRENDERED.  
*After J. M. W. Turner.*





CHELSEA PENSIONERS READING THE GAZETTE OF WATERLOO.  
*Picture by Wilkie, 1822.*





THE HAT-FINISHERS IN COMBINATION, 1820.

*Print in Place MSS., British Museum.*

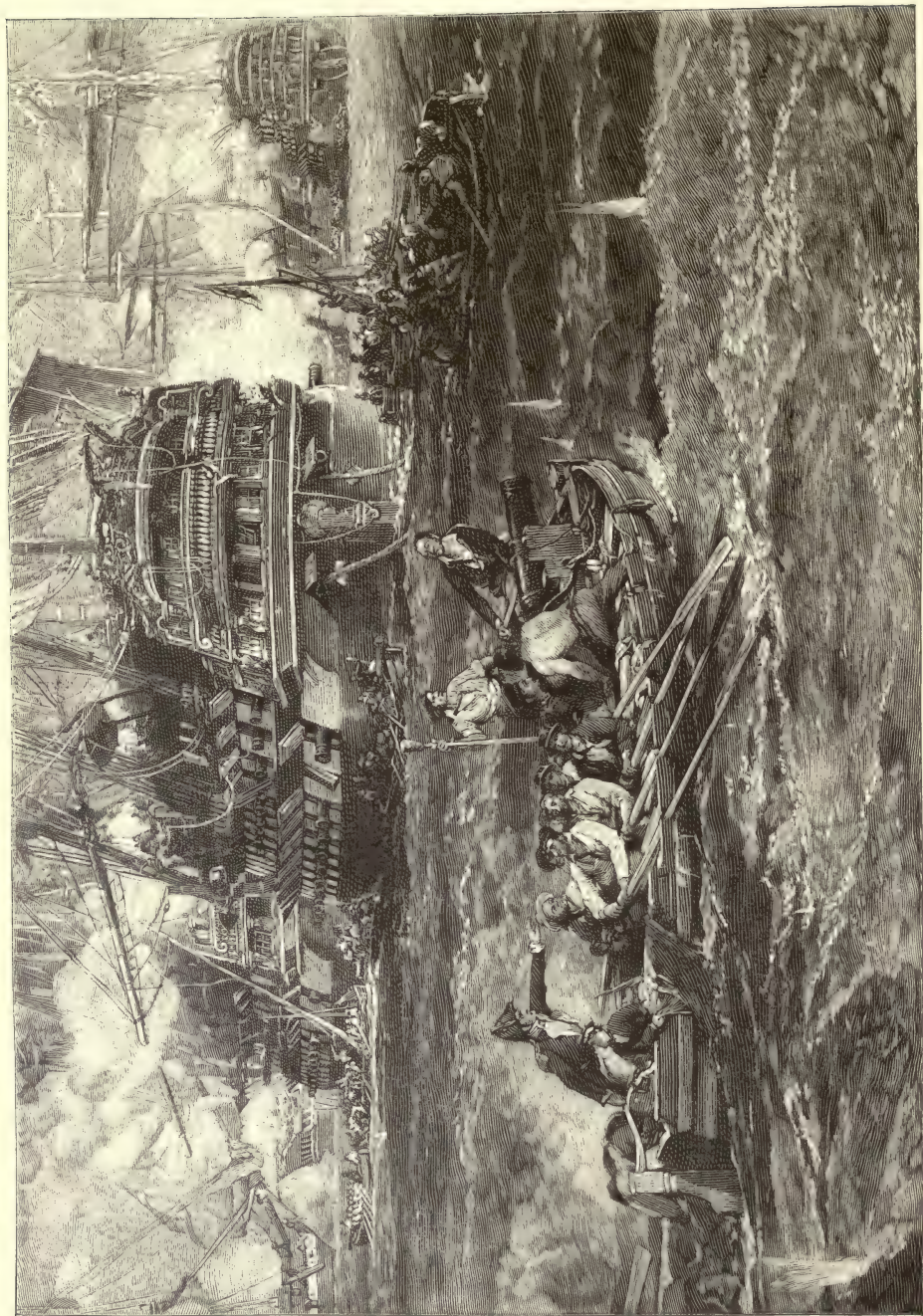
## EPILOGUE.

WITH the victory of Waterloo we reach a time within the memory of some now living, and the opening of a period of our history, the greatest indeed of all in real importance and interest, but perhaps too near to us as yet to admit of a cool and purely historical treatment. In a work such as the present at any rate it will be advisable to limit ourselves from this point to a brief summary of the more noteworthy events which have occurred in our political history since 1815.

The peace which closed the great war with Napoleon left Britain feverish and exhausted. Of her conquests at sea she retained only Malta (whose former possessors, the Knights of St. John, had ceased to exist), the Dutch colonies of Ceylon and the Cape of Good Hope, the French Colony of Mauritius, and a few West India islands. On the other hand, the pressure of the heavy taxation and of the debt, which now reached eight hundred millions, was embittered by the general distress of the country.

1815  
1816  
1873

The  
Peace



THE BOMBARDMENT OF ALGIERS BY VISCOUNT EXMOUTH, 1816.

*Picture by George Chambers, in Royal Naval College, Greenwich.*



The rapid development of English industry for a time ran ahead of the world's demands; the markets at home and abroad were glutted with unsaleable goods, and mills and manufactories were brought to a standstill. The scarcity caused by a series of bad harvests was intensified by the selfish legislation of the landowners in Parliament. Conscious that the prosperity of English agriculture was merely factitious, and rested on the high price of corn produced by the war, they prohibited by an Act passed in 1815 the introduction of foreign corn till wheat had reached famine prices. Society, too, was disturbed by the great changes of employment consequent on a sudden return to peace after twenty years of war, and by the disbanding of the immense forces employed at sea and on land. The movement against machinery which had been put down in 1812 revived in formidable riots, and the distress of the rural poor brought about a rapid increase of crime. The steady opposition too of the Administration, in which Lord Castlereagh's influence was now supreme, to any project of political progress created a dangerous irritation which brought to the front men whose demand of a "radical reform" in English institutions won them the name of Radicals, and drove more violent agitators into treasonable disaffection and silly plots. In 1819 the breaking up by military force of a meeting at Manchester, assembled for the purpose of advocating a reform in Parliament, increased the unpopularity of the Government; and a plot of some desperate men with Arthur Thistlewood at their head for the assassination of the whole Ministry, which is known as the Cato Street Conspiracy, threw light on the violent temper which was springing up among its more extreme opponents. The death of George the Third in 1820, and the accession of his son the Prince Regent as George the Fourth, only added to the general disturbance of men's minds. The new King had long since forsaken his wife and privately charged her with infidelity; his first act on mounting the throne was to renew his accusations against her, and to lay before Parliament a bill for the dissolution of her marriage with him. The public agitation which followed on this step at last forced the Ministry to abandon the bill, but the shame of the royal family and the unpopularity of the King increased the general discontent of the country.

Enslaved  
1815  
The  
1873

1820



## EPILOGUE

1815  
TO  
1873  
Canning

1820

The real danger to public order, however, lay only in the blind opposition to all political change which confused wise and moderate projects of reform with projects of revolution; and in 1822 the suicide of Lord Castlereagh, who had now become Marquis of Londonderry, and to whom this opposition was mainly due, put an end to the policy of mere resistance. Canning became Foreign Secretary in Castlereagh's place, and with Canning returned the earlier and progressive policy of William Pitt. Abroad, his first act was to break with the "Holy Alliance," as it called itself, which the continental courts had formed after the overthrow of Napoleon for the repression of revolutionary or liberal movements in their kingdoms, and whose despotic policy had driven Naples, Spain, and Portugal into revolt. Canning asserted the principle of non-interference in the internal affairs of foreign states, a principle he enforced by sending troops in 1826 to defend Portugal from Spanish intervention, while he recognized the revolted colonies of Spain in South America and Mexico as independent states. At home his influence was seen in the new strength gained by the question of Catholic Emancipation, and in the passing of a bill for giving relief to Roman Catholics through the House of Commons in 1825. With the entry of his friend Mr. Huskisson into office in 1823 began a commercial policy which was founded on a conviction of the benefits derived from freedom of trade, and which brought about at a later time the repeal of the Corn Laws. The new drift of public policy produced a division among the Ministers which showed itself openly at Lord Liverpool's death in 1827. Canning became First Lord of the Treasury, but the Duke of Wellington, with the Chancellor, Lord Eldon, and the Home Secretary, Mr. Peel, refused to serve under him; and four months after the formation of Canning's Ministry it was broken up by his death. A temporary Ministry formed under Lord Goderich on Canning's principles was at once weakened by the position of foreign affairs. A revolt of the Greeks against Turkey had now lasted some years, in spite of Canning's efforts to bring about peace, and the despatch of an Egyptian expedition with orders to devastate the Morea and carry off its inhabitants as slaves forced England, France, and Russia to interfere. In 1827 their united fleet under Admiral Codrington attacked and destroyed that of

Egypt in the bay of Navarino; but the blow at Turkey was disapproved by English opinion, and the Ministry, already wanting in Parliamentary strength, was driven to resign.

EPILOGUE

1815

TO

1873

Reform

The formation of a purely Tory Ministry by the Duke of Wellington, with Mr. Peel for its principal support in the



REPEAL BUTTON.

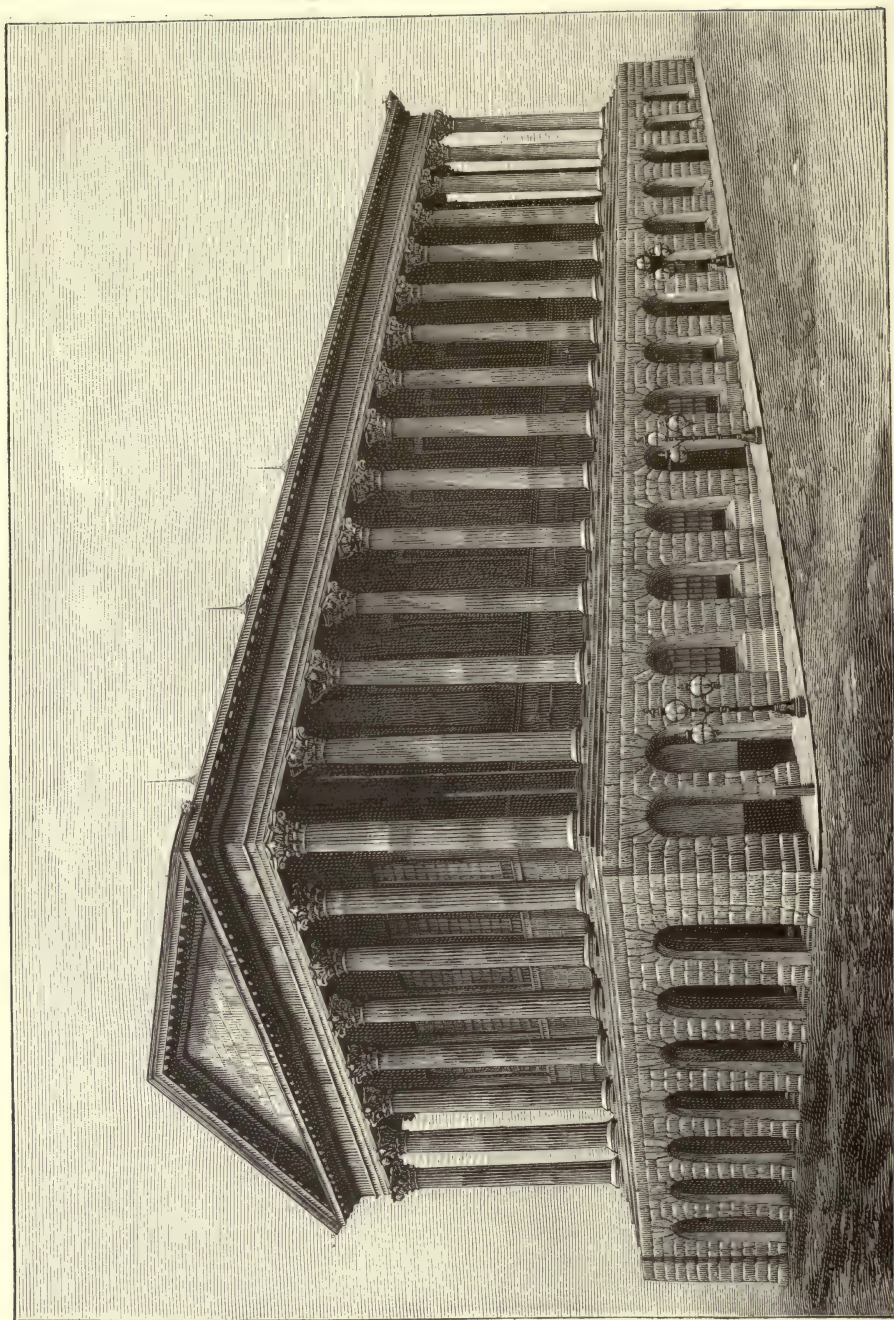
DANIEL O'CONNELL.

*Miniature by Mulrenin.*

REPEAL BUTTON.

Commons, was generally looked on as a promise of utter resistance to all further progress. But the state of Ireland, where a "Catholic Association" formed by Daniel O'Connell maintained a growing agitation, had now reached a point when the English Ministry had to choose between concessions and civil war. The Duke gave way,





TOWN HALL, BIRMINGHAM.  
Built 1834.



and brought in a bill which, like that designed by Pitt, admitted Roman Catholics to Parliament, and to all but a few of the highest posts, civil or military, in the service of the Crown. The passing of this bill by the aid of the Whigs threw the Tory party into confusion; while the cry for Parliamentary Reform was suddenly revived with a strength it had never known before by a Revolution in France, which drove Charles the Tenth from the throne and called his cousin, Louis Philippe, the Duke of Orleans, to reign as a Constitutional King. William the Fourth, who succeeded to the crown on the death of his brother, George the Fourth, at this moment was favourable to the demand of Reform, but Wellington refused all concession. The refusal drove him from office; and for the first time after twenty years the Whigs saw themselves again in power under the leadership of Earl Grey. A bill for Parliamentary Reform, which took away the right of representation from fifty-six decayed or rotten boroughs, gave the 143 members it gained to counties or large towns which as yet sent no members to Parliament, established a £10 householder qualification for voters in boroughs, and extended the county franchise to leaseholders and copyholders, was laid before Parliament in 1831. On its defeat the Ministry appealed to the country. The new House of Commons at once passed the bill, and so terrible was the agitation produced by its rejection by the Lords, that on its subsequent reintroduction the Peers who opposed it withdrew and suffered it to become law. The Reformed Parliament which met in 1833 did much by the violence and inexperience of many of its new members, and especially by the conduct of O'Connell, to produce a feeling of reaction in the country. On the resignation of Lord Grey in 1834 the Ministry was reconstituted under the leadership of Viscount Melbourne; and though this administration was soon dismissed by the King, whose sympathies had now veered round to the Tories, and succeeded for a short time by a Ministry under Sir Robert Peel, a general election again returned a Whig Parliament, and replaced Lord Melbourne in office. Weakened as it was by the growing change of political feeling throughout the country, no Ministry has ever wrought greater and more beneficial changes than the Whig Ministry under Lord Grey and Lord Melbourne during its ten years of rule. In 1833 the system of

EPILOGUE.

1815

1873

1829

1830

June 1,  
1832

Nov. 1834

April 1835

EPILOGUE

1815  
TO  
1873

1831-1841

slavery which still existed in the British colonies, though the Slave Trade was suppressed, was abolished at a cost of twenty millions; the commercial monopoly of the East India Company was abolished, and the trade to the East thrown open to all merchants. In 1834 the growing evil of pauperism was checked by the enactment of a New Poor Law. In 1835 the Municipal Corporations Act restored to the inhabitants of towns those rights of self-government of which they had been deprived since the fourteenth century. 1836 saw the passing of the General Registration Act, while the constant quarrels over tithe were remedied by the Act for Tithe Commutation, and one of the grievances of Dissenters redressed by a measure which allowed civil marriage. A system of national education, begun in 1834 by a small annual grant towards the erection of schools, was developed in 1839 by the creation of a Committee of the Privy Council for edu-



MANCHESTER OPERATIVE.  
*Illustrated London News*, 1842.



STAFFORDSHIRE COLLIERS.  
*Penny Magazine*, 1836.

cational purposes and by the steady increase of educational grants.

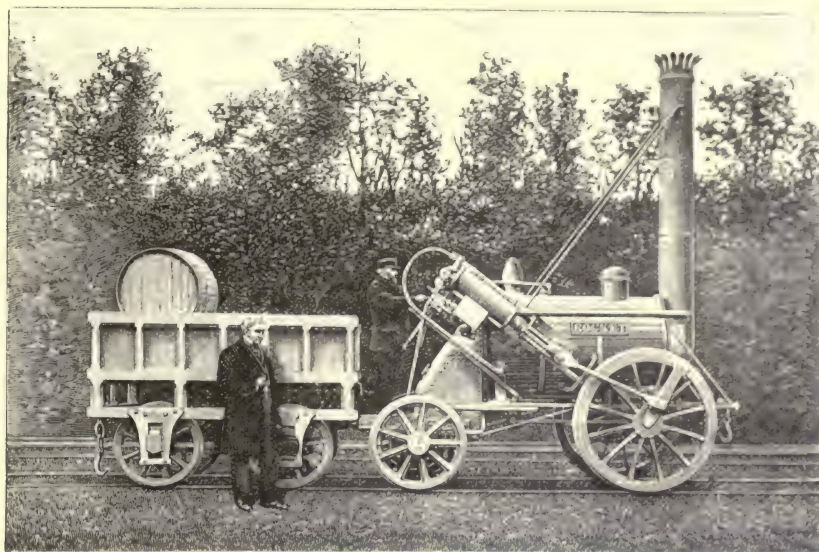
Great however as these measures were, the difficulties of the Whig Ministry grew steadily year by year. Ireland, where O'Connell maintained an incres-

sant agitation for the Repeal of the Union, could only be held down by Coercion Acts. In spite of the impulse given to trade

1815

1873

Peel



THE "ROCKET," 1829.

by the system of steam communication which began with the opening of the Liverpool and Manchester Railway in 1830, the



"GREATER BRITAIN," 1893.

country still suffered from distress: and the discontent of the poorer classes gave rise in 1839 to riotous demands for "the People's Charter," including universal suffrage, vote by ballot,



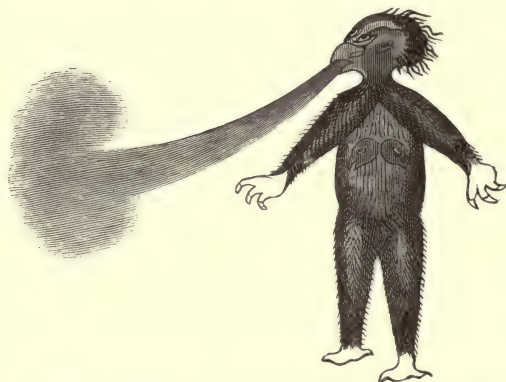
## EPILOGUE

1815  
TO  
1873

annual Parliaments, equal electoral districts, the abolition of all property qualification for members, and payment for their services. In Canada a quarrel between the two districts of Upper and Lower Canada was suffered through mismanagement to grow into a formidable revolt. The vigorous but meddlesome way in which Lord Palmerston, a disciple of Canning, carried out that statesman's foreign policy, supporting Donna Maria as sovereign in Portugal and Isabella as Queen in Spain against claimants of more absolutist tendencies by a Quadruple Alliance with France and the two countries of the Peninsula, and forcing Mehemet Ali, the Pacha of Egypt, to withdraw from an attack on Turkey by the bombardment of Acre in 1840, created general uneasiness; while the public conscience was wounded by a war with China in 1839 on its refusal to allow the smuggling of opium into its dominions.



TURKISH MEDAL FOR BOMBARDMENT OF ACRE, 1840.



CHINESE SKETCH OF ENGLISH SAILOR IN WAR OF 1839.

*Illustrated London News, 1857.*

A more terrible blow was given to the Ministry by events in India; where the occupation of Cabul in 1839 ended two years later in a general revolt of the Affghans and in the loss of a British army in the Khyber Pass. The strength of the Government was restored for a time by the death of William the Fourth in 1837

and the accession of Victoria, the daughter of his brother Edward, Duke of Kent. With the accession of Queen Victoria ended the union of England and Hanover under the same sovereigns, the latter state passing to the next male heir, Ernest, Duke of Cumberland. But the Whig hold on the House of

Commons passed steadily away, and a general election in 1841 gave their opponents, who now took the name of Conservatives, a majority of nearly a hundred members. The general confidence in Sir Robert Peel, who was placed at the head of the Ministry which followed that of Lord Melbourne, enabled him to deal

1841

1815

1817

1873



VISCOUNT MELBOURNE.  
*Picture by Sir T. Lawrence.*

vigorously with two of the difficulties which had most hampered his predecessors. The disorder of the public finances was repaired by the repeal of a host of oppressive and useless duties and by the imposition of an Income Tax. In Ireland O'Connell was charged with sedition and convicted, and though subsequently released from prison on appeal to the House of Lords, his influence

EPILOGUE

1815  
TO  
1873

received a shock from which it never recovered. Peace was made with China by a treaty which threw open some of its ports to traders of all nations; in India the disaster of Cabul was avenged by an expedition under General Pollock which penetrated



GREAT SEAL OF QUEEN VICTORIA.  
(Obverse.)

1845-1846 victoriously to the capital of that country in 1842, and the province of Scinde was annexed to the British dominions. The shock, however, to the English power brought about fresh struggles for supremacy with the natives, and especially with the Sikhs, who



were crushed for the time in three great battles at Moodkee, Ferozeshah, and Sobraon. EPILOGUE

Successful as it proved itself abroad, the Conservative Government encountered unexpected difficulties at home. From the

1815  
TO  
1873  
Free-  
Trade



GREAT SEAL OF QUEEN VICTORIA.  
(Reverse.)

enactment of the Corn Laws in 1815 a dispute had constantly gone on between those who advocated these and similar measures as a protection to native industry and those who, viewing them as simply laying a tax on the consumer for the benefit of the pro-

EPILOGUE

1815  
TO  
1873

ducer, claimed entire freedom of trade with the world. In 1839 an Anti-Corn-Law League had been formed to enforce the views of the advocates of free trade ; and it was in great measure the alarm of the farmers and landowners at its action which had induced them



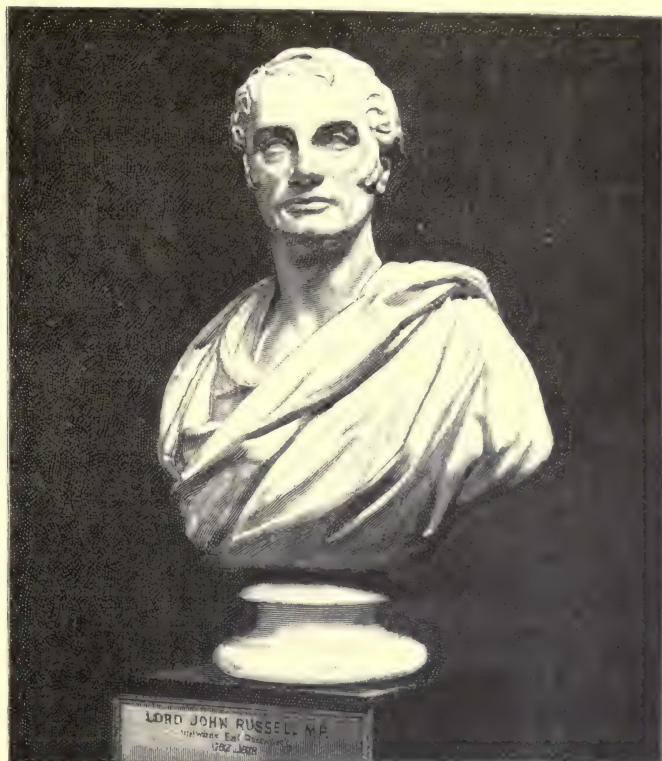
SIR ROBERT PEEL.

*Picture by John Linnell, in National Portrait Gallery.*

to give so vigorous a support to Sir Robert Peel. But though Peel entered office pledged to protective measures, his own mind was slowly veering round to a conviction of their inexpediency ; and in 1846 the failure of the potato crop in Ireland and of the harvest



in England forced him to introduce a bill for the repeal of the Corn Laws. The bill passed, but the resentment of his own party soon drove him from office; and he was succeeded by a Whig Ministry under Lord John Russell, which remained in power till 1852. The first work of this Ministry was to carry out the policy of free trade into every department of British commerce; and from



LORD JOHN RUSSELL.

*Bust by John Francis, in National Portrait Gallery.*

that time to this the maxim of the League, to "buy in the cheapest market and sell in the dearest," has been accepted as the law of our commercial policy. Other events were few. The general overthrow of the continental monarchs in the Revolution of 1848 found faint echoes in a feeble rising in Ireland under Smith O'Brien which was easily suppressed by a few policemen, and in a demonstration of the Chartists in London which passed off without



## EPILOGUE

1815  
TO  
1873Russian  
and  
Sepoy  
Wars

further disturbance. A fresh war with the Sikhs in 1848 was closed by the victory of Goojerat and the annexation of the Punjaub in the following year.

The long peace which had been maintained between the European powers since the treaties of 1815 was now drawing to a close. In 1852 the Ministry of Lord John Russell was displaced by a short return of the Conservatives to power under Lord Derby; but a union of the Whigs with the Free Trade followers of Sir Robert Peel restored them to office at the close of the year. Lord Aberdeen, the head of the new administration, was at once compelled to resist the attempts of Russia to force on Turkey a

humiliating treaty; and in 1854 England allied herself with Louis Napoleon, who had declared himself Emperor of the French, to resist the invasion of the Danubian Principalities by a Russian army. The army was withdrawn; but in September the allied force landed on the shores of the Crimea, and after a victory at the river Alma undertook the siege of Sebastopol. The garrison however soon proved as strong as the besiegers, and as fresh Russian forces reached the Crimea the Allies found themselves besieged in their turn. An attack on the English position at Inkerman on November the



TURKISH MEDAL FOR DEFENCE  
OF SILISTRIA.

*Tancred, "Record of Medals."*

5th was repulsed with the aid of a French division; but winter proved more terrible than the Russian sword, and the English force wasted away with cold or disease. The public indignation at its sufferings forced the Aberdeen Ministry from office in the opening of 1855; and Lord Palmerston became Premier with a Ministry which included those members of the last administration who were held to be most in earnest in the prosecution of the war. After a siege of nearly a year the Allies at last became masters of Sebastopol in September, and Russia, spent with the strife, consented in 1856 to the Peace of Paris. The military reputation of England had fallen low during the struggle, and

to this cause the mutiny of the native troops in Bengal, which quickly followed in 1857, may partly be attributed. Russian intrigues, Moslem fanaticism, resentment at the annexation of the kingdom of Oudh by Lord Dalhousie, and a fanatical belief on the part of the Hindoos that the English Government had resolved to make them Christians by forcing them to lose their caste, have all been assigned as causes of an outbreak which still remains mysterious. A mutiny at Meerut in May was followed by the seizure of Delhi, where the native king was enthroned as Emperor of Hindostan, by a fresh mutiny and massacre of the Europeans at Cawnpore, by the rising of Oudh and the siege of the Residency

Lord Palmerston

1815

1873



SILVER COIN OF EAST INDIA COMPANY, 1675.



at Lucknow. The number of English troops in India was small, and for the moment all Eastern and Central Hindostan seemed lost; but Madras, Bombay, and the Punjaub remained untouched, and

the English in Bengal and Oudh not only held their ground but marched upon Delhi, and in September took the town by storm.



RUPEE OF BHURTPOR, 1858.

Two months later the arrival of reinforcements under Sir Colin Campbell relieved Lucknow, which had been saved till now by the heroic advance of Sir Henry Havelock with a handful of troops, and cleared Oudh of the mutineers. The suppression of the revolt was followed by a change in the government of India, which was transferred in 1858 from the Company to the Crown; the Queen being

formally proclaimed its sovereign, and the Governor-General becoming her Viceroy.

The credit which Lord Palmerston won during the struggle with Russia and the Sepoys was shaken by his conduct in proposing an alteration in the law respecting conspiracies in 1858, in consequence of an attempt to assassinate Napoleon the Third which was believed to have originated on English ground. The violent language of the French army brought about a movement

Lord Palmerston

## EPILOGUE

1815  
TO  
1873

for the enlistment of a Volunteer force, which soon reached a hundred and fifty thousand men; and so great was the irritation it caused that the bill, which was thought to have been introduced in deference to the demands of France, was rejected by the House of Commons. Lord Derby again became Prime Minister for a few months: but a fresh election in 1859 brought back Lord Palmerston, whose Ministry lasted till his death in 1865. At home



VISCOUNT PALMERSTON.

*From an engraving by Joseph Brown of a photograph by John Watkins.*

his policy was one of pure inaction; and his whole energy was directed to the preservation of English neutrality in five great strifes which distracted not only Europe but the New World—a war between France and Austria in 1859 which ended in the creation of the kingdom of Italy, a civil war in America which began with the secession of the Southern States in 1861 and ended four years later in their subjugation, an insurrection of Poland in



1863, an attack of France upon Mexico, and of Austria and Prussia upon Denmark in 1864. The American war, by its interference with the supply of cotton, reduced Lancashire to distress ; while the fitting out of piratical cruisers in English harbours in the name of the Southern Confederation gave America just grounds for an irritation which was only allayed at a far later time. Peace, however, was successfully preserved ; and the policy of non-intervention was pursued after Lord Palmerston's death by his successor, Lord Russell, who remained neutral during the brief but decisive conflict between Prussia and Austria in 1866 which transferred to the former the headship of Germany.

With Lord Palmerston, however, passed away the policy of political inaction which distinguished his rule. Lord Russell had long striven to bring about a further reform of Parliament ; and in 1866 he laid a bill for that purpose before the House of Commons, whose rejection was followed by the resignation of the Ministry. Lord Derby, who again became Prime Minister, with Mr. Disraeli as leader of the House of Commons, found himself however driven to introduce in 1867 a Reform Bill of a far more sweeping character than that which had failed in Lord Russell's hands. By this measure, which passed in August, the borough franchise was extended to all ratepayers, as well as to lodgers occupying rooms of the annual value of £10 ; the county franchise was fixed at £12, thirty-three members were withdrawn from English boroughs, twenty-five of whom were transferred to English counties, and the rest assigned to Scotland and Ireland. Large numbers of the working classes were thus added to the constituencies ; and the indirect effect of this great measure was at once seen in the vigorous policy of the Parliament which assembled after the new elections in 1868. Mr. Disraeli, who had become Prime Minister on the withdrawal of Lord Derby, retired quietly on finding that a Liberal majority of over one hundred members had been returned to the House of Commons ; and his place was taken by Mr. Gladstone, at the head of a Ministry which for the first time included every section of the Liberal party. A succession of great measures proved the strength and energy of the new administration. Its first work was with Ireland, whose chronic discontent it endeavoured to remove by the disestablishment and disendowment

EPILOGUE

1815

TO

1873

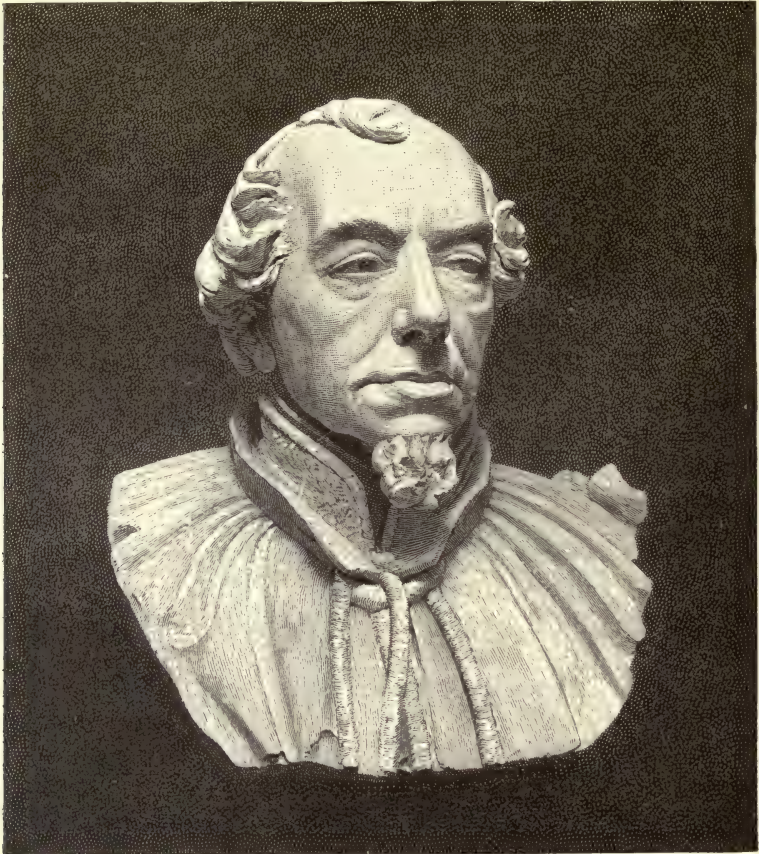
The  
New Re-  
formers

1867

## EPILOGUE

1815  
TO  
1873

of the Protestant Church in 1869, and by a Land Bill which established a sort of tenant-right in every part of the country in 1870. The claims of the Nonconformists were met in 1868 by the abolition of compulsory church-rates, and in 1871 by the abolition



BENJAMIN DISRAELI, EARL OF BEACONSFIELD.

*Bust by Sir E. J. Boehm.*

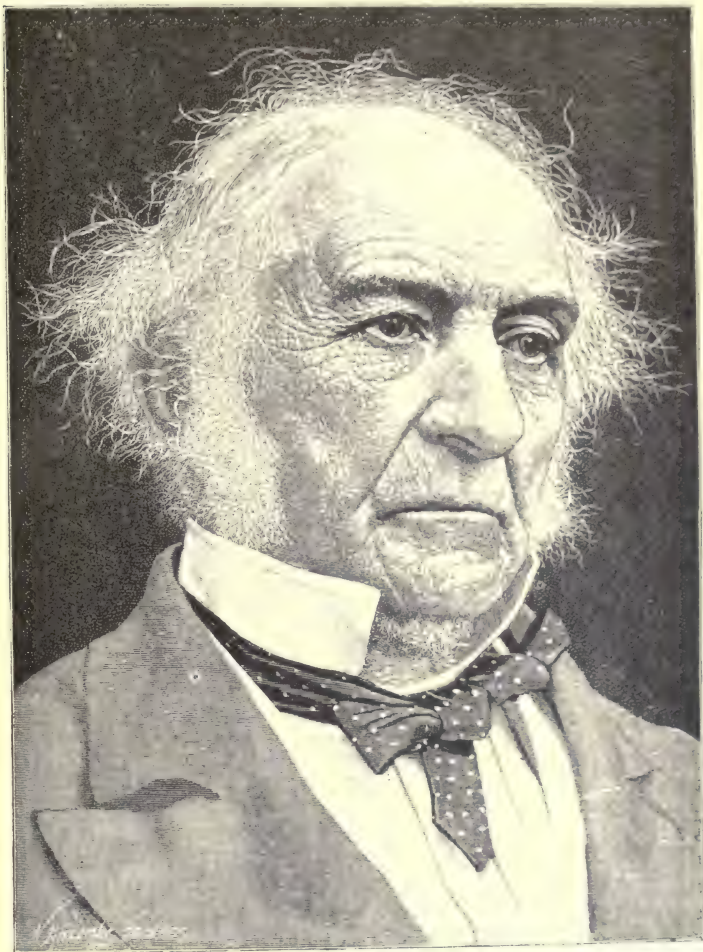
of all religious tests for admission to offices or degrees in the Universities. Important reforms were undertaken in the management of the navy ; and a plan for the entire reorganization of the army was carried into effect after the system of promotion to its command by purchase had been put an end to. In 1870 the ques-

tion of national education was furthered by a bill which provided for the establishment of School Boards in every district, and for their support by means of local rates. In 1872 a fresh step in Parliamentary reform was made by the passing of a measure which

EPILOGUE

1815

1873



THE RIGHT HON. W. E. GLADSTONE.

*Engraved by W. Biscombe Gardner from a photograph by S. A. Waller*

enabled the votes of electors to be given in secret by means of the ballot. The greatness and rapidity of these changes, however, produced so rapid a reaction in the minds of the constituencies



EPILOGUE

1815  
TO  
1873

that on the failure of his attempt to pass a bill for organizing the higher education of Ireland, Mr. Gladstone felt himself forced in 1874 to consult public opinion by a dissolution of Parliament ; and the return of a Conservative majority of nearly seventy members was necessarily followed by his retirement from office, Mr. Disraeli again becoming First Minister of the Crown.



1. ENGLAND.



4. IRELAND.



3. GREAT BRITAIN.



2. SCOTLAND.

5. GREAT BRITAIN  
AND IRELAND.

THE UNION FLAG.

CHRONOLOGICAL ANNALS  
OF  
ENGLISH HISTORY





# CHRONOLOGICAL ANNALS

OF

## ENGLISH HISTORY

### THE ENGLISH KINGDOMS

449—1016

- |            |   |            |   |
|------------|---|------------|---|
| <b>449</b> | <b>English land in Britain.</b>                         | <b>664</b> | Council of Whitby.<br><i>Codmon at Whitby.</i>      |
| <b>457</b> | Kent conquered by English.                              | <b>668</b> | <i>Theodore made Archbishop of Canterbury.</i>      |
| <b>477</b> | Landing of South Saxons.                                | <b>670</b> | <b>Ecgfrith</b> , King of Northumbria, died 685.    |
| <b>491</b> | Siege of Anderida.                                      | <b>675</b> | <b>Æthelred</b> , King of Mercia, died 704.         |
| <b>495</b> | Landing of West Saxons.                                 | <b>681</b> | <i>Wilfred converts South Saxons.</i>               |
| <b>519</b> | <b>Cerdic</b> and <b>Cynric</b> , Kings of West Saxons. | <b>682</b> | Cenwine of Wessex conquers Melfa Somerset.          |
| <b>520</b> | British victory at Mount Badon.                         | <b>685</b> | Ecgfrith defeated and slain at Nectonmere.          |
| <b>547</b> | Ida founds kingdom of Bernicia.                         | <b>688</b> | <b>Ine</b> , King of West Saxons, died 726.         |
| <b>552</b> | West Saxons take Old Sarum.                             | <b>715</b> | — defeats Ceolred of Mercia at Wainborough.         |
| <b>560</b> | <b>Æthelberht</b> , King of Kent, died 616.             | <b>716</b> | <b>Æthelbald</b> , King of Mercia, died 757.        |
| <b>568</b> | — driven back by West Saxons.                           | <b>733</b> | Mercian conquest of Wessex.                         |
| <b>571</b> | West Saxons march into Mid-Britain.                     | <b>735</b> | <i>Death of Boniface.</i>                           |
| <b>577</b> | — conquer at Deorham.                                   | <b>753</b> | <i>Death of Boniface.</i>                           |
| <b>584</b> | — defeated at Faddileigh.                               | <b>754</b> | Wessex recovers London after battle at Barford.     |
| <b>588</b> | <b>Æthelric</b> creates Kingdom of Northumbria.         | <b>756</b> | Eadberht of Northumbria takes Abbeys.               |
| <b>593</b> | <b>Æthelfrith</b> , King of Northumbria, died 617.      | <b>758</b> | <b>Offa</b> , King of Mercia, died 796.             |
| <b>597</b> | <i>Augustine converts Kent.</i>                         | <b>775</b> | — subdues Kentish men at Osebold.                   |
| <b>603</b> | Battle of Dægsastan.                                    | <b>779</b> | — defeats West Saxons at Boreham.                   |
| <b>613</b> | Battle of Chester.                                      | <b>786</b> | — places Beorhtnoth on throne of Wessex.            |
| <b>617</b> | <b>Eadwine</b> , King of Northumbria, died 633.         | <b>787</b> | — creates Archbishopric at Lichfield.               |
| <b>626</b> | — overlord of Britain.                                  |            | First landing of Danes in England.                  |
| <b>627</b> | <b>Penda</b> , King of the Mercians, died 655.          | <b>796</b> | <b>Cenwulf</b> , King of Mercia, died 821.          |
| <b>633</b> | — slain at Hatfield.                                    | <b>802</b> | <b>Ecgberht</b> becomes King in Wessex, died 839.   |
| <b>635</b> | <b>Oswald</b> , King of Bernicia, died 642.             | <b>803</b> | Cenwulf suppresses Anglo-Saxon at Lichfield.        |
|            | — defeats Welsh at Hevenfeld.                           | <b>808</b> | Charles the Great restores Eardwulf in Northumbria. |
|            | <i>Aidan settles at Holy Island.</i>                    | <b>815</b> | Egberht subdues the West Welsh to the Tamar.        |
|            | Conversion of Wessex.                                   |            |   |
| <b>642</b> | Oswald slain at Maserfeld.                              |            |   |
| <b>651</b> | <b>Oswiu</b> , King of Northumbria, died 670.           |            |   |
| <b>655</b> | — victory at Winwed.                                    |            |   |
| <b>658</b> | West Saxons conquer as far as the Parret.               |            |   |
| <b>659</b> | <b>Wulfhere</b> , King in Mercia.                       |            |   |
| <b>661</b> | — drives West Saxons over Thames,                       |            |   |

- 821** Civil war in Mercia.  
**825** Eggerht defeats Mercians at Ellandun.  
 — overlord of England south of Thames.  
 Revolt of East Anglia against Mercia.  
**827** Defeat of Mercians by East Anglians.  
**828** Mercia and Northumbria submit to Eggerht.  
 Eggerht overlord of all English kingdoms.  
 — invades Wales.  
**837** — defeats Danes at Hengestesdun.  
**839** **Æthelwulf**, King of Wessex, died 858.  
**849** Ælfred born.  
**851** Danes defeated at Aclea.  
**853** Ælfred sent to Rome.  
**855** Æthelwulf goes to Rome.  
**857** **Æthelbald**, King of Wessex, died 860.  
**860** **Æthelberht**, King of Wessex, died 866.  
**866** **Æthelred**, King of Wessex, died 871.  
**867** Danes conquer Northumbria.  
**868** Peace of Nottingham with Danes.  
**870** Danes conquer and settle in East Anglia.  
**871** Danes invade Wessex.  
**Ælfred**, King of Wessex, died 901.  
**874** Danes conquer Mercia.  
**876** Danes settle in Northumbria.  
**877** Ælfred defeats Danes at Exeter.  
**878** Danes overrun Wessex.  
 Ælfred victor at Edington.  
 Peace of Wedmore.  
**883** Ælfred sends envoys to Rome and India.  
**886** Ælfred takes and refortifies London.  
**893** Danes reappear in Thames and Kent.  
**894** Ælfred drives Hasting from Wessex.  
**895** Hasting invades Mercia.  
**896** Ælfred drives Danes from Essex.  
**897** Hasting quits England.  
 Ælfred creates a fleet.  
**901** **Eadward the Elder**, died 925.  
**912** Northmen settle in Normandy.  
**913** }  
**918** } **Æthelstæd** conquers Danish Mercia.  
**921** Eadward subdues East Anglia and Essex.  
**924** — owned as overlord by Northumbria, Scots, and Strathclyde.  
**925** **Æthelstan**, died 940.  
**926** — drives Welsh from Exeter.  
**934** — invades Scotland.  
**937** Victory of Brunanburh.  
**940** **Eadmund**, died 946.  
**943** Dunstan made Abbot of Glastonbury.  
**945** Cumberland granted to Malcolm, King of Scots.  
**946** **Eadred**, died 955.  
**954** — makes Northumbria an earldom.  
**955** **Eadwig**, died 959.  
**956** Banishment of Dunstan.  
**957** Revolt of Mercia under Eadgar.  
**958** **Eadgar**, died 975.  
**959** *Dunstan Archbishop of Canterbury.*  
**975** **Eadward the Martyr**, died 978.  
**978** **Æthelred the Unready**, died 1016.  
**987** }  
**1040** } Fulk the Black, Count of Anjou.  
**994** Invasion of Swein.  
**1002** Massacre of Danes.  
**1003** Swein harries Wessex.  
**1012** Murder of Archbishop Ælfheah.  
**1013** All England submits to Swein.  
 Flight of Æthelred to Normandy.  
**1016** **Eadmund Ironside**, King, and dies.

## ENGLAND UNDER FOREIGN KINGS

1016—1204

- 1016** **Cnut**, King, died 1035.  
**1020** Godwine made Earl of Wessex.  
**1027** Cnut goes to Rome.  
 Birth of William of Normandy.  
**1035** Harald and Harthacnut divide England.  
**1037** **Harald**, King, died 1040.  
**1040** **Harthacnut**, King, died 1042.  
**1040** }  
**1060** } Geoffrey Martel, Count of Anjou.  
**1042** **Eadward the Confessor**, died 1066.  
**1045** *Lanfranc at Bec.*  
**1047** Victory of William at Val-ès-dunes.  
**1051** Banishment of Godwine.  
 William of Normandy visits England.  
**1052** Return of Godwine.  
**1053** Death of Godwine.  
 Harold made Earl of West Saxons.  
**1054** William's victory at Mortemer.  
**1055** Harold's first campaign in Wales.  
**1054** }  
**1060** } Norman conquest of Southern Italy.  
**1058** William's victory at the Dive.  
**1060** Normans invade Sicily.  
**1063** Harold conquers Wales.  
**1066** **Harold**, King.  
 — conquers at Stamford Bridge.  
 — defeated at Senlac or Hastings.  
**William** of Normandy, King, died 1087.  
**1068** }  
**1071** } Norman Conquest of England.  
**1070** Reorganization of the Church.  
*Lanfranc Archbishop of Canterbury.*  
 Rising of Roger Fitz-Osbern.  
**1075** William invades Wales.  
**1081** Failure of Danish invasion.  
**1085** Completion of Domesday Book.

- 1087** William the Red, died 1100.  
**1093** *Anselm, Archbishop.*  
**1094** Revolt of Wales against the Norman Marchers.  
**1095** Revolt of Robert de Mowbray.  
**1096** Normandy left in pledge to William.  
**1097** William invades Wales.  
*Anselm leaves England.*  
**1098** War with France.  
**1100** **Henry the First**, died 1135.  
*Henry's Charter.*  
**1101** Robert of Normandy invades England.  
**1106** Settlement of question of investitures.  
*English Conquest of Normandy.*  
**1109** } Fulk of Jerusalem, Count of Anjou.  
**1129** }  
**1110** War with France.  
**1111** War with Anjou.  
**1113** Peace of Gisors.  
**1114** Marriage of Matilda with Henry V.  
**1120** Wreck of White Ship.  
**1121** Henry's campaign in Wales.  
**1123** Revolt of Norman baronage.  
**1124** France and Anjou support William Clito.  
**1128** Matilda married to Geoffry of Anjou.  
*Death of the Clito in Flanders.*  
**1134** Revolt of Wales.  
**1135** **Stephen** of Blois, died 1154.  
**1138** Normandy repulses the Angevins.  
*Revolt of Earl Robert.*  
*Battle of the Standard.*  
**1139** Seizure of the Bishops.  
*Landing of Matilda.*  
**1141** Battle of Lincoln.  
**1147** *Birth of Gerald of Wales.*  
**1148** Matilda withdraws to Normandy.  
*Archbishop Theobald driven into exile.*  
**1149** Henry of Anjou in England.  
**1151** Henry becomes Duke of Normandy.  
**1152** Henry marries Eleanor of Guienne.  
**1153** Henry in England. Treaty of Wallingford.  
**1154** **Henry the Second**, died 1189.  
**1159** Expedition against Toulouse.  
*The Great Scutage.*  
**1162** Thomas made Archbishop of Canterbury.  
**1164** Constitutions of Clarendon.  
*Council of Northampton.*  
*Flight of Archbishop Thomas.*  
**1166** Assize of Clarendon.  
**1170** Strongbow's invasion of Ireland.  
*Inquest of Sheriffs.*  
*Death of Archbishop Thomas.*  
*Henry's Conquest of Ireland.*  
**1172** }  
**1173** } Rebellion of Henry's sons.  
**1174** }  
**1176** Assize of Northampton.  
**1178** Reorganization of Curia Regis.  
**1181** Assize of Arms.  
**1189** Revolt of Richard.  
**Richard the First**, died 1199.  
**1190** } Richard's Crusade.  
**1194** }  
**1194** } War with Philip Augustus.  
**1196** }  
**1194** } Llewellyn-ap-Jorwerth in North  
**1246** } Wales.  
**1197** Richard builds Château Gaillard.  
**1199** **John**, dies 1216.  
**1200** — recovers Anjou and Maine.  
*Layamon writes the Brut.*  
**1203** Murder of Arthur.  
**1204** French conquest of Anjou and Normandy.

## THE GREAT CHARTER

1204—1295

- 1205** Barons refuse to fight for recovery of Normandy.  
**1206** *Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterbury.*  
**1208** Innocent III. puts England under Interdict.  
**1210** John divides Irish Pale into counties.  
**1211** John reduces Llewellyn-ap-Jorwerth to submission.  
**1213** John becomes the Pope's vassal.  
**1214** Battle of Bouvines.  
*Birth of Roger Bacon.*  
**1215** The Great Charter.  
**1216** Lewis of France called in by the Barons.  
**Henry the Third**, died 1272.  
*Confirmation of the Charter.*  
**1217** Lewis returns to France.  
*Charter again confirmed.*  
**1219** Hubert de Burgh, Justiciar.  
*Friar's land in Ex. and.*  
**1223** Charter again confirmed at London.  
**1224** Revolt of Fulk de Breauté.  
**1225** Fresh confirmation of Charter.  
**1228** Stephen Langton's death.  
**1229** Papal exactions.  
**1230** Failure of Henry's campaign in Poitou.  
**1231** Conspiracy against the Italian Clergy.  
**1232** Fall of Hubert de Burgh.  
**1237** Charter again confirmed.  
**1238** Earl Simon of Leicester marries Henry's sister.  
**1242** Defeat of Henry at Taillebourg.  
*Barons refuse subsidies.*  
**1246** } Llewellyn-ap-Gruffydd, Prince in  
**1283** } North Wales.  
**1248** } Irish refusal of subsidies.  
*Earl Simon in Gascony.*



- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <p><b>1253</b> Earl Simon returns to England.<br/> <b>1258</b> Provisions of Oxford.<br/> <b>1264</b> Mise of Amiens.<br/>         Battle of Lewes.<br/> <b>1265</b> Commons summoned to Parliament.<br/>         Battle of Evesham.<br/> <b>1267</b> <i>Roger Bacon writes his "Opus Majus."</i><br/>         Llewelyn-ap-Gruffydd owned as Prince of Wales.<br/> <b>1270</b> Edward goes on Crusade.<br/> <b>1272</b> <b>Edward the First</b>, died 1307.<br/> <b>1277</b> Edward reduces Llewelyn-ap-Gruffydd to submission.<br/> <b>1279</b> Statute of Mortmain.</p> | <p><b>1282</b> Conquest of Wales.<br/> <b>1283</b> Statute of Merchants.<br/> <b>1285</b> Statute of Winchester.<br/> <b>1290</b> Statute "Quia Emptores."<br/>         Expulsion of the Jews.<br/>         Marriage Treaty of Brigham.<br/> <b>1291</b> Parliament at Norham concerning Scotch succession.<br/> <b>1292</b> Edward claims appeals from Scotland.<br/> <i>Death of Roger Bacon.</i><br/> <b>1294</b> Seizure of Guienne by Philip of France.<br/> <b>1295</b> French fleet attacks Dover.<br/>         Final organization of the English Parliament.</p> |
|---|--|

## THE WAR WITH SCOTLAND AND FRANCE

## 1296—1485

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p><b>1296</b> Edward conquers Scotland.<br/> <b>1297</b> Victory of Wallace at Stirling.<br/>         Outlawry of the Clergy.<br/>         Barons refuse to serve in Guienne.<br/> <b>1298</b> Edward conquers Scots at Falkirk.<br/>         Truce with France.<br/> <b>1301</b> Barons demand nomination of Ministers by Parliament.<br/>         Barons exact fresh Confirmation of the Charters.<br/> <b>1304</b> Submission of Scotland.<br/> <b>1305</b> Parliament of Perth.<br/> <b>1306</b> Rising of Robert Bruce.<br/> <b>1307</b> Parliament of Carlisle.<br/> <b>Edward the Second</b>, died 1327.<br/> <b>1308</b> Gaveston exiled.<br/> <b>1310</b> The Lords Ordainers draw up Articles of Reform.<br/> <b>1312</b> Death of Gaveston.<br/> <b>1314</b> Battle of Bannockburn.<br/> <b>1316</b> Battle of Athenree.<br/> <b>1318</b> Edward accepts the Ordinances.<br/> <b>1322</b> Death of Earl of Lancaster. Ordinances annulled.<br/> <b>1323</b> Truce with the Scots.<br/> <b>1324</b> French attack Aquitaine.<br/> <b>1325</b> The Queen and Prince Edward in France.<br/> <b>1326</b> Queen lands in England.<br/> <b>1327</b> Deposition of Edward II.<br/> <b>Edward the Third</b>, died 1377.<br/> <b>1328</b> Treaty of Northampton recognizes independence of Scotland.<br/>         Death of Robert Bruce.<br/> <b>1330</b> Death of Roger Mortimer.<br/> <b>1332</b> Edward Balliol invades Scotland.<br/> <b>1333</b> Battle of Halidon Hill.<br/>         Balliol does homage to Edward.<br/> <b>1335</b> } Edward invades Scotland.<br/> <b>1336</b> }<br/> <b>1336</b> France again declares war.<br/> <b>1337</b> } War with France and Scotland.<br/> <b>1338</b> } Edward claims crown of France.</p> | <p><b>1339</b> Balliol driven from Scotland.<br/>         Edward attacks France from Brabant.<br/> <b>1340</b> Battle of Sluys.<br/> <b>1341</b> } War in Brittany and Guienne.<br/> <b>1342</b> }<br/> <b>1346</b> Battles of Crécy and Neville's Cross.<br/> <b>1347</b> Capture of Calais.<br/>         Truce with France.<br/> <b>1348</b> First appearance of the Black Death.<br/> <b>1349</b> } Statutes of Labourers.<br/> <b>1351</b> }<br/> <b>1351</b> First Statute of Provisors.<br/> <b>1353</b> First Statute of Præmunire.<br/> <b>1355</b> Renewal of French War.<br/> <b>1356</b> Battle of Poitiers.<br/> <b>1366</b> Statute of Kilkenny.<br/> <b>1367</b> The Black Prince victorious at Navarete.<br/> <b>1368</b> <i>Wyclif's treatise "De Dominio."</i><br/> <b>1370</b> Storm of Limoges.<br/> <b>1372</b> Victory of Spanish fleet off Rochelle.<br/> <b>1374</b> Revolt of Aquitaine.<br/> <b>1376</b> The Good Parliament.<br/> <b>1377</b> Its work undone by the Duke of Lancaster.<br/>         Wyclif before the Bishop of London.<br/> <b>Richard the Second</b>, died 1399.<br/> <b>1378</b> Gregory XI. denounces Wyclif's heresy.<br/> <b>1380</b> <i>Longland's "Piers the Ploughman."</i><br/> <b>1381</b> Wyclif's declaration against Transubstantiation.<br/>         The Peasant Revolt.<br/> <b>1382</b> Condemnation of Wyclif at Blackfriars.<br/>         Suppression of the Poor Preachers.<br/> <b>1384</b> Death of Wyclif.<br/> <b>1386</b> Barons force Richard to dismiss the Earl of Suffolk.<br/>         Truce with France.<br/> <b>1389</b> Richard in Ireland.<br/> <b>1396</b> Richard marries Isabella of France<br/>         Truce with France prolonged.<br/> <b>1397</b> Murder of the Duke of Gloucester.</p> |
|--|--|

- 1398** Richard's plans of tyranny.  
**1399** Deposition of Richard.  
**Henry the Fourth**, died 1413.  
**1400** Revolt of Owen Glyndwr in Wales.  
**1401** Statute of Heresy.  
**1402** Battle of Homildon Hill.  
**1403** Revolt of the Percies.  
**1403** } French descents on England.  
**1405** }  
**1405** Revolt of Archbishop Scrope.  
**1407** French attack Gascony.  
**1411** English force sent to aid Duke of Burgundy in France.  
**1413** **Henry the Fifth**, died 1422.  
**1414** Lollard Conspiracy.  
**1415** Battle of Agincourt.  
**1417** Henry invades Normandy.  
**1419** Alliance with Duke of Burgundy.  
**1420** Treaty of Troyes.  
**1422** **Henry the Sixth**, died 1471.  
**1424** Battle of Verneuil.  
**1428** } Siege of Orleans.  
**1429** }  
**1430** County Suffrage restricted.  
**1431** Death of Joan of Arc.  
**1435** Congress of Arras.  
**1445** Marriage of Margaret of Anjou.  
**1447** Death of Duke of Gloucester.  
**1450** Impeachment and death of Duke of Suffolk.  
Cade's Insurrection.  
Loss of Normandy.  
**1451** Loss of Guienne.  
**1454** Duke of York named Protector.  
**1455** First Battle of St. Albans.  
**1456** End of York's Protectorate.  
**1459** Failure of Yorkist revolt.  
**1460** Battle of Northampton.  
York acknowledged as successor.  
Battle of Wakefield.  
**1461** Second Battle of St. Albans.  
Battle of Mortimer's Cross.  
**Edward the Fourth**, died 1483.  
Battle of Towton.  
**1461** } Warwick the King-maker.  
**1471** }  
**1464** Edward marries Lady Grey.  
**1470** Warwick driven to France.  
Flight of Edward to Flanders.  
**1471** Battles of Barnet and Tewkesbury.  
**1475** Edward invades France.  
**1476** *Caxton settles in England.*  
**1483** Murder of **Edward the Fifth**.  
**Richard the Third**, died 1485.  
Buckingham's Insurrection.  
**1485** Battle of Bosworth.

## THE TUDORS

1485—1603

- 1485** **Henry the Seventh**, died 1509.  
**1487** Conspiracy of Lambert Simnel.  
**1490** Treaty with Ferdinand and Isabella.  
**1492** Henry invades France.  
**1497** Cornish rebellion.  
Perkin Warbeck captured.  
Sebastian Cabot lands in America.  
**1499** *Colet and Erasmus at Oxford.*  
**1501** Arthur Tudor marries Catharine of Aragon.  
**1502** Margaret Tudor marries James the Fourth.  
**1505** *Colet Dean of S. Paul's.*  
**1509** **Henry the Eighth**, died 1547.  
**1509** *Erasmus writes the "Praise of Folly."*  
**1512** War with France.  
**1513** Battles of the Spurs and of Flodden.  
Wolsey becomes chief Minister.  
**1515** *More's "Utopia."*  
**1517** Luther denounces Indulgences.  
**1520** Field of Cloth of Gold.  
Luther burns the Pope's Bull.  
**1521** Quarrel of Luther with Henry the Eighth.  
**1522** Renewal of French war.  
**1523** Wolsey quarrels with the Commons.  
**1525** Exaction of Benevolences defeated.  
Peace with France.  
*Tyndale translates the New Testament.*  
**1526** Henry resolves on a Divorce. Persecution of Protestants.  
**1529** Fall of Wolsey. Ministry of Norfolk and More.  
**1531** King acknowledged as "Supreme Head of the Church of England."  
**1532** Statute of Appeals.  
**1534** Acts of Supremacy and Succession.  
**1535** Cromwell Vicar-General.  
*Death of More.*  
Overthrow of the Geraldines in Ireland.  
**1536** Dissolution of lesser Monasteries.  
**1537** Pilgrimage of Grace.  
**1538** English Bible issued.  
**1539** Execution of Lord Exeter.  
Law of Six Articles.  
Suppression of Greater Abbeys.  
**1542** Completion of the Tudor Conquest of Ireland.  
War with France.  
**1544** Execution of Earl of Surrey.  
**1547** **Edward the Sixth**, died 1553.  
Battle of Pinkie Cleugh.  
Suppression of Chantries.  
**1548** English Book of Common Prayer.  
**1549** Western Rebellion. End of Somerset's Protectorate.  
**1551** Death of Somerset.

- 1553** **Mary**, died 1558.  
Chancellor discovers Archangel.
- 1554** Mary marries Philip of Spain.  
England absolved by Cardinal Pole
- 1555** Persecution of Protestants begins.
- 1556** Burning of Archbishop Cranmer.
- 1557** War with France.
- 1558** Loss of Calais.  
**Elizabeth**, died 1603.  
— restores Royal Supremacy and English Prayer Book.
- 1559** War in Scotland.
- 1560** Mary Stuart lands in Scotland.
- 1561** Rebellion of Shane O'Neill in Ulster.  
Elizabeth supports French Huguenots.  
Hawkins begins Slave Trade with Africa.
- 1563** First penal statute against Catholics.  
English driven out of Havre.  
Thirty-nine Articles imposed on clergy.
- 1565** Mary marries Darnley.
- 1566** Darnley murders Rizzio.  
Royal Exchange built.
- 1567** Murder of Darnley.  
Defeat and death of Shane O'Neill.
- 1568** Mary flies to England.
- 1569** Revolt of the northern Earls.
- 1570** Bull of Deposition published.
- 1571** Conspiracy and death of Norfolk.
- 1572** Rising of the Low Countries against Alva.  
Cartwright's "Admonition to the Parliament."
- 1575** Queen refuses Netherlands.
- 1576** *First public Theatre in Blackfriars.*  
Landing of the Seminary Priests.
- 1577** Drake sets sail for the Pacific.
- 1579** *Lyly's "Euphues."*  
*Spenser publishes "Shepherd's Calendar."*
- 1580** Campian and Parsons in England.  
Revolt of the Desmonds.  
Massacre of Smerwick.
- 1583** Plots to assassinate Elizabeth.  
New powers given to Ecclesiastical Commission.
- 1584** Murder of Prince of Orange.  
Armada gathers in the Tagus.  
Colonization of Virginia.
- 1585** English Army sent to Netherlands.  
Drake on the Spanish Coast.
- 1586** Battle of Zutphen.  
Babington's Plot.
- 1587** *Shakspeare in London.*  
Death of Mary Stuart.  
Drake burns Spanish fleet at Cadiz.  
*Marlowe's "Tamburlaine."*
- 1588** Defeat of the Armada.  
*Martin Marprelate Tracts.*
- 1589** Drake plunders Corunna.
- 1590** *Publication of the "Faerie Queen."*
- 1593** *Shakspeare's "Venus and Adonis."*
- 1594** Hooker's "Ecclesiastical Polity."
- 1596** *Jonson's "Every Man in his Humour."*  
Descent upon Cadiz.
- 1597** Ruin of the Second Armada.  
*Bacon's "Essays."*
- 1598** Revolt of Hugh O'Neill.
- 1599** Expedition of Earl of Essex in Ireland.
- 1601** Execution of Essex.
- 1603** Mountjoy completes the conquest of Ireland.  
Death of Elizabeth.

## THE STUARTS

## 1603—1688

- 1603** **James the First**, died 1625.  
Millenary Petition.
- 1604** Parliament claims to deal with both Church and State.  
Hampton Court Conference.
- 1605** Gunpowder Plot.  
*Bacon's "Advancement of Learning."*
- 1610** Parliament's Petition of Grievances.  
Plantation of Ulster.
- 1613** Marriage of the Elector Palatine.
- 1614** First quarrels with the Parliament.
- 1616** Trial of the Earl and Countess of Somerset.  
Dismissal of Chief Justice Coke.  
*Death of Shakspeare.*
- 1617** Bacon Lord Keeper.  
Proposals for the Spanish Marriage.  
The Declaration of Sports.
- 1617** } Expedition and death of Raleigh.
- 1618** }
- 1618** Beginning of Thirty Years' War.
- 1620** Invasion of the Palatinate.  
Landing of the Pilgrim-Fathers in New England.
- 1621** *Bacon's "Novum Organum."*  
Impeachment of Bacon.  
James tears out the Protestation of the Commons.
- 1623** Journey of Prince Charles to Madrid.
- 1624** Resolve of War against Spain.
- 1625** **Charles the First**, died 1649.  
First Parliament dissolved.  
Failure of expedition against Cadiz.
- 1626** Buckingham impeached.  
Second Parliament dissolved.
- 1627** Levy of Benevolence and Forced Loan.  
Failure of expedition to Rochelle.
- 1628** The Petition of Right.  
Murder of Buckingham.  
*Laud Bishop of London.*



- 1629** Dissolution of Third Parliament.  
Charter granted to Massachusetts.  
Wentworth Lord President of the North.
- 1630** Puritan Emigration to New England.
- 1633** Wentworth Lord Deputy in Ireland.  
*Laud Archbishop of Canterbury.*  
*Milton's "Allegro" and "Penseroso."*  
*Prynne's "Histriomastix."*
- 1634** *Milton's "Comus."*
- 1636** Juxon Lord Treasurer.  
Book of Canons and Common Prayer issued for Scotland.  
Hampden refuses to pay Ship-money.
- 1637** Revolt of Edinburgh.  
Trial of Hampden.
- 1638** *Milton's "Lycidas."*  
The Scotch Covenant.
- 1639** Leslie at Dunse Law.  
Pacification of Berwick.
- 1640** The Short Parliament.  
The Bishops' War.  
Great Council of Peers at York.  
Long Parliament meets, *Nov.*  
Pym leader of the Commons.
- 1641** Execution of Strafford, *May.*  
Charles visits Scotland.  
Hyde organizes royalist party.  
The Irish Massacre, *Oct.*  
The Grand Remonstrance, *Nov.*
- 1642** Impeachment of Five Members, *Jan.*  
Charles before Hull, *April.*  
Royalists withdraw from Parliament.  
Charles raises Standard at Nottingham, *August 22.*  
Battle of Edgehill, *Oct. 23.*  
*Hobbes writes the "De Cive."*
- 1643** Assembly of Divines at Westminster.  
Rising of the Cornishmen, *May.*  
Death of Hampden, *June.*  
Battle of Roundway Down, *July.*  
Siege of Gloucester, *Aug.*  
Death of Falkland, *Sept.*  
Charles negotiates with Irish Catholics.  
Taking of the Covenant, *Sept. 25.*
- 1644** Fight at Cropredy Bridge, *June.*  
Battle of Marston Moor, *July 2.*  
Surrender of Parliamentary Army in Cornwall, *Sept. 2.*  
Battle of Tippermuir, *Sept. 2.*  
Battle of Newbury, *Oct.*  
*Milton's "Arcopagitica."*
- 1645** Self-denying Ordinance, *April.*  
New Model raised.  
Battle of Naseby, *June 14.*  
Battle of Philiphaugh, *Sept.*
- 1646** Charles surrenders to the Scots, *May.*
- 1647** Scots surrender Charles to the Houses, *Jan. 30.*  
Army elects Agitators, *April.*  
The King seized at Holmby House, *June.*  
"Humble Representation" of the Army, *June.*  
Expulsion of the Eleven Members.
- 1647** Army occupies London, *Aug.*  
Flight of the King, *Nov.*  
Secret Treaty of Charles with the Scots, *Dec.*
- 1648** Outbreak of the Royalist Revolt, *Feb.*  
Revolt of the Fleet, and of Kent, *May.*  
Fairfax and Cromwell in Essex and Wales, *June-July.*  
Battle of Preston, *Aug. 17.*  
Surrender of Colchester, *Aug. 27.*  
Pride's Purge, *Dec.*  
*Royal Society begins at Oxford.*
- 1649** Execution of Charles I., *Jan. 30.*  
Scotland proclaims Charles II. King.  
England proclaims itself a Commonwealth.  
Cromwell storms Drogheda, *Sept. 11.*
- 1650** Cromwell enters Scotland.  
Battle of Dunbar, *Sept. 3.*
- 1651** Battle of Worcester, *Sept. 3.*  
*Hobbes's "Leviathan."*
- 1652** Union with Scotland.  
Outbreak of Dutch War, *May.*  
Victory of Tromp, *Nov.*
- 1653** Victory of Blake, *Feb.*  
Cromwell drives out the Parliament, *April 20.*  
Constituent Convention (Barebones Parliament), *July.*  
Convention dissolves, *Dec.*  
The Instrument of Government.  
**Oliver Cromwell, Lord Protector**, died 1658.
- 1654** Peace concluded with Holland.  
First Protectorate Parliament, *Sept.*
- 1655** Dissolution of the Parliament, *Jan.*  
The Major-Generals.  
Settlement of Scotland and Ireland.  
Settlement of the Church.  
Blake in the Mediterranean.  
War with Spain and Conquest of Jamaica.
- 1656** Second Protectorate Parliament, *Sept.*
- 1657** Blake's victory at Santa Cruz.  
Cromwell refuses title of King.  
Act of Government.
- 1658** Parliament dissolved, *Feb.*  
Battle of the Dunes.  
Capture of Dunkirk.  
Death of Cromwell, *Sept. 3.*  
**Richard Cromwell, Lord Protector**, died 1712.
- 1659** Third Protectorate Parliament.  
Parliament dissolved.  
Long Parliament recalled.  
Long Parliament again driven out.
- 1660** Monk enters London.  
The "Convention" Parliament.  
**Charles the Second**, lands at Dover, *May*, died 1685.  
Union of Scotland and Ireland undone.  
Cavalier Parliament begins.
- 1661** Act of Uniformity re-enacted.
- 1662** Puritan clergy driven out.  
*Royal Society at London.*

- 1663** Dispensing Bill fails.  
**1664** Conventicle Act.  
**1665** Dutch War begins.  
 Five Mile Act.  
 Plague of London.  
*Newton's Theory of Fluxions.*  
**1666** Fire of London.  
**1667** The Dutch in the Medway.  
 Dismissal of Clarendon.  
 Peace of Breda.  
 Lewis attacks Flanders.  
*Milton's "Paradise Lost."*  
**1668** The Triple Alliance.  
 Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle.  
 Ashley shrinks back from toleration to Catholics.  
**1670** Treaty of Dover.  
*Bunyan's "Pilgrim's Progress" written.*  
**1671** *Milton's "Paradise Regained" and "Samson Agonistes."*  
*Newton's Theory of Light.*  
**1672** Closing of the Exchequer.  
 Declaration of Indulgence.  
 War begins with Holland.  
 Ashley made Chancellor.  
**1673** Declaration of Indulgence withdrawn.  
 The Test Act.  
 Shaftesbury dismissed.  
 Shaftesbury takes the lead of the Country Party.  
**1674** Bill of Protestant Securities fails.  
 Charles makes Peace with Holland.  
 Danby Lord Treasurer.  
**1675** Treaty of mutual aid between Charles and Lewis.  
**1677** Shaftesbury sent to the Tower.  
 Bill for Security of the Church fails.  
 Address of the Houses for War with France.  
 Prince of Orange marries Mary.  
**1678** Peace of Nimeguen.  
 Oates invents the Popish Plot.  
**1679** New Parliament meets.  
 Fall of Danby.  
 New Ministry with Shaftesbury at its head.  
 Temple's plan for a new Council.  
 Habeas Corpus Act passed.  
 Exclusion Bill introduced.
- 1679** Parliament dissolved.  
 Shaftesbury dismissed.  
**1680** Committee for agitation formed.  
 Monmouth pretends to the throne.  
 Petitioners and Abhorrrers.  
 Exclusion Bill thrown out by the Lords.  
 Trial of Lord Stafford.  
**1681** Parliament at Oxford.  
 Treaty with France.  
 Limitation Bill rejected.  
 Shaftesbury and Monmouth arrested.  
**1682** Conspiracy and flight of Shaftesbury.  
 Penn founds Pennsylvania.  
**1683** Death of Shaftesbury.  
 Rye House Plot.  
 Execution of Lord Russell and Algernon Sidney.  
**1684** Town charters quashed.  
 Army increased.  
**1685** **James the Second**, died 1701.  
 Insurrection of Argyll and Monmouth.  
 Battle of Sedgemoor, *July 6.*  
 The Bloody Circuit.  
 Army raised to 20,000 men.  
 Revocation of Edict of Nantes  
**1686** Test Act dispensed with by royal authority.  
 Ecclesiastical Commission set up.  
**1687** *Newton's "Principia."*  
 Expulsion of the Fellows of Magdalen.  
 Dismissal of Lords Rochester and Clarendon.  
 Declaration of Indulgence.  
 The Boroughs regulated.  
 William of Orange protests against the Declaration.  
 Tyrconnell made Lord Deputy in Ireland.  
**1688** Clergy refuse to read the new Declaration of Indulgence.  
 Birth of James's son.  
 Invitation to William.  
 Trial of the Seven Bishops.  
 Irish troops brought over to England.  
 Lewis attacks Germany.  
 William of Orange lands at Torbay.  
 Flight of James.

## MODERN ENGLAND

1689—1874

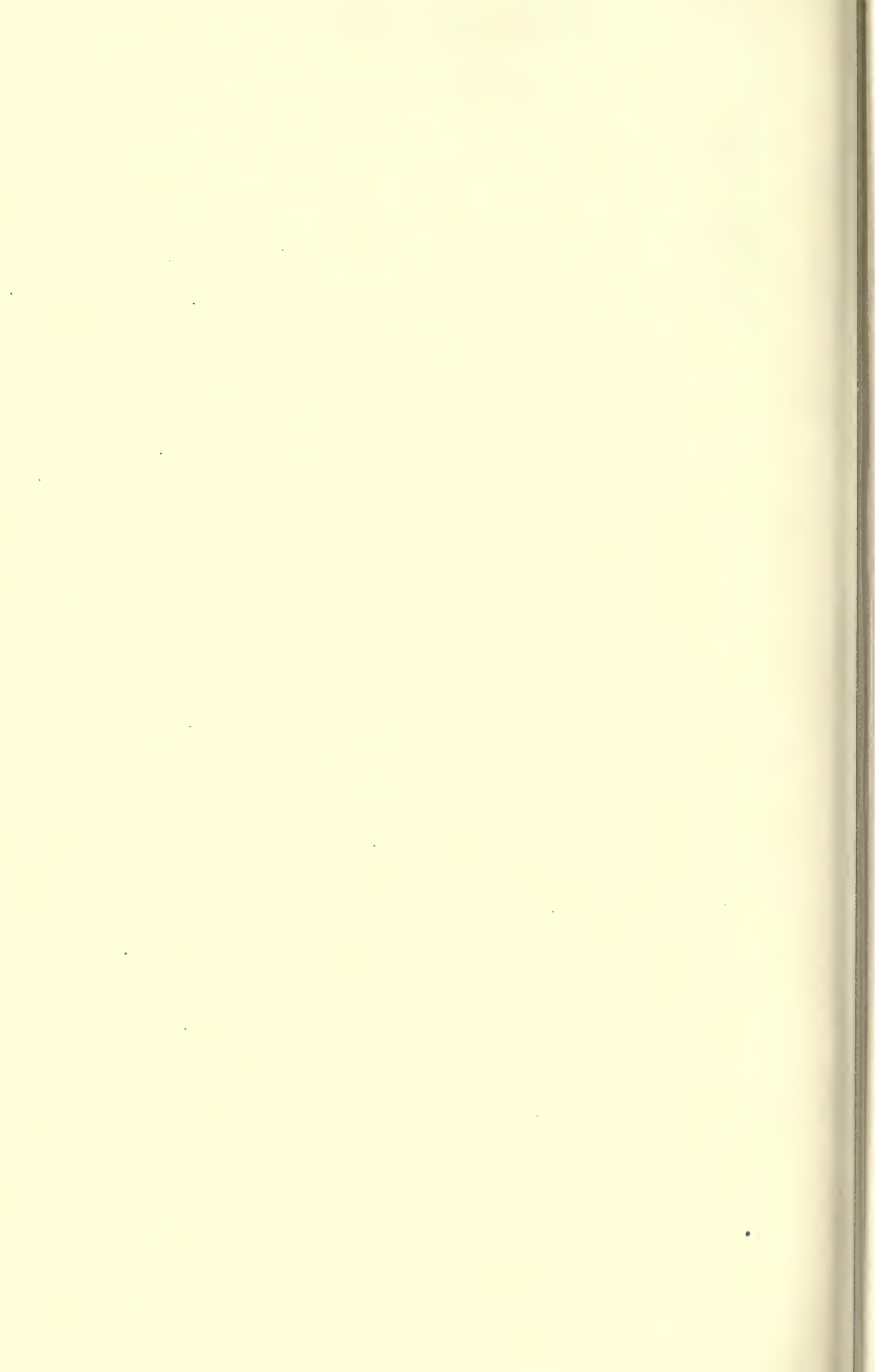
- 1689** Convention Parliament.  
 Declaration of Rights.  
**William and Mary made King and Queen.**  
 William forms the Grand Alliance against Lewis.  
 Battle of Killiecrankie, *July 27.*  
 Siege of Londonderry.  
 Mutiny Bill.  
 Toleration Bill.
- 1689** Bill of Rights.  
 Secession of the Non-jurors.  
**1690** Abjuration Bill and Act of Grace.  
 Battle of Beachy Head, *June 30.*  
 Battle of the Boyne, *July 1.*  
 William repulsed from Limerick.  
**1691** Battle of Aughrim, *July.*  
 Capitulation and Treaty of Limerick  
**1692** Massacre of Glencoe.  
 Battle of La Hogue, *May 19.*

- 1693** Sunderland's plan of a Ministry.  
**1694** Bank of England set up.  
 Death of Mary.  
**1696** Currency restored.  
**1697** Peace of Ryswick.  
**1698** First Partition Treaty.  
**1700** Second Partition Treaty.  
**1701** Duke of Anjou becomes King of Spain.  
 Act of Settlement passed.  
 Death of James II.  
**1702** **Anne**, died 1714.  
**1704** Battle of Blenheim, *August 13*.  
 Harley and St. John take office.  
**1705** Victories of Peterborough in Spain.  
**1706** Battle of Ramillies, *May 23*.  
**1707** Act of Union with Scotland.  
**1708** Dismissal of Harley and St. John.  
 Battle of Oudenarde.  
**1709** Battle of Malplaquet.  
**1710** Trial of Sacheverell.  
 Tory Ministry of Harley and St. John.  
**1712** Dismissal of Marlborough.  
**1713** Treaty of Utrecht.  
**1714** **George the First**, died 1727.  
 Ministry of Townshend and Walpole.  
**1715** Jacobite Revolt under Lord Mar.  
**1716** The Septennial Bill.  
**1717** The Triple Alliance,  
 Ministry of Lord Stanhope.  
**1718** The Quadruple Alliance.  
**1720** Failure of the Peerage Bill.  
 The South Sea Company.  
**1721** Ministry of Sir Robert Walpole.  
**1723** Exile of Bishop Atterbury.  
**1727** War with Austria and Spain.  
**George the Second**, died 1760.  
**1729** Treaty of Seville.  
**1730** Free exportation of American rice allowed.  
**1731** Treaty of Vienna.  
**1733** Walpole's Excise Bill.  
 War of the Polish Succession.  
 Family compact between France and Spain.  
**1737** Death of Queen Caroline.  
**1738** *The Methodists appear in London.*  
**1739** War declared with Spain.  
**1740** War of the Austrian Succession.  
**1742** Resignation of Walpole.  
**1743** Battle of Dettingen, *June 27*.  
**1745** Ministry of Henry Pelham.  
 Battle of Fontenoy, *May 31*.  
 Charles Edward lands in Scotland.  
 Battle of Prestonpans, *Sept. 21*.  
 Charles Edward reaches Derby, *Dec. 4*.  
**1746** Battle of Falkirk, *Jan. 23*.  
 Battle of Culloden, *April 16*.  
**1748** Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle.  
**1751** Clive's surprise of Arcot.  
**1754** Death of Henry Pelham.  
 Ministry of Duke of Newcastle.  
**1755** The Seven Years' War.  
 Defeat of General Braddock.  
**1756** Loss of Port Mahon.  
**1756** Retreat of Admiral Byng.  
**1757** Convention of Closter-Seven.  
 Ministry of William Pitt.  
 Battle of Plassey, *June 23*.  
**1758** Capture of Louisburg and Cape Breton.  
 Capture of Fort Duquesne.  
**1759** Battle of Minden, *August 1*.  
 Capture of Fort Niagara and Ticonderoga.  
 Wolfe's victory on Heights of Abraham.  
 Battle of Quiberon Bay, *Nov. 20*.  
**1760** **George the Third**, died 1820.  
 Battle of Wandewash.  
**1761** Pitt resigns office.  
 Ministry of Lord Bute.  
*Brindley's Canal opens the Trent.*  
**1763** Peace of Paris.  
 Ministry of George Grenville.  
*Wedgwood establishes Pottery.*  
**1764** First expulsion of Wilkes from House of Commons.  
*Hargreaves invents Spinning Jenny.*  
**1765** Stamp Act passed.  
 Ministry of Lord Rockingham.  
 Meeting and protest of American Congress.  
*Watt invents Steam Engine.*  
**1766** Repeal of Stamp Act.  
 Ministry of Lord Chatham.  
**1768** Ministry of the Duke of Grafton.  
 Second expulsion of Wilkes.  
*Arkwright invents Spinning Machine.*  
**1769** Wilkes three times elected for Middlesex.  
 House of Commons seats Col. Luttrell.  
 Occupation of Boston by British troops.  
*Letters of Junius.*  
**1770** Chatham's proposal of Parliamentary Reform.  
 Ministry of Lord North.  
**1771** Last attempt to prevent Parliamentary reporting.  
*Beginning of the Great English Journals.*  
**1773** Hastings appointed Governor-General.  
 Boston tea-riots.  
**1774** Military occupation of Boston.  
 Its port closed.  
 Massachusetts Charter altered.  
 Congress assembles at Philadelphia.  
**1775** Rejection of Chatham's plan of conciliation.  
 Skirmish at Lexington.  
 Americans under Washington besiege Boston.  
 Battle of Bunker's Hill.  
 Southern Colonies expel their Governors.  
**1776** *Crompton invents the Mill.*  
 Arnold invades Canada.  
 Evacuation of Boston.  
 Declaration of Independence, *July 4*.  
 Battles of Brooklyn and Trenton.



- 1776** *Adam Smith's "Wealth of Nations."*  
**1777** Battle of Brandywine.  
 Surrender of Saratoga, *Oct. 17*.  
 Chatham proposes Federal Union.  
 Washington at Valley Forge.  
**1778** Alliance of France and Spain with United States.  
 Death of Chatham.  
**1779** Siege of Gibraltar.  
 Armed Neutrality of Northern Powers.  
 The Irish Volunteers.  
**1780** Capture of Charlestown.  
 Descent of Hyder Ali on the Carnatic.  
**1781** Defeat of Hyder at Porto Novo.  
 Surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown.  
**1782** Ministry of Lord Rockingham.  
 Victories of Rodney.  
 Repeal of Poynings' Act.  
 Pitt's Bill for Parliamentary Reform.  
 Burke's Bill of Economical Reform.  
 Shelburne Ministry.  
 Repulse of Allies from Gibraltar.  
**1783** Treaties of Paris and Versailles.  
 Coalition Ministry of Fox and North.  
 Fox's India Bill.  
 Ministry of Pitt.  
**1784** Pitt's India Bill.  
 Financial Reforms.  
**1785** Parliamentary Reform Bill.  
 Free Trade Bill between England and Ireland.  
**1786** Trial of Warren Hastings.  
**1787** Treaty of Commerce with France.  
**1788** The Regency Bill.  
**1789** Meeting of States-General at Versailles.  
 New French Constitution.  
 Triple Alliance for defence of Turkey.  
**1790** Quarrel over Nootka Sound.  
 Pitt defends Poland.  
*Burke's "Reflections on the French Revolution."*  
**1791** Representative Government set up in Canada.  
 Fox's Libel Act.  
*Burke's "Appeal from the New to the Old Whigs."*  
**1792** Pitt hinders Holland from joining the Coalition.  
 France opens the Scheldt.  
 Pitt's efforts for peace.  
 The United Irishmen.  
**1793** France declares War on England.  
 Part of Whigs join Pitt.  
 English army lands in Flanders.  
 English driven from Toulon.  
**1794** English driven from Holland.  
 Suspension of Habeas Corpus Act.  
 Victory of Lord Howe, *June 1*.  
*Burke's "Letters on a Regicidal Peace."*  
**1796** England alone in the War with France.  
 Battle of Camperdown.  
 Battle of Cape St. Vincent.  
**1798** Irish revolt crushed at Vinegar Hill.  
 Battle of the Nile.  
**1799** Pitt revives the Coalition against France.  
 Conquest of Mysore.  
**1800** Surrender of Malta to English Fleet.  
 Armed Neutrality of Northern Powers.  
 Act of Union with Ireland.  
**1801** George the Third rejects Pitt's Plan of Catholic Emancipation.  
 Administration of Mr. Addington.  
 Surrender of French army in Egypt.  
 Battle of Copenhagen.  
**1802** Peace of Amiens.  
*Publication of "Edinburgh Review."*  
**1803** War declared against Buonaparte.  
 Battle of Assaye.  
**1804** Second Ministry of Pitt.  
**1805** Battle of Trafalgar, *Oct. 21*.  
**1806** Death of Pitt, *Jan. 23*.  
 Ministry of Lord Grenville.  
 Death of Fox.  
**1807** Orders in Council.  
 Abolition of Slave Trade.  
 Ministry of Duke of Portland.  
 Seizure of Danish Fleet.  
**1808** Battle of Vimiera, and Convention of Cintra.  
**1809** America passes Non-Intercourse Act.  
 Battle of Corunna, *Jan. 16*.  
 Wellesley drives Soult from Oporto.  
 Battle of Talavera, *July 28*.  
 Expedition against Walcheren.  
 Ministry of Spencer Perceval.  
 Revival of Parliamentary Reform.  
**1810** Battle of Busaco.  
 Lines of Torres Vedras.  
**1811** Prince of Wales becomes Regent.  
 Battle of Fuentes d'Onore, *May 5*.  
 Luddite Riots.  
**1812** Assassination of Spencer Perceval.  
 Ministry of Lord Liverpool.  
 Storm of Ciudad Rodrigo and Badajoz.  
 America declares War against England.  
 Battle of Salamanca, *July 22*.  
 Wellington retreats from Burgos.  
 Victories of American frigates.  
**1813** Battle of Vitoria, *June 21*.  
 Battles of the Pyrenees.  
 Wellington enters France, *Oct*.  
 Americans attack Canada.  
**1814** Battle of Orthes.  
 Battle of Toulouse, *April 10*.  
 Battle of Chippewa, *July*.  
 Raid upon Washington.  
 British repulses at Plattsburg and New Orleans.  
**1815** Battle of Quatre Bras, *June 16*.  
 Battle of Waterloo, *June 18*.  
 Treaty of Vienna.  
**1819** Manchester Massacre.  
**1820** Cato Street Conspiracy.  
 George the Fourth, died 1830.

- 1820** Bill for the Queen's Divorce.  
**1822** Canning Foreign Minister.  
**1823** Mr. Huskisson joins the Ministry.  
**1826** Expedition to Portugal.  
 Recognition of South American States.  
**1827** Ministry of Mr. Canning.  
 Ministry of Lord Goderich.  
 Battle of Navarino.  
**1828** Ministry of Duke of Wellington.  
**1829** Catholic Emancipation Bill.  
**1830** **William the Fourth**, died 1837.  
 Ministry of Lord Grey.  
*Opening of Liverpool and Manchester Railway.*  
**1831** Reform Agitation.  
**1832** Parliamentary Reform Bill passed, June 7.  
**1833** Suppression of Colonial Slavery.  
 East Indian trade thrown open.  
**1834** Ministry of Lord Melbourne.  
 New Poor Law.  
 System of National Education begun.  
 Ministry of Sir Robert Peel.  
**1835** Ministry of Lord Melbourne replaced.  
 Municipal Corporation Act.  
**1836** General Registration Act.  
 Civil Marriages Act.  
**1837** **Victoria**.  
**1838** Formation of Anti-Corn-Law League.  
**1839** Committee of Privy Council for Education instituted.  
 Demands for a People's Charter.  
 Revolt in Canada.  
 War with China.  
 Occupation of Cabul.  
**1840** Quadruple Alliance with France, Portugal and Spain.  
 Bombardment of Acre.  
**1841** Ministry of Sir Robert Peel.  
**1842** Income Tax revived.  
**1842** Peace with China.  
 Massacre of English Army in Afghanistan.  
 Victories of Pollock in Afghanistan.  
 Annexation of Scinde.  
**1845** Battles of Moodkee and Ferozeshah.  
**1846** Battle of Sobraon.  
 Repeal of the Corn Laws.  
 Ministry of Lord John Russell.  
**1848** Suppression of the Chartists and Irish rebels.  
**1849** Victory of Goojerat.  
 Annexation of the Punjab.  
**1852** Ministry of Lord Derby.  
 Ministry of Lord Aberdeen.  
**1854** Alliance with France against Russia.  
 Siege of Sebastopol.  
 Battle of Inkermann, Nov. 5.  
**1855** Ministry of Lord Palmerston.  
 Capture of Sebastopol.  
**1856** Peace of Paris with Russia.  
**1857** Sepoy Mutiny in Bengal.  
**1858** Sovereignty of India transferred to the Crown.  
 Volunteer movement.  
 Second Ministry of Lord Derby.  
**1859** Second Ministry of Lord Palmerston.  
**1865** Ministry of Lord Russell.  
**1866** Third Ministry of Lord Derby.  
**1867** Parliamentary Reform Bill.  
**1868** Ministry of Mr. Disraeli.  
 Ministry of Mr. Gladstone.  
**1869** Disestablishment of Episcopal Church in Ireland.  
**1870** Irish Land Bill.  
 Education Bill.  
**1871** Abolition of religious tests in Universities.  
 Army Bill.  
**1872** Ballot Bill.  
**1874** Second Ministry of Mr. Disraeli.





GENEALOGICAL TABLES

ECGBERT,  
r. 802-839.

ÆTHELWULF,  
r. 839-857.

ÆTHELBALD,  
r. 857-860.

ÆTHELBERHT,  
r. 860-866.

ÆTHELRED I.  
r. 866-871.

ÆLFRED = *Ealhswith*.  
r. 871-901.

EADWARD  
THE ELDER,  
r. 901-925.

ÆTHELSTAN,  
r. 925-940.

EADMUND, = *Ælfgifu*.  
r. 940-946.

EADRED,  
r. 946-955.

EADWIG,  
r. 955-959.

1. *Æthelstæd* = EADGAR, = 2. *Ælfthryth*.  
r. 959-975.

EADWARD  
THE MARTYR,  
r. 975-978.

1. Name = ÆTHELRED II. = 2. *Emma of*  
*uncertain* r. 978-1016. *Normandy*

2. Cnut,  
r. 1017-1035.

EADMUND IRONSIDE,  
r. Ap. 23-Nov. 30,  
1016.  
*m. Ealdgyth.*

Ælfred, killed 1036.

EADWARD  
THE  
CONFESSOR,  
r. 1042-1066.

Harthacnut,  
r. 1040-1042.

Eadmund.

Eadward,  
d. 1057.  
*m. Agatha.*

Eadgar,  
elected  
King in  
1066.

Margaret,  
d. 1093.  
*m. Malcolm III.  
King of Scots.*

Christina,  
a nun.

Matilda,  
d. 1118.  
*m. Henry I.  
King of  
England.*

SWEIN FORKBEARD,  
d. 1014.

|

CNUT = *Emma of Normandy, widow*  
r. 1016-1035.      *of King Æthelred II.*

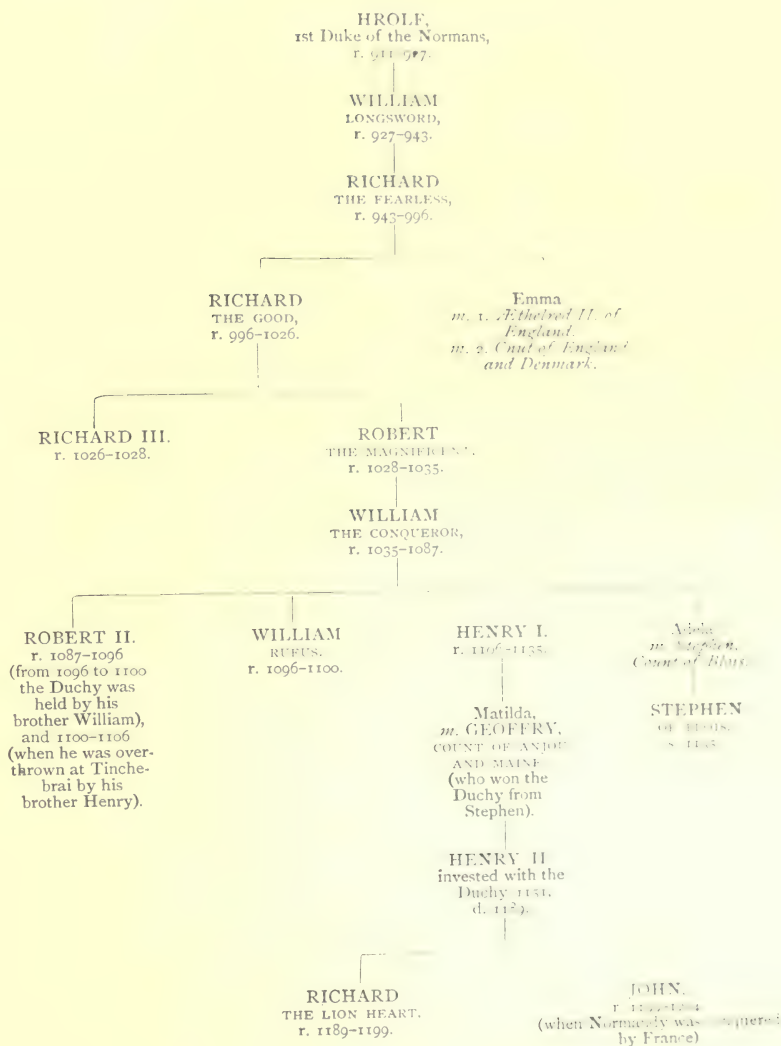
├──────────┴──────────┬──────────┴──────────┐

Swegen.                      HARALD,                      HARTHACNUT,  
   r. 1035-1040.                      r. 1040-1042.

└──────────┬──────────┘

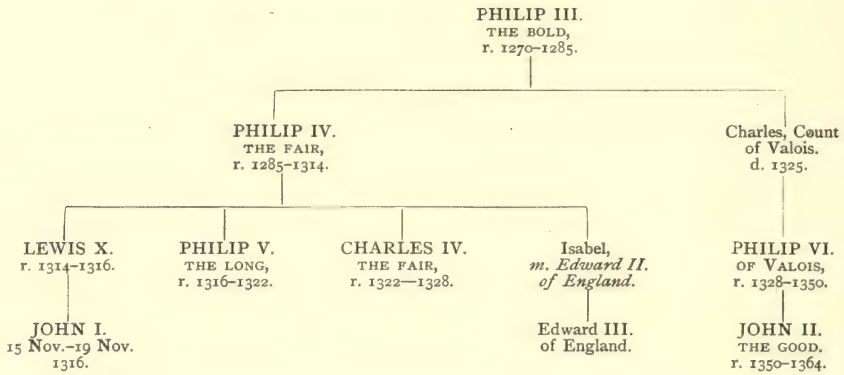
*Illegitimate.*

DUKES OF THE NORMANS

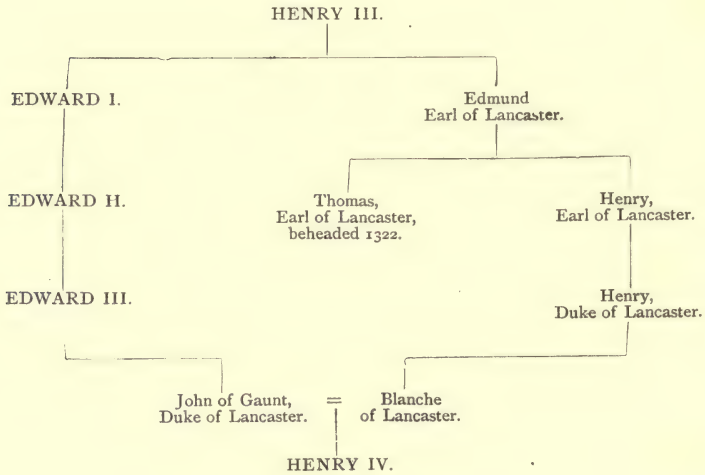




## Claim of EDWARD III. to the French Crown



## Descent of HENRY IV.



## HOUSE OF YORK

## EDWARD III.

Lionel,  
Duke of Clarence,  
Edmund of Langley,  
Duke of York.

Philippa,  
*m. Edmund Mortimer,*  
*Earl of March.*

Roger Mortimer,  
Earl of March.

Edmund Mortimer,  
Earl of March,  
d. 1424.

Anne Mortimer = Richard, Earl of  
Cambridge,  
beheaded 1415.

Richard Plantagenet,  
Duke of York,  
slain at Wakefield, 1460.

## EDWARD IV.

Edmund,  
Earl of Rutland,  
slain at Wake-  
field, 1460.

George,  
Duke of  
Clarence,  
*m. Isabel Neville.*

Katharine,  
*m. Sir*  
*William*  
*Courtney.*

Elizabeth,  
*m. Henry*  
*VII.*

EDWARD  
V.

RICHARD III.  
*m. Anne Neville.*

Elizabeth = *John de la Pole,*  
*Duke of Suffolk.*

Margaret,  
*m. Charles, Duke*  
*of Burgundy.*

Edward,  
Earl of  
Warwick,  
beheaded  
1499.

Margaret,  
Countess of  
Salisbury,  
beheaded  
1541.  
*m. Sir Richard*  
*Pole.*

Edward,  
Prince of Wales,  
d. 1484.

John de la Pole,  
Earl of Lincoln,  
slain at Stoke, 1487.

Edmund de la Pole,  
Earl of Suffolk,  
beheaded, 1513.

Richard de la Pole,  
slain at the battle  
of Pavia, 1525.

Henry  
Courtenay,  
Marquis  
of Devon,  
beheaded  
1539.

Edward  
Courtenay,  
Earl of Devon,  
d. 1566.

Henry Pole,  
Lord,  
Montacute,  
beheaded  
1539.

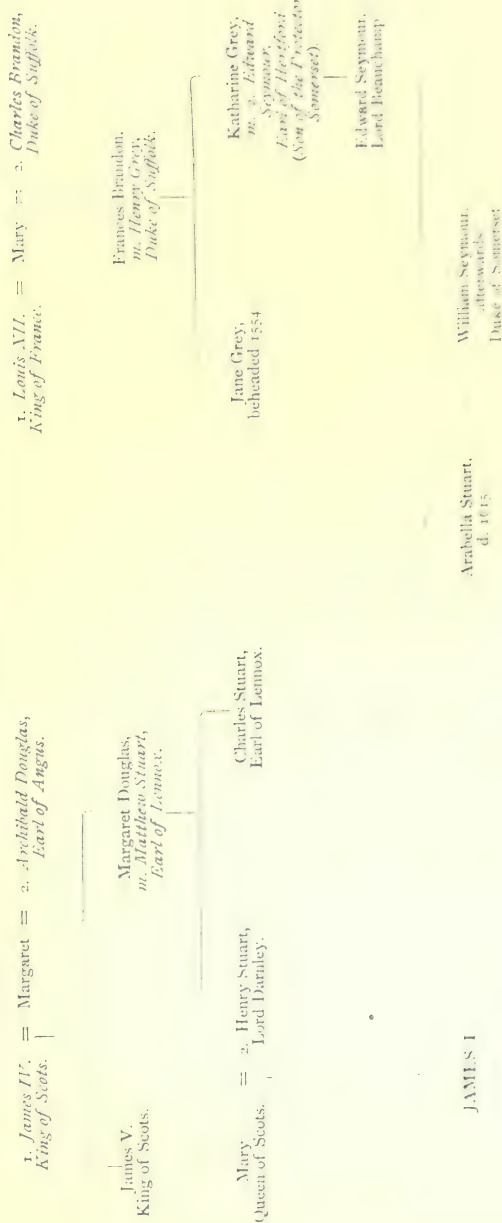
Reginald Pole,  
Archbishop of  
Canterbury,  
and Cardinal,  
d. 1558.



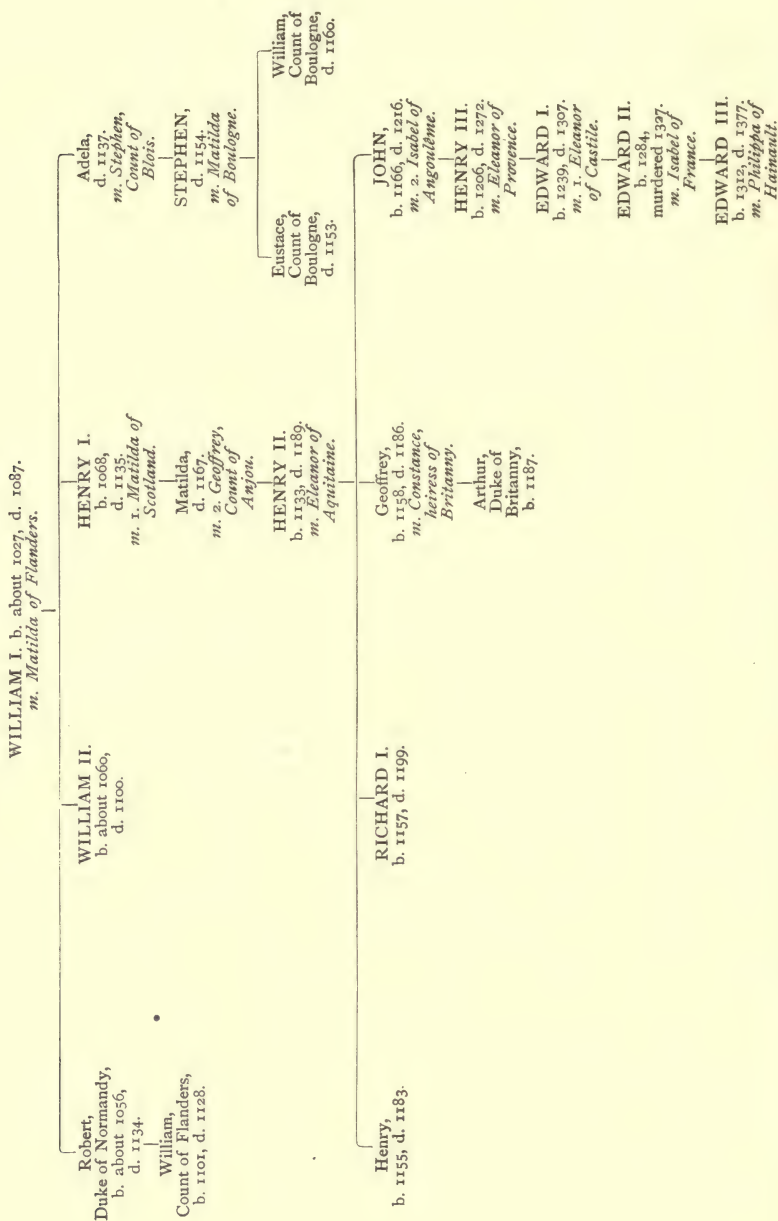


DESCENDANTS OF THE DAUGHTERS OF HENRY VII.

HENRY VII



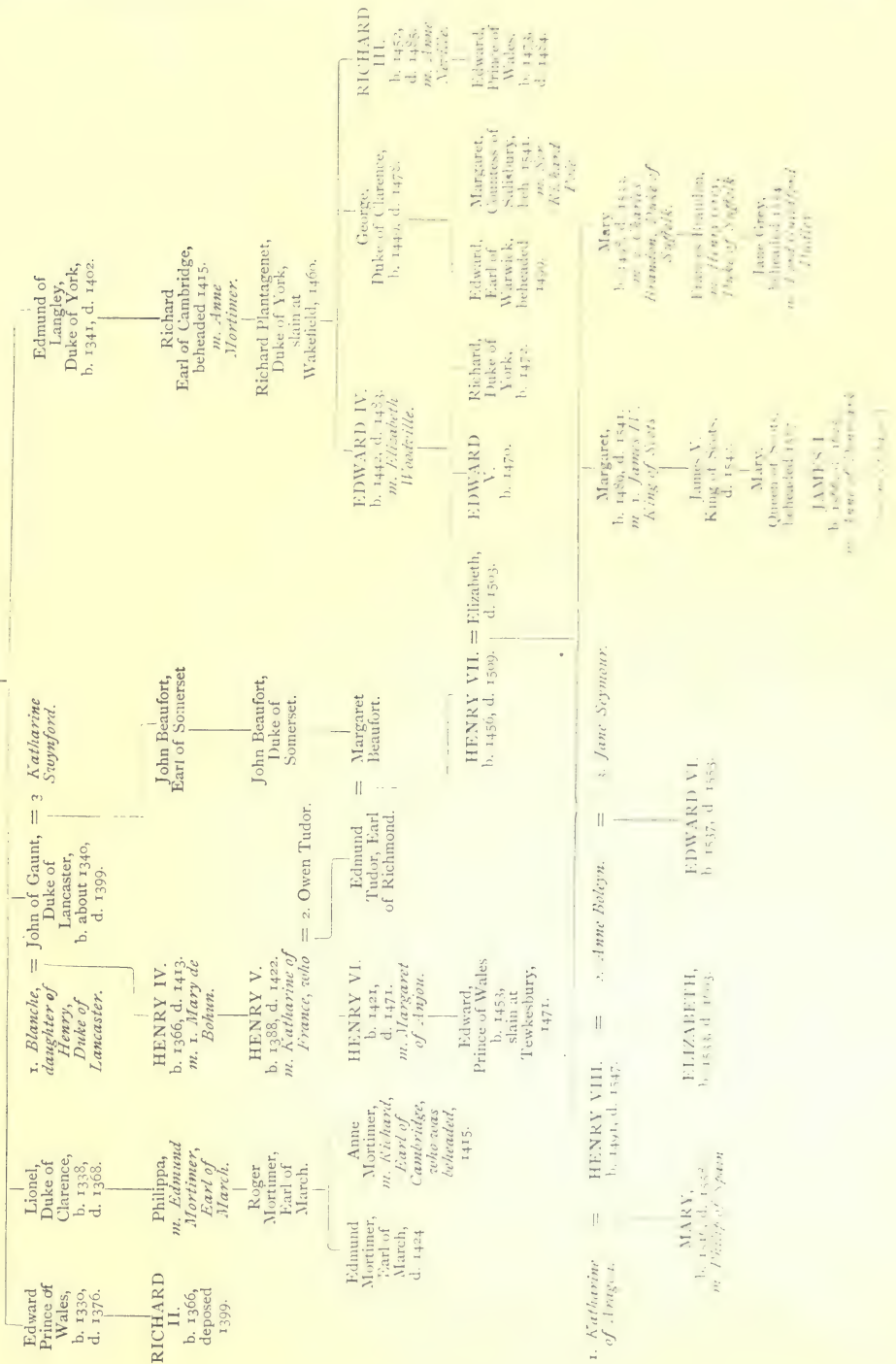
## THE SOVEREIGNS OF ENGLAND

*Since the Norman Conquest*

[See next page.]

THE SOVEREIGNS OF ENGLAND—continued

EDWARD III.







## INDEX





# INDEX

- ABBO** of Fleury, 110  
**Abbot**, Archbishop of Canterbury, 958, 1062  
**Abercorn**, see of, 63, 66, 352  
**Abercromby**, General, 1652, 1793  
**Aberdeen**, Earl of, 1844  
**Aberffraw**, princes of, 309, 318  
 "Abhorers," 1423  
**Aboukir**, battle of, 1793  
**Aclea**, battle of, 86  
**Acre**, siege of, 1774  
     bombardment of, 1838  
**Addington's Ministry**, 1792, 1799  
**Adelard** of Bath, 247, 261  
**Admonition to Parliament**, 957  
**Ælfheah**, Archbishop of Canterbury, 117, 123  
**Ælfred**, King of Wessex, 88  
     his rule, 90—93  
     character, 93—95  
     literary work, 95—98  
     struggle with Danes, 88, 89, 98  
     death, 99  
     "Sayings of," 229  
**Ælfred**, the Ætheling, 127, 128  
**Ælle**, King of Deira, 31  
**Ælle**, King of the South Saxons, 18  
**Æthelbald**, King of Mercia, 68, 69, 74  
**Æthelberht**, King of Kent, 30—34  
**Æthelflæd**, Lady of the Mercians, 92, 99, 100  
**Æthelfrith**, King of Northumbria, 34, 35  
**Æthelgift**, mother-in-law of Eadwig, 106, 107  
**Æthelred**, Ealdorman of Mercia, 92, 98, 99  
**Æthelred**, King of Mercia, 63, 66, 67  
**Æthelred the First**, King of Wessex, 87, 88  
**Æthelred the Unready**, King of Wessex, 114  
     marriage, 116, 144  
     flight to Normandy, 117, 144  
     death, 122  
**Æthelric**, King of Bernicia, 23, 29  
**Æthelstan**, King of Wessex, 101—103  
**Æthelthryth** (Etheldreda), S., 60  
**Æthelwold**, Bishop of Winchester, 108  
**Æthelwulf**, King of Wessex, 86, 87  
**Afghanistan**, war in, 1839, 1840  
**Agincourt**, battle of, 520, 521  
**Agitators**, Council of, 1191  
**Agriculture**, changes in, 469—477, 568, 780—781  
**Aidan**, S., 44, 46, 47  
**Aislabie**, Chancellor of the Exchequer, 1592  
**Aix-la-Chapelle**, Peace of, 1370, 1623  
**Albemarle**, Stephen of, 166  
**Alberoni**, Cardinal, 1587, 1588  
**Alcluyd**, 74  
**Alcuin**, 79  
**Aldfrith the Learned**, King of Northumbria, 69  
**Aldgate**, Priory of Holy Trinity at, 181  
**Alexander the First**, Czar of Russia, 1806  
**Alexander the Third**, King of Scots, 359  
**Allen**, Dr., 817  
**Alliance**, Grand, 1492, 1539  
     Holy, 1832  
     Triple, 1370, 1586—1588  
     Quadruple, 1838  
**Alma**, battle of, 1844  
**Almanza**, battle of, 1565  
**Almeida**, siege of, 1812  
**Alva**, Duke of, 770, 824  
**America**, English settlements in, 1644—1651,  
     1661, 1662  
     rivalry with the French, 1632—1634, 1651—  
     1655  
     religion and government, 1663, 1664  
     relations with England, 1664, 1679, 1680  
     struggle for self-taxation, 1680, 1681, 1695—  
     1697  
     Congress, 1682, 1690, 1701, 1703  
     Declaration of Independence, 1703  
     alliance with France, 1705  
     war with England, 1701—1704, 1712  
     embargo and non-intercourse, 1813, 1814, 1818  
     war with England, 1818, 1821—1823  
     civil war, 1846  
     Spanish settlements, 1043  
     their trade with English, 1601  
**Amherst**, General, 1652, 1655  
**Amiens**, Mise of, 296  
     Peace of, 1795  
**Anderida**, 18  
**Andredswald**, 18  
**Angeln**, 1  
**Anglesey** conquered by Eadwine, 38  
**Anglia**, East, settlement of the Engle in, 19  
     submits to Penda, 39—41  
     seized by Offa, 82  
     revolts from Mercia, *ibid.*  
     conquered by Danes, 80—88  
     earldom of, 123

- Anjou, Counts of, 185—191  
 Anjou, Duke of, suitor of Elizabeth, 828, 832  
 Anne, daughter of James the Second, deserts him, 1486  
   her relations with the Marlboroughs, 1519, 1541, 1543, 1563  
   Queen, 1545  
   her Bounty, 1556  
   death, 1576  
 Anne of Bohemia, wife of Richard the Second, 508  
 Anselm, S., 136—138  
   Archbishop of Canterbury, 167  
   exiled, 168  
   recalled, 169  
   supports Henry the First, 182  
 Anti-Corn Law League, 1842  
 Appeal, Henry the Second's court of, 211  
 Aquitaine, loss of, 448  
 Arcot, Clive's capture of, 1631  
 Argyle, Earl and Marquis of, Presbyterian leader, 1124, 1198, 1203, 1216  
   beheaded, 1359, 1445  
 Argyll, Earl of, his condemnation, rebellion and death, 1445  
 Aristotle, study of, in Middle Ages, 256, 261, 262, 287  
 Arkwright invents spinning-machine, 1732  
 Arlington, Bennet, Earl of, 1366, 1369  
   forms Triple Alliance, 1370, 1371  
   share in Treaty of Dover, 1372, 1375  
   dismissed, 1395  
 Arlotta, mother of William the Conqueror, 139  
 Armada, Spanish, 835—841  
   second, 891  
 Arminians, or Latitudinarians, 672, 673  
 Arms, Assize of, 209  
 Army, standing, its origin, 1361  
   increased by James the Second, 1448  
   subject to control of Parliament, 1505  
   purchase in, abolished, 1848  
 Army Plot, 1123  
 Arthur, romances and legends of, 226, 227, 316, 317  
 Arthur of Brittany, 218  
 Arthur, son of Henry the Seventh, 611  
 Articles of Religion, 673  
   the Six, 703  
   repealed, 711  
   Forty-two, 714  
   Thirty-nine, 762  
   Three, 957, 960  
 Artillery, results of its introduction, 589  
 Arundel, Archbishop of Canterbury, 507, 508  
 Arundel, Earl of, Lord Privy Seal, 1457  
 Arundel, Earl of, patron of Caxton, 581  
 Ascue, Anne, 709  
 Ashdown, battle of, 88  
 Ashley, Lord, *see* Cooper  
   opposes Act of Uniformity, 1330  
   heads the Presbyterians, 1366  
   his scheme of Protestant comprehension, 1367  
   terms of toleration, 1377  
   Chancellor, 1379; *see* Shaftesbury  
 Assandun, battle of, 122  
 Asser, 95  
 Assize of Arms, 209  
   of Clarendon, 210  
   of Northampton, 211  
 Astley, Sir Jacob, 1175  
 Aston, Sir Arthur, 1209, 1210  
 Athelney, 89, 96  
 Athenree, battle of, 903  
 Atterbury, Bishop of Rochester, 1592  
 Aughrim, battle of, 1516  
 Augsburg, league of, 1479  
 Augustine, S., his mission to England, 31—34  
 Austerlitz, battle of, 1801  
 Austria joins the Grand Alliance, 1492  
   war of succession in, 1603—1605  
   policy during French war, 1749, 1751, 1756, 1774—1775, 1801, 1820  
 Avaux, Count of, 1503  
 Aylesford, battle of, 15  
 BABINGTON'S PLOT, 833  
 Bacon, Francis, 881—888  
   his plea for Church reform, 973  
   fall, 1008—1010  
   death, 1010  
 Bacon, Roger, 262—266  
 Badajoz stormed, 1818  
 Badby, John, 514  
 Badon, Mount, battle of, 19  
 Bæda, 71—74  
   Ælfred's translation of, 97  
 "Balance of power," 1577, 1578  
 Ball, John, 461, 483, 484, 486  
 Balliol, Edward, 410, 412, 413  
 Balliol, John, 359—364  
 Balmerino, Earl of, 1627  
 Baltimore, Calvert, Lord, 1049  
 Bamborough, 23, 47  
 Bancroft, Archbishop of Canterbury, 958, 986  
 Bangor, monks of, slain, 35  
 Bank of England founded, 1526  
 Bannockburn, battle of, 408  
 Bantry Bay, battle in, 1511  
 Baptists, 1178  
 Barbury Hill, battle of, 20  
 Bards, the Welsh, 306—309, 313—315  
 Barebones, Praise-God, 1234  
 Barlow, Bishop of St. David's, 700  
 Barnet, battle of, 559  
 Barons, their relations with the Conqueror, 156, 158, 163, 164  
   with Henry the First, 182, 183  
   with Henry the Second, 208—209  
   with John, 234, 235, 237—239  
   council of, appointed to enforce the Charter, 243  
   offer the crown to Lewis, 244  
   quarrel with Henry the Third, 292, 293  
   war with him, 296—298  
   greater and lesser, 330  
   their rule, 388—389  
   struggle with Edward the First, 389—391, 394—395  
   effects of Hundred Years' War on, 530—533  
   their decline, 564—565

- Barons—*continued*.  
 Henry the Seventh's dealings with, 590, 591  
 Northern, rise against Elizabeth, 773  
 Barrier, the Dutch, 1537  
 Bartholomew's Day, S., massacre of, 826  
 the English, 1331  
 Basing House, siege of, 1173, 1174  
 Bastille destroyed, 1747  
 Bates's case, 989  
 Bath, Henry de, 274  
 Bautzen, battle of, 1820  
 Baxter, Richard, 1331, 1339, 1367, 1458  
 Baylen, French surrender at, 1809  
 Beachy Head, battle of, 1517  
 Beaufort, Henry, Bishop of Winchester, 530  
 Cardinal, 543  
 Beaufort, house of, its claims to the Crown, 548  
 Beaufort, Margaret, *see* Richmond  
 Beaumont, palace of, 252  
 Bec, abbey of, 136  
 Beckford, Alderman, 1644  
 Bedford, Duke of, minister of George the Third.  
 1677, 1687  
 Bedford, John, Duke of, Regent of France, 534—  
 536, 543, 544  
 Bedloe, 1497  
 Beket, Gilbert, 171, 172  
 site of his house, 196  
 Beket, Thomas, 196, 197  
 Chancellor, 199  
 Archbishop of Canterbury, 201  
 quarrel with Henry the Second, 202—205  
 death, 207  
 canonized, *ib.*  
 desecration of his shrine, 701  
 Belesme, Robert of, 182, 311  
 Bellahoe, battle of, 907  
 Bellasys, Lord, 1457  
 Benedict Biscop, 55, 71  
 "Benedict of Peterborough," 223  
 "Benevolences" under Edward the Fourth, 571  
 under Wolsey, 640, 641  
 under James the First, 995  
 Bensington, battle of, 76  
 Bentham, Jeremy, 1817  
 Beorhtric, King of Wessex, 78, 80  
 Beornwulf, King of Mercia, 82  
 Bernicia, kingdom of, 23  
 joined with Deira, *ib.*, 29  
 Bertha, wife of Æthelberht of Kent, 31  
 Berwick, Duke of, 1551, 1565  
 Berwick stormed by Edward the First, 363  
 taken by Bruce, 400, 409  
 regained by England, 412  
 its peculiar position, 413  
 pacification at, 1109  
 Beverley, Alfred of, 226  
 Bible, Wyclif's translation of, 468  
 its effects, 504  
 in Bohemia, 508  
 translation promised by Henry the Eighth, 659  
 Tyndale's, 659, 695—697  
 Coverdale's, 673  
 the Geneva, 1058  
 effects of, on England, 933—937  
 Bigod, Earl of Norfolk, defies Edward the First,  
 395  
 Bigod, Hugh, Earl of Norfolk, 292, 294  
 Birinus, 44  
 Bishops, mode of appointing, 666, 667  
 James the First's theory of, 980  
 expelled from House of Lords, 1119  
 restored, 1328  
 position under the Georges, 1608, 1609  
 the Seven, 1461—1463  
 Black Death, the, 478—479  
 Blake defends Tamiton, 1213  
 blockades Rupert in the Tagus, *ib.*  
 struggle with the Dutch, 1225, 1227, 1228  
 with Spain, 1261, 1297  
 his corpse outraged, 1327  
 Blenheim, battle of, 1553—1555  
 Blorcheath, battle of, 550  
 Blücher, Marshal, 1824, 1826  
 Bohemia, effects of Wyclif's writings in, 508  
 struggle against Austria, 1805, 1807  
 Bolyn, Anne, 640, 649, 664, 665, 680  
 Bolingbroke, Viscount (*see* St. John), 1360  
 rivalry with Harley, 1571—1573  
 joins the Pretender, 1580  
 returns, 1599  
 Bombay ceded to England, 1345, 1629  
 Boniface, S. (Winfrid), 78  
 Boniface VIII., Pope, 307, 394  
 Boniface of Savoy, Archbishop of Canterbury,  
 272, 273  
 Bonner, Bishop of London, 710, 723, 725, 731  
 Born, Bertrand de, 214  
 Borodino, battle of, 1819  
 Boroughbridge, battle of, 401  
 Boroughs, early English, 369—372  
 their representation in Parliament, 380,  
 335—342  
 restriction of franchise in, 527, 528  
 changes in representation, 528  
 new, created under the Tudors, 981  
 the Five, 92, 99  
 Boscawen, Admiral, 1652  
 Boston (Lincolnshire), *see* Houghston, 69  
 Boston (Massachusetts) occupied by British troops,  
 1695  
 tea-riots, 1696  
 port closed, 1697  
 siege of, 1701—1702  
 Bosworth Field, battle of, 587  
 Bothwell, Earl of, 767—770  
 Botulf founds Boston, 60  
 Boulogne, Estace, Count of, 131, 131  
 Boulogne, Napoleon's camp at, 17  
 Bouvines, battle of, 237  
 Boyle, chemist, 1303  
 Boyne, battle of, 1514  
 "Boys," the, 1500  
 Braddock, General, 1634  
 Bradford, battle of, 62  
 Bradshaw, John, 1200, 1231, 1242, 1327  
 Brandywine, battle of, 1704  
 Breauté, Farkes de, 206, 208  
 Breda, Peace of, 1366  
 Bremen, dispute about, 1588



- Breslau, Peace of, 1621  
 Brétigny, treaty of, 444  
 Brigham, treaty of, 359  
 Brindley, engineer, 1729  
 Bristol, Earl of, 1366  
 Bristol, slave-trade at, 111, 165, 985  
   siege of, 1146  
   surrender, 1148  
   West Indian Trade, 1595  
 Britain, Great, 1559  
 Britain under the Romans, 8, 9  
   attacked by Picts and Scots, 9, 10  
   English conquest of, 12—23  
 Britons, extermination of, 16, 17  
   defeat at Dægstastan, 34  
   end of their dominion, 82  
 Brooklyn, battle of, 1703  
 Browne, Archbishop of Dublin, 915, 916  
 Browne's Pastorals, 1094  
 Brownists, 962, 963, 1049, 1177  
 Bruce, David, 412, 413, 431, 438  
 Bruce, Edward, 903  
 Bruce, Robert, the elder, 361, 367  
 Bruce, Robert, the younger, murders Comyn, 404  
   crowned, *ib.*  
   his successes, 406—409  
   truce with England, 409  
   acknowledged king, 411  
   dies, 412  
 Brunanburh, battle of, 103  
 Brunswick, Duke of, 1757  
 Brunswick, Ferdinand, Prince of, 1649, 1650, 1669  
 Buckingham, Duke of, beheaded, 639, 640  
 Buckingham, George Villiers, Duke of, 1001, 1002  
   his policy, 1021, 1024—1025  
   impeached, 1027—1029  
   expedition to Rochelle, 1033  
   slain, 1039  
 Buckingham, second Duke of, 1291, 1301, 1377  
   negotiates with Holland, 1379  
   dismissed, 1395  
   imprisoned, 1399  
 Bulmer, Lady, burnt, 685  
 Bunker's Hill, battle of, 1701  
 Bunyan, John, 950—952, 1339—1341  
   his "Pilgrim's Progress," 1343—1345  
   released, 1379  
   refuses Indulgence, 1458  
 Buonaparte, Joseph, King of Naples and Spain, 1808, 1819  
 Buonaparte, Napoleon, 1767  
   successes in Italy, 1769  
   in Egypt, 1773  
   designs on Syria, 1774  
   First Consul, *ib.*  
   victory at Marengo, *ib.*  
   Continental System, 1792  
   schemes of conquest, 1793, 1797  
   France under him, 1797  
   war declared against, *ib.*  
   threatens invasion of England, 1799; *see*  
   Napoleon  
 Burdett, Sir Francis, 1817  
 Burford, battle of, 69  
 Burgh, Hubert de, 246, 266, 270, 271  
 Burgos, siege of, 1819  
 Burgoyne, General, 1704  
 Burgundy, Charles the Bold, Duke of, 558  
 Burgundy, John, Duke of, 518, 525  
 Burgundy, Philip, Duke of, 525, 535, 542, 543  
 Burke, Edmund, 1683—1686  
   supports American demands, 1699  
   his Bill of Economical Reform, 1722  
   moves impeachment of Hastings, 1741  
   hostility to the Revolution, 1750—1755, 1757  
   quarrel with Fox, 1753  
   "Letters on Regicide Peace," 1769  
   death, 1771  
 Burleigh, Lord, 835; *see* Cecil  
 Burnet, Bishop of Salisbury, 1310, 1509  
 Busaco, battle of, 1812  
 Bute, Earl of, 1671, 1672, 1676  
   his policy in America, 1680  
 Butler, Bishop, 1310  
 Butler's "Hudibras," 1290  
 Byng, Admiral, 1635  
 "CABAL," the, 1414  
 Cabinet, its origin, 1412—1415  
 Cabot, Sebastian, 594, 1043  
 Cabul occupied, 1838  
 Cade, John, 546, 548  
 Cadiz, English descent on, 891  
   blockaded, 1621  
 Cadwallon, king of the Welsh, 39, 41  
 Cædmon, 52—54  
 Caen, University founded by Bedford at, 543  
 Calais, siege of, by Edward the Third, 438—440  
   ceded to him, 444  
   lost, 731  
 Calcutta, its origin, 1629  
   Black Hole of, 1648  
 Calne, council of, 113  
 Cambray, league of, 611  
   treaty of, 649  
 Cambridge, George, Duke of, 1573; *see* George  
   the Second  
 Cambridge, the New Learning at, 608  
   Erasmus at, *ib.*, 616  
   Protestants at, 697  
 Camden, 800  
 Campbell, Sir Colin, 1845  
 Campeggio, Cardinal, 648, 649  
 Camperdown, battle of, 1771  
 Campian, Jesuit, 819—821  
 Campo Formio, Treaty of, 1769  
 Canada, conquest of, 1651—1655  
   ceded by France, 1672  
   Constitution granted to, 1753  
   American invasions of, 1821  
   revolt in, 1837  
 Canals, 1729  
 Canning, George, Foreign Secretary, 1806  
   his policy, *ib.*, 1807, 1809  
   retires, 1811  
   supports Catholic emancipation, 1817  
   returns to office, 1832  
   death, *ib.*

- Canons of 1604, 986  
of 1636, 1091
- Canterbury, royal city of Kent, 31  
Augustine at, 33  
becomes the ecclesiastical centre of England, 58, 59  
Theodore's school at, 71  
sacked by Danes, 117  
historians of, 222
- Cape of Good Hope won by England, 1769
- Cardigan, conquest of, 312
- Carlisle conquered by Ecgrith, 62  
Cuthbert at, 63, 65  
Mary Stuart at, 771
- Carolinas, their settlement, 1661
- Caroline of Anspach, wife of George the Second, 1596, 1599
- Carteret, Lord, 1621, 1623
- Carthusians, victims of T. Cromwell, 679
- Cartwright, Thomas, 953—955, 964—966
- Carucage, 242
- Cassel, battle of, 1400
- Castlebar, battle of, 1785
- Castlemaine, Countess of, 1380; *see* Cleveland
- Castlereagh, Lord, 1791, 1811, 1818, 1832
- Catesby, Robert, 986
- Catharine of Aragon, wife of Henry the Eighth, 611, 646, 647, 648, 664
- Catharine of Braganza, wife of Charles the Second, 1364
- Catharine of France, wife of Henry the Fifth, 525
- Catharine the Second, Empress of Russia, 1748, 1756
- Catholics, Roman, their position under Elizabeth, 761, 762, 774, 820  
revolt, 773, 774  
revival, 817—819, 969  
laws against them relaxed, 983  
priests banished, 1336  
prospects under Charles the Second, 1363  
excluded from Indulgence, 1377  
their hopes, 1403, 1404  
excluded from Parliament, 1407  
admitted to office, &c., by James the Second, 1453  
Confederate, 1126, 1150  
condition in Ireland, 1775  
struggles for emancipation, 1781—1783, 1790—1791, 1806, 1832—1833
- Cato Street conspiracy, 1831
- "Cavaliers," 1132
- Cavendish, Lord, 1381, 1411, 1423; *see* Devonshire
- Cawnpore, massacre of, 1845
- Caxton, William, 575—584
- Ceadda, Bishop of Mercia, 48, 49
- Ceadwalla, King of Wessex, 67
- Ceawlin, King of Wessex, 20
- Cecil, Robert, *see* Salisbury
- Cecil, William, 756, 772, 774; *see* Burleigh
- Centwine, King of Wessex, 66
- Cenwealh, King of Wessex, 62
- Cenwulf, King of Mercia, 82
- Ceolfrid, founder of Jarrow, 71
- Ceolred, King of Mercia, 67, 69
- Ceorls, 6
- Cerdic, first King of West Saxons, 19, 20
- Ceylon won by England, 1769
- Chad, *see* Ceadda
- Chalgrove Field, battle of, 1148
- Chalus, siege of, 218
- Chambers, Alderman, 1073
- Chancellor, Richard, 789
- Chancellor, the, his office, 183, 325, 326
- Chancery, Court of, 325, 326
- Chantries suppressed, 708
- Charford, battle of, 19
- Charles (the First), Prince, negotiations for his marriage, 1002, 1012  
goes to Madrid, 1017  
his character, 1019  
marriage, 1023  
King, *ib.*  
policy, *ib.*  
protects Buckingham, 1027, 1029, 1030, 1038  
levies forced loan, 1030  
consents to Petition of Right, 1037  
his personal government, 1067—1075  
dealings with Scotland, 1090, 1101, 1103, 1105—1110, 1124  
tries to arrest five members, 1133—1135  
attempt on Hull, 1139  
raises standard at Nottingham, 1141  
campaign of 1642, 1142—1144  
besieges Gloucester, 1149  
negotiates with Confederate Catholics, 1150  
movements in 1644, 1157—1160  
negotiates at Uxbridge, 1170  
defeated at Naseby, 1171—1173  
treaty with the Irish, 1175  
goes to Scotch camp, 1185  
sold to Parliament, 1187  
seized by army, 1192  
flies, 1194  
prisoner, 1195  
seized again, 1200  
trial, 1200, 1202  
death, 1202
- Charles the Second proclaimed King in Scotland, 1203  
negotiates with the Scots, 1213  
crowned at Scone, 1217  
defeated at Worcester, 1218, 1219  
restored, 1277, 1278  
character, 1351—1356  
policy, 1356—1358  
army, 1361  
plans of Catholic toleration, 1361—1363  
conversion, 1373  
negotiates with Lewis, 1373—1375  
relations with Parliament, 1381, 1394—1397, 1399, 1400  
relations with Lewis, 1398, 1403, 1408  
plan for James's succession, 1416  
change in his temper, 1421  
treaty with France, 1427  
triumph over Country party, 1427, 1428, 1431—1433  
rule, 1435—1438  
death, 1441

- Charles the Great**, 79, 80  
**Charles the Simple** grants Normandy to Hrolf, 135  
**Charles the Fifth**, King of Spain, Emperor, &c., 631, 638  
     alliance with Henry the Eighth, 638  
     breaks his pledges, 645  
     treaty with France, 649  
**Charles the Sixth**, Emperor, 1593, 1603  
**Charles the Seventh**, Emperor, 1621  
**Charles the Fifth**, King of France, 447, 448  
**Charles the Sixth** of France, 506, 518, 525, 534  
**Charles the Seventh** of France, 534, 538, 541, 545  
**Charles the Eighth** of France, 611  
**Charles the Tenth**, King of France, 1835  
**Charles the Second**, King of Spain, 1531, 1535  
**Charles the Third**, King of Spain, 1557, 1562  
**Charles the Fourth**, King of Spain, 1808  
**Charles the Twelfth**, King of Sweden, 1588  
**Charlestown**, capture of, 1707  
**Charmouth**, battle of, 86  
**Charter of Henry the First**, 168, 169  
     produced by Langton, 238  
     the Great, 240—243  
     re-issued, 245  
     confirmed by Henry the Third, 268, 276  
     confirmed by Edward the First, 395  
     the People's, 1837  
     of towns, cancelled by Charles the Second, 1437  
**Château-Gaillard**, 215, 216, 219, 220  
**Chatham**, Earl of (*see* Pitt), 1687, 1691, 1695, 1697, 1699, 1704—1707  
**Chaucer**, 417—428  
     Caxton's edition of, 576  
**Cherbourg** surrendered to Charles the Seventh, 545  
**Chester** conquered by Æthelfrith, 35  
     Danes at, 98  
     conquered by William, 153  
     blockaded, 1171  
**Chesterfield**, Earl of, 1599, 1624  
**Chichester**, Sir Arthur, 927  
**Chillingworth**, William, theologian, 1307—1310  
**China**, war with, 1838  
     treaty, 1840  
**Chippewa**, battle of, 1822  
**Chivalry**, 347—350  
**Chotusitz**, battle of, 1621  
**Christ Church**, Oxford, 637  
**"Christian Brethren,"** the, 697  
**Chronicle**, English, 97  
     its end, 229  
**Church**, English, its foundation, 31—33  
     in Northumbria, 41—52, 54—56  
     organized by Theodore, 57—59  
     condition under William the First, 158—161  
     under Rufus, 166—168  
     under Henry the First, 178—182  
     action during the anarchy, 195, 196  
     Henry the Second and, 201—204, 208  
     John and, 232—234  
     condition under John and Henry the Third, 279—282  
     under Edward the First, 326  
     in fourteenth century, 453—456  
     plans of reform in, 458—461  
**Church**, English—*continued.*  
     political decline in fifteenth century, 530  
     condition after Wars of the Roses, 565—568  
     its reform undertaken by Parliament, 659  
     Henry the Eighth Head of, 662—666  
     its independent jurisdiction abolished, 664  
     T. Cromwell's dealings with, 666, 673  
     spoliation of, 694, 695  
     changes under Edward the Sixth, 711—715  
     submission to Rome, 722  
     Elizabeth and, 746—751  
     proposals in Parliament for its reform, 812  
     condition under Elizabeth, 814—816  
     parties in, 971—973  
     demand for its reform, 973  
     the Long Parliament and, 1129—1132  
     Cromwell's dealings with, 1254  
     condition under Charles the Second, 1328—1333  
     bill for its security, 1400  
     James the Second's dealings with, 1455—1463  
     temper after the Revolution, 1507—1509  
     condition under the Georges, 1608—1609  
     influence of Methodists on, 1618  
     Irish, its mission work, 41—43  
     condition under Henry the Eighth, 912—916  
     Protestant, disestablished, 1847, 1848  
     Scottish Presbyterian, 1085—1091, 1507  
**Church-rates** abolished, 1848  
**Churchill**, John, 1448, 1540, 1541. *See* Marlborough  
**Cintra**, Convention of, 1809  
**Circuit**, the Bloody, 1446—1447  
**Cistercians**, 180  
**Ciudad Rodrigo** stormed, 1818  
**Clair-sur-Epte**, treaty of, 135  
**Clare**, Earl of, settles in Pembroke, 312  
**Clarence**, George, Duke of, 558, 559  
**Clarendon**, Assize of, 210, 211  
     Constitutions of, 202—204, 208  
**Clarendon**, Edward Hyde, Earl of (*see* Hyde), Lord Chancellor, 1319  
     his policy, 1328  
     fall, 1366, 1367  
**Clarendon**, Henry Hyde, Earl of, 1456, 1457  
**Claverhouse**, 1494  
**Clement the Seventh**, Pope, 647—649, 664  
**Clergy**, representation of, in Parliament, 342—344  
     condition in fourteenth century, 454—456  
     submission to Henry the Eighth, 662  
     their enslavement, 671  
     position under Elizabeth, 748—751, 814, 815, 958—962  
     Puritan, expelled, 986  
     Laud's dealings with, 1057—1060  
     condition under the Georges, 1608, 1609  
     effect of Methodist revival on, 1618  
**Cleveland**, Barbara Palmer, Duchess of (*see* Castlemaine), 1354  
**Cleves**, Anne of, 689, 705  
**Clifford**, Lord, 553  
**Clifford**, Sir Thomas, 1372, 1375, 1377, 1379, 1381  
**Clive**, Robert, 1629—1631, 1647—1648, 1707—1709  
**Closter-Seven**, Convention of, 1637



- Cloth of Gold, Field of, 638  
 Cnichtenagild, in London, 181, 376  
 Cnut, King of Denmark and England, 122—127  
 Cnut the Fourth, King of Denmark, 165  
 Coal, discovery of its uses, 1729—1731  
 Coalition Ministry, 1556, 1722—1725  
 Cobham, Eleanor, 534  
 Cobham, Lord (Sir John Oldcastle), 502, 516, 517  
 Codrington, Admiral, 1832  
 Coke, Sir Edward, 997, 998, 1037  
 Colchester, siege of, 1197—1199  
 Coleman, secretary of Mary of Modena, 1404, 1405, 1408  
 Colet, John, 596—599  
   dean of St. Paul's, 605  
   founds St. Paul's School, *ib.*, 606  
   his address to Convocation, 610  
   charged with heresy, *ib.*  
   denounces war, 613  
 Colman, Bishop of Lindisfarne, 55, 56  
 Columba, S., 43  
 Commerce, Bolingbroke's proposed treaty of, 1571  
   Pitt's treaty with France, 1741  
 Commission, Ecclesiastical, under Elizabeth, 958, 960  
   abolished, 1124  
   restored, 1456  
 Commons of Kent, their Complaint, 546—548  
 Commons summoned to Parliament, 300  
   House of, 445, 446  
   its struggle with Wolsey, 640, 641  
   Petition to Henry the Eighth, 657—659  
   advance under Elizabeth, 808—813  
   under James the First, 1012—1015  
   struggle with Charles the First, 1029, 1030, 1033—1037, 1041, 1042, 1117—1124  
   place in the constitution, 1113  
   proceedings in 1641—42, 1129—1136  
   temper after the Revolution, 1509  
   becomes supreme in the State, 1522  
   its relation to the Crown and the Ministry, 1523—1525  
   Whig ascendancy in, 1580—1582  
   character under George the Third, 1673—1676  
   struggle with Wilkes, 1678, 1689—1690  
   with the Press, 1690  
   adopts Catholic emancipation, 1817, 1835;  
   *see* Parliament  
 Commonwealth established, 1204  
   proclaimed, 1208  
 "Communes," 296, 383—385  
 Compact, the Family, 1601  
 Compiègne, its defence by Jeanne d'Arc, 542  
 Comprehension Bill, 1507  
 Compton, Bishop of London, 1456, 1479, 1481  
 Compurgation abolished, 211  
 Comyn, regent of Scotland, 367  
 Comyn, the Red, slain, 404  
 Congregation, Lords of the, 756  
 Congregationalists, their rise, 1178  
 Connecticut, origin of the settlement, 1101  
 Conservatives, 1839  
 Conservators of the Peace, 327  
 Constable, Sir Robert, 685  
 Constance of Brittany, 226  
 Constantine, King of Scots, 103  
 Constitutional Clubs, 1755  
 Continental system, Napoleon's, 1792, 1803  
 Contract, the Great, 990  
 Convention of 1660, 1277  
   declares itself a Parliament, 1320  
   of 1688, 1487  
   Constituent, 1234, 1235, 1239, 1240  
   Scottish, 1494  
 Convocation, Colet's address to, 610  
   submits to Henry the Eighth, 664  
   upholds Divine Right of Kings, 976  
   its canons of 1604, 986  
   suspended, 1608  
 Cook, Captain, 1660  
 Cooper, Sir Ashley, 1271, 1273, 1276  
   Chancellor of the Exchequer, 1320  
   *See* Ashley, Shaftesbury  
 Coote, Eyre, 1707, 1711, 1712  
 Cope, Sir John, 1624  
 Copenhagen, battle of, 1793  
   bombardment of, 1806  
 Copy-holders, 472  
 Corn Laws, 1831, 1841—1843  
 Cornwall conquered by Egberht, 82  
   revolts, 86  
   royalist rising in, 1146  
 Cornwall, Richard, Earl of, 290, 298  
 Cornwallis, Lord, 1707, 1712  
 Coroners, 332  
 Corresponding Society, 1765  
 Corunna, battle of, 1810  
 Council, the Continual, 294, 389  
   Great, 212, 242, 329—331  
   of Officers, 1208  
   Royal, its criminal jurisdiction, 591  
   reorganized by Temple, 1414, 1415  
   Privy, 212  
   of State, 1204  
 Country party, 1381, 1391, 1393, 1398, 1399  
 County Court, the, 332, 333  
 Courcy, John de, 899  
 Courtenay, Bishop of London, 460  
   Archbishop of Canterbury, 464, 504  
 Courtenay, *see* Exeter  
 Covenant, the Scottish, 1105, 1106  
   signed in London, 1151  
   burnt there, 1328  
   abolished in Scotland, 1359  
 Coventry, Sir William, 1381  
 Coverdale, Miles, 673  
 Cowell, his theory of absolutism, 976  
 Cowper, William, Lord Keeper, 1556  
 Craft-gilds, 380—381, 383—385  
 Craggs, Secretary of State, 1592  
 Cranfield, Treasurer, 1017; *see* Middlesex  
 Cranmer, Thomas, his advice on Henry the Eighth's divorce, 659  
   Archbishop of Canterbury, 664  
   divorces Henry and Catharine, *ib.*, 665  
   crowns Anne Boleyn, 665  
   his Protestantism, 711  
   imprisoned, 719  
   his life and death, 728, 729  
 Crécy, battle of, 436, 437

- Crew, Chief Justice, 1030  
 Crimean war, 1844  
 Crompton invents the "mule," 1732  
 Cromwell, Henry, 1253  
 Cromwell, Oliver, his youth, 948, 949, 1161  
   at Marston Moor, 1157  
   quarrel with Manchester, 1160  
   his regiment, 1161—1166  
   scheme of New Model, 1168, 1169  
   victory at Naseby, 1171—1173  
   advocates toleration, 1182—1185  
   defeats Scots, 1198  
   conquest of Ireland, 1209—1213  
   victory at Dunbar, 1213—1215  
   at Worcester, 1218, 1219  
   drives out the Rump, 1229—1231  
   his policy, 1235—1238  
   named Protector, 1241  
   his rule, 1243—1254  
   foreign policy, 1254—1261  
   settlement of Ireland, 1251—1255  
   refuses title of king, 1263  
   inaugurated as Protector, 1265  
   death, 1271  
   his corpse outraged, 1327  
 Cromwell, Richard, 1271  
 Cromwell, Thomas, 654  
   fidelity to Wolsey, *ib.*, 656  
   counsel on the divorce, 657  
   policy, 661  
   Vicar-General, 666  
   dealings with the Church, 666—673, 700—  
     705  
   his rule, 675—677  
   dealings with the nobles, 682—687  
   administrative activity, 687  
   fall, 689, 690  
   success of his policy, 691, 692  
   his revival of Parliaments, 692  
 Crowland Abbey, 60  
   burnt by Danes, 87  
 Cuba, English conquest of, 1672  
 Culloden Moor, battle of, 1626  
 Cumberland, Ernest, Duke of, King of Hanover,  
   1838  
 Cumberland granted to Constantine of Scotland,  
   103  
 Cumberland, William, Duke of, 1624, 1626, 1635  
 Cumbria, kingdom of, 34, 351  
   southern, conquered by Egfrith, 62  
 Cuthbert, S., 49—52, 63, 65  
 Cuthwulf, King of the West Saxons, 20  
 Cynric, 19, 20  
  
 DACRE, Lord, 682, 685  
 Dacres, Leonard, 773  
 Dægsastan, battle of, 34  
 Danby, Thomas Osborne, Earl of, Lord Treasur-  
   er, 1397  
   his policy, 1397—1403  
   fall, 1408  
   correspondence with William, 1479, 1481  
   prepares for a rising, 1485, 1486  
   Lord President, 1509  
  
 Danegeld, 184  
 Danelaw, the, 89  
   conquest of, 99—101  
   revolts, 103, 106  
   submits to Swein, 117  
 Danes attack Britain, 87  
   conquer East Anglia, *ib.*  
   attack Wessex, 88  
   struggle with Ælfred, *ib.*, 89, 93, 98, 99  
   treaties with him, 89, 93  
   routed by Eadward and Æthelred, 98  
   defeated at Brunanburh, 103  
   massacre of, 116  
   conquer England, 117, 122  
   their settlements in Ireland, 894  
 Daniel, poet and historian, 801  
 Darcy, Lord, 685  
 Darnley, Henry Stuart, Lord, 716, 764—763  
 David Bruce; *see* Bruce  
 David, King of Scots, 357, 358  
 David, Prince of Wales, 320  
 Davies, Sir John, 1094  
 Deane, General, 1249  
 "Defenders," Irish, 1784  
 Deira, kingdom of, 23, 29  
 Deorham, battle of, 20  
 Derby, Edward Stanley, Earl of, 1844, 1846, 1847  
 Derby, Ferrars, Earl of, 209  
 Derby, Henry of Lancaster, Earl of, 506—510;  
   *see* Henry the Fourth  
 Dermot, King of Leinster, 897, 898  
 Desmond, Earls of, 903, 923  
 Despensers, the, 400—402  
 Dettingen, battle of, 1622  
 Devonshire, Earl of (*see* Cavendish) 1481, 1485,  
   1486  
 Digby, Lord, 1117  
 Digges, Sir Dudley, 1029, 1030  
 Directory, the French, 1767  
 Disraeli, Benjamin, 1847, 1850  
 Dissidence, its growth, 1182  
 Domesday Book, 158  
 Dominic, S., 282  
 Dominicans, *see* Friars  
 Donne, 1094  
 Dorchester, first West-Saxon *see*, 44  
 Dorset, Sackville, Earl of, 860  
 Douglas, James, 407  
 Dover besieged by Lewis of France, 246  
   treaty of, 1375  
 Dowdall, Archbishop of Armagh, 916  
 Drake, Francis, 829—832, 835, 837, 841, 843, 889  
 Drama, *see* Literature  
 Dreux, battle of, 761  
 Drogheda, storm of, 1209—1211  
 Dryden, 1301, 1370, 1383  
 Dublin besieged by Ormond, 1209  
 Dudley, Guildford, 717, 720  
 Dudley, minister of Henry the Seventh, 605  
 Dumbarton taken by Eadberht, 74  
 Dunbar, battle of, 1213—1215  
 Duncan, Admiral, 1771  
 Dundas, Henry, 1799  
 Dundee, John Graham of Claverhouse, Viscount,  
   1494—1496

- Dunedin, 352  
 Dunes, battle of the, 1269  
 Dunkirk ceded to England, 1269  
   sold to France, 1366  
 Duns Scotus, 287  
 Dunstan, S., 103—106  
   his administration, 106—108, 113  
   death, 114  
 Dupleix, his designs in India, 1629—1631  
 Duquesne, Fort, 1633, 1652  
 Durham, historians of, 222  
 Dyvnaint, 78
- EADBERHT, King of Northumbria, 74, 75  
 Eadgar, King of England, 107, 108, 113  
   his Law, 110, 123  
 Eadgar, King of Scots, 168  
 Eadgar, the Ætheling, 149, 150, 152, 168  
 Eadmer, 222  
 Eadmund, King of Wessex, 103, 104, 106  
   grants Strathclyde to Malcolm, 355  
 Eadmund Ironside, 122  
 Eadmund, S., of East Anglia, 87  
 Eadred, King of Wessex, 106  
 Eadric of Mercia, 122  
 Edward the Confessor, 129—133  
   his promise to William, 144  
   his Laws, 129  
 Edward the Elder, King of Wessex, 99—101  
 Eadward the Martyr, 113  
 Eadwig, brother of Eadmund Ironside, 122  
 Eadwig, King of Wessex, 106, 107  
 Eadwine, Earl of Mercia, 133, 149, 150, 152, 153  
 Eadwine, King of Northumbria, 35—39  
 Ealdhelm, Bishop of Sherborne, 67  
 Ealdormen, 26  
 Ealdred, Archbishop of York, 150  
 Ealhstan, Bishop of Sherborne, 87  
 Earldoms created by Cnut, 123  
 Ebbfleet, 12, 13, 33  
 Ecgbert, Archbishop of York, 74  
 Ecgbert of Wessex, 78, 79, 82, 83, 86  
 Ecgrith, King of Northumbria, 62—65, 352, 353  
 Ecgwine, Bishop of Worcester, 60  
 Edgehill, battle of, 1142, 1143  
 Edinburgh, its origin, 38, 352  
   capital of Scot Kings, 355, 357  
   English troops at, 505  
*Edinburgh Review*, 1816  
 Edington, battle of, 89  
 Edith, *see* Matilda  
 Edmund Rich, 256, 257  
   reads Aristotle at Oxford, 261  
   Archbishop of Canterbury, 275  
   exile, 276  
 Edmund, son of Henry the Third, 292  
 Education, national, its beginnings, 1836  
   Committee of, *ib.*  
   School Boards, 1849; *see* Literature, Schools  
 Edward the First, his motto, 291  
   defeated by Llewelyn, 292  
   faithful to the Provisions of Oxford, 294  
   surrenders at Lewes, 298
- Edward the First—*continued.*  
   escapes, 302  
   takes Gloucester, *ib.*  
   victory at Evesham, 302—304  
   character, 318, 319, 345—351  
   crusade, 319  
   conquers Wales, 320—322  
   his policy, 322  
   judicial reforms, 324—326  
   legislation, 326—328  
   social changes under, 329, 331, 335, 386, 387  
   first conquest of Scotland, 359—364  
   second, 364—368  
   struggle with barons, 389—391, 394, 395  
   expels Jews, 393  
   dealings with clergy, 394  
   war with France, *ib.*  
   confirms Charters, 395  
   death, 395, 406  
 Edward the Second, King, 395  
   struggle with Lords Ordainers, 398—400  
   defeated at Bannockburn, 408  
   truce with Scotland, 409  
   deposed and murdered, 402, 403  
 Edward the Third proclaimed King, 403  
   arrests Mortimer, 411  
   struggle with Scotland, 412, 413  
   quarrel with France, 430, 431  
   alliance with Flanders, 431, 433, 434  
   with German princes, 432  
   war with France, 434—444  
   loses Aquitaine, 448  
   death, 485  
 Edward the Fourth, *see* March  
   victor at Towton, 554  
   King, *ib.*  
   marriage, 557, 558  
   struggle with Warwick, flight and return, 558, 559  
   final success, 560  
   character, 569  
   policy, 569—571  
   patron of Caxton, 571, 582  
   death, 584  
 Edward the Fifth, 584  
   More's Life of, 622  
 Edward the Sixth, King, 709  
   proposal for his marriage, 755  
   his Grammar Schools, 715  
   his "plan" for the succession, 716  
   death, 717  
 Edward the Black Prince at Crécy, 436, 437  
   plunders Gascony, 441  
   victory at Poitiers, 442, 443  
   expedition to Spain, 447  
   sacks Limoges, 448  
   death, 451  
 Egypt conquered by Buonaparte, 1773  
   French withdraw from, 1793  
 "Eikon Basilike," 1207  
 Eldon, Lord Chancellor, 1832  
 Eleanor of Poitou, wife of Henry the Second, 196, 199, 218, 220  
 Eleanor of Provence, wife of Henry the Third, 272, 296, 300, 301



- Eleanor, sister of Henry the Third, marries Simon de Montfort, 290
- Eliot, Sir John, 1025—1027  
attacks Buckingham, 1029  
arrested, 1030  
moves Remonstrance, 1037  
speeches in Parliament, 1039, 1041  
death, 1068
- Elliott, General, 1707, 1717
- Elizabeth, daughter of Edward the Fourth, 585  
marries Henry the Seventh, 587
- Elizabeth, daughter of Henry the Eighth, 709  
her Greek-scholarship, 616  
accession, 731  
character, 733—746  
Church policy, 746—751, 953  
dealings with Scotland, 755, 756  
with Huguenots, 761  
with Roman Catholics, 757, 761, 762, 774, 818—822, 833  
troubles with Mary Stuart and the Parliament, 766  
with Mary and Alva, 770, 771  
Catholic revolt and Bull of Deposition against her, 772—774  
relations with Parliament, 808—813, 981—983  
plans for her marriage, 828  
policy in Ireland, 919—925  
death, 930
- Elizabeth, daughter of James the First, 1002
- Elizabeth, Empress of Russia, 1634, 1672
- Ellandun, battle of, 82
- Ely, foundation of, 60  
burnt by Danes, 87  
surrendered to William, 153, 154
- Emma, wife of Æthelred the Second, 116, 144
- Empson, minister of Henry the Seventh, 605
- Enclosures, riots against, 568
- England, the making of, 12—83  
intercourse with the Franks, 78—80  
Danish conquest of, 114—117, 122  
condition under Cnut, 122—127  
relations with Normandy, 144  
conquered by William, 149—154  
immigration from the Continent into, 170, 171  
condition under Stephen, 195  
under Interdict, 233  
agrarian discontent in, 480, 482—484, 568, 641—644  
Commines' account of, 561, 562  
New Learning in, 593—620  
effects of Wolsey's administration in, 633—638  
change in attitude towards Rome, 663—664  
industrial progress under Edward the First, 386, 387  
social condition in the sixth century, 24—28  
in tenth and eleventh centuries, 111, 112  
under the Edwards, 328, 331, 386, 387, 415—417, 428—430, 456  
in fourteenth century, 470—484, 497—502
- England—*continued.*  
in fifteenth century, 527—534  
during Wars of the Roses, 561—563  
after, 563—569  
under Elizabeth, 778—796  
in Puritan time, 937—944, 948  
modern, its beginning, 1286  
joins Triple Alliance, 1370  
position in Grand Alliance, 1492  
new position under House of Hanover, 1577  
1578  
growth of trade and wealth, 1595  
society in, under the Georges, 1609—1611  
philanthropic revival in, 1618, 1619  
alliance with Prussia, 1634  
its place in the world, 1659, 1718, 1719  
relations with America, 1664, 1665, 1680—1682, 1694—1699, 1705, 1717, 1814, 1821, 1822  
industrial progress in eighteenth century, 1727—1732  
condition compared with the Continent, 1743  
attitude towards French revolution, 1750, 1751  
efforts of revolutionists in, 1755  
panic in, 1763—1765  
colonial gains, 1769  
successes at sea, 1771—1773  
northern league against, 1792  
declares war with Buonaparte, 1797  
condition during French war, 1815, 1816  
after, 1829—1831  
severed from Hanover, 1838
- England, New, 1043—1053, 1065  
return of Independents from, 1178  
its four States, 1661  
its schools, 1663
- England, Old, 1, 2
- Engle, their Sleswick home, 1, 2  
settle in East Anglia, 19  
conquer Mid-Britain and the North, 22, 23
- English, Middle, 22
- English people, their life in the older England, 2—7  
their religion, 7, 8  
conquer Britain, 10—23  
their settlement, 24—26  
significance of their history, 1719; *see* England
- Eorls, 6
- Episcopacy abolished in Scotland, 1089  
restored, *ib.*  
demand for its abolition in England, 1132
- Erasmus, 599—601, 604  
his edition of S. Jerome, 602, 616  
"Praise of Folly," 605, 622  
denounces the war, 613, 614  
his Greek Testament, 618  
his theology, 618—620
- Essex, Countess of, 999, 1001
- Essex, Earl of, Elizabeth's favourite, 873, 925, 929
- Essex, Earl of, commander of Parliamentary army, 1141—1143, 1146, 1148  
relieves Gloucester, 1149

Essex, Earl of—*continued*.  
 defeated in Cornwall, 1157  
 resigns his command, 1168  
 Essex, Earl of, minister of Charles the Second,  
 1412, 1418, 1423, 1431, 1432  
 Essex, Henry of, 313  
 Euphuism, 801, 802  
 Eustace the Monk, 246  
 Evesham, its origin, 60  
 battle of, 302—304  
 Exchange, the Royal, 786  
 Exchequer, Court of, 184, 212  
 Richard Fitz-Neal's treatise on, 224  
 closed, 1377  
 Excise Bill, Walpole's, 1594, 1597  
 Pitt's, 1737  
 Exclusion Bill, 1415, 1416, 1424, 1425  
 Exeter, Courtenay, Marquis of, 687  
 Exeter, Danes in, 89  
 revolts against the Conqueror, 152  
 Eylau, battle of, 1806

FADDILEY, battle of, 29  
 Fairfax, Lord, 1145  
 Fairfax, Sir Thomas, 1153, 1155, 1168, 1169,  
 1197, 1199, 1200, 1276  
 Falkirk, battles of, 366, 367, 1626  
 Falkland, Viscount, 1127  
 his demands of Church reform, 1130  
 leaves Parliament and joins Charles, 1139  
 death, 1149  
 his philosophy, 1293, 1306  
 Farmers, their rise, 473  
 Fastolfe, Sir John, 539, 582  
 Fawkes, Guido, 987  
 Felton, John, 1038, 1039  
 Ferdinand the Catholic, King of Aragon, 611,  
 612  
 Ferdinand the Seventh, King of Spain, 1808  
 Ferozeshah, battle of, 1841  
 Ferrar, Bishop of St. Davydd's, 727  
 Feudalism, its growth under the Conqueror, 154  
 —158  
 its ruin, 438  
 Fifth-Monarchy men, 1361  
 Finch, Chief Justice, 1105  
 Lord Keeper, 1119  
 First of June, battle of, 1767—1769  
 Fisher, Bishop of Rochester, supports the New  
 Learning, 608  
 patron of Erasmus, 620  
 his reply to Luther, 633  
 opposes Henry the Eighth's divorce, 647  
 imprisoned, 678  
 death, 681  
 Fitzgerald, Lord Thomas, 906  
 Fitzgerald, Maurice, 897  
 Fitz-Hamo, Robert, 312  
 Fitzharris, his impeachment, 1427  
 Fitz-Neal, Richard, his dialogue on the Ex-  
 chequer, 224  
 Fitz-Osbern, William, 150, 152  
 Fitz-Peter, Geoffrey, Justiciar, 238  
 Fitz-Stephen, Robert, 897

Fitz-Thomas, Thomas, mayor of London, 383  
 Fitz-Urse, Reginald, 206, 207  
 Fitz-Walter, Robert, 239, 246  
 Fitz-Warrenne, Fulk, 276, 277  
 Five Boroughs, 92, 99  
 Flamsteed, astronomer, 1303  
 Flanders, its relations with England, 431, 433,  
 434, 787  
 English Gild of Merchant Adventurers in, 575  
 occupied by the French, 1369  
 delivered by Marlborough, 1558  
 Flemings in Pembroke, 312, 314  
 under Edward the Third, 433  
 Fletcher, Phineas and Giles, 1094  
 Fleurus, battles of, 1516, 1767  
 Flodden, battle of, 755  
 Flood, Irish leader, 1714  
 Florida ceded to England, 1672  
 restored to Spain, 1717  
 Fontenoy, battle of, 1624  
 Fortescue, Sir John, his definition of English  
 kingship, 562  
 Fort William (Calcutta), its origin, 1629  
 Fournigny, battle of, 545  
 Fox, Bishop of Winchester, 609, 620, 633  
 Fox, Charles, 1721, 1722  
 his India Bill, 1725  
 supports Regency of Prince of Wales, 1743  
 attitude towards Revolution, 1747, 1753  
 his Libel Act, 1753  
 Burke's quarrel with, *ib.*  
 forsaken by the Whigs, 1763  
 returns to office, 1803  
 death, *ib.*  
 Foxe, John, his "Book of Martyrs," 816  
 France, William the First and, 165  
 Edward the Third and, 430—444  
 alliance with the Scots, 505  
 truce with Richard the Second, 506  
 Henry the Fifth and, 518—525  
 struggle against Bedford, 534—543  
 English expelled from, 545  
 relations with Italy, 611  
 with Henry the Eighth, Spain, and the  
 Empire, *ib.*, 612, 613, 633, 638, 640, 645,  
 649  
 civil wars in, 757, 761, 762, 770, 826, 889—891  
 relations with England and Holland, 1363—  
 1366  
 Family Compact with Spain, 1601  
 alliance with Prussia, 1623  
 designs in India and America, 1628—1633  
 withdraws thence, 1672  
 alliance with United States, 1705, 1746, 1747  
 Pitt's treaty of commerce with, 1739  
 condition in eighteenth century, 1745, 1746  
 revolution in, 1747, 1749, 1751, 1756—1759  
 declares war on the Emperor, 1756  
 on Holland, 1759  
 on England, 1761  
 insurrections in, 1765, 1766  
 struggle against Europe, 1766, 1767  
 conquers Holland, 1767  
 Directory in, *ib.*  
 conquests in Italy, 1769—1771

France—*continued*.

- Consulate, 1774  
 Buonaparte's rule in, 1797  
 revolution of 1830, 1835
- Franchise, Parliamentary, restricted under Henry  
 the Sixth, 527—529  
 the forty shilling, 529  
 extension in 1832, 1835  
 in 1867, 1846
- Francis, S., of Assisi, 282
- Francis the First, King of France, conquers  
 Lombardy, 633  
 meeting with Henry the Eighth, 638  
 prisoner, 644  
 released, 646
- Francis the Second, King of France, 755—757
- Franciscans, *see* Friars
- Franklin, Benjamin, 1681
- Frank-pledge, 373
- Franks, their intercourse with England, 78—80
- Frederick, Elector Palatine, 1002, 1005, 1007,  
 1019
- Frederick, Prince of Wales, 1603
- Frederick the Second, King of Prussia, 1603,  
 1605  
 victory at Chotusitz, 1621  
 alliance with France, 1623  
 seizes Prague, *ib.*  
 drives Austrians from Silesia, 1624  
 treaty with England, 1634  
 seizes Dresden, 1635  
 victory at Prague and defeat at Kolin, *ib.*  
 victories at Rossbach, Leuthen, and Zorn-  
 dorf, 1649  
 defeats in 1759, *ib.*, 1650  
 successes in 1760, 1669  
 share in partition of Poland, 1748  
 death, *ib.*
- Friars, the, 282—288
- Frideswide, S., Priory of, at Oxford, 250, 252
- Friedland, battle of, 1806
- Frith-Gilds, 372—374
- Frobisher, Martin, 839, 1044
- Fuentes d'Onore, battle of, 1813
- Fulk of Jerusalem, Count of Anjou, 190
- Fulk the Black, Count of Anjou, 188, 190
- Fulk the Good, Count of Anjou, 186
- Fulk the Red, Count of Anjou, 186
- GAGE, General, 1697
- Gaimar, 226
- Galen, Linacre's translation of, 596
- Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, 689, 709, 719,  
 722
- Garnet, Jesuit, 987
- Gauden, Dr., 1207
- Gaunt, Elizabeth, 1447
- Gaunt, John of, Duke of Lancaster, invades  
 France, 448  
 struggle with Parliament, 449—451  
 supports Wyclif, 458, 460  
 turns against him, 463, 466  
 expedition to Spain, 505, 506  
 driven from power, *ib.*

- Gavel-kind, 476
- Gaveston, Piers, 397—399
- Geoffrey Grey-gown, Count of Anjou, 188
- Geoffrey Martel, Count of Anjou, 141, 142, 190
- Geoffrey Plantagenet, Count of Anjou, 191, 192,  
 196
- Geoffrey, son of Henry the Second, 209, 212, 226
- George the First, King, 1576, 1579, 1588
- George the Second, King (*see* Cambridge), 1579,  
 1596, 1622, 1665
- George the Third, King, 1665—1667  
 his "friends," 1668  
 supports Whigs against Pitt, *ib.*, 1671  
 his home policy, 1672, 1673  
 dealings with the Commons, 1675, 1676  
 with the Whigs, 1676  
 with Pitt, 1677  
 his personal administration, 1696  
 dealings with America, 1694—1697  
 madness, 1748, 1817  
 refuses Catholic emancipation, 1791  
 death, 1831
- George (the Fourth), Prince of Wales, Regent,  
 1748, 1817  
 King, 1831  
 death, 1835
- Georgia colonised, 1662
- Gerald de Barri, 224, 253
- Geraldines, the, 905
- Gewissas, 19
- Gibraltar, sieges of, 1594, 1707, 1717
- Gilbert discovers terrestrial magnetism, 1296
- Gilbert, Sir Humphry, 1045
- Gildas, 23
- Gilds, 175, 372—381
- Ginkell, General, 1516
- Giraldus Cambrensis, *see* Gerald
- Gladstone, Mr., 1847, 1850
- Glamorgan, conquest of, 312
- Glanvill, Ralph, 209  
 his treatise on law, 226
- Glastonbury, 67  
 Arthur's tomb at, 226, 317
- Glencoe, massacre of, 1497, 1498
- Glendower, *see* Glyndwr
- Gloucester, Duke of, son of Edward the Third,  
 506, 507
- Gloucester, Eleanor Cobham, Duchess of, 534
- Gloucester, Gilbert, Earl of, 298, 301
- Gloucester, Humphry, Duke of, 535, 536, 543,  
 545  
 his library, 582
- Gloucester, Richard, Duke of, *see* Richard the  
 Third
- Gloucester, Richard, Earl of, 293, 294, 296
- Gloucester, Robert, Earl of, 193
- Gloucester, siege of, 1149
- Glyndwr, Owen, 515, 516
- Goderich, Lord, 1832
- Godfrey, Sir Edmondsbury, 1405, 1406
- Godolphin, Earl of, 1533, 1545, 1569
- Godwine, Earl of Wessex, 128, 130  
 exiled, 131  
 returns and dies, *ib.*  
 "Goliath, Bishop," 228



- Gondomar, Count of, 1011, 1013  
 Goodrich, Bishop of Ely, 700  
 Goojerat, battle of, 1844  
 Government, Act of, 1265  
   Instrument of, 1240, 1243, 1245  
 Gower, poet, 572  
   Caxton's edition of, 576  
 Grafton, Duke of, 1687, 1696  
 Granville, Earl, 1623; *see* Carteret  
 Grattan, 1714, 1781  
 Greek, revived study of, 595, 596  
 Greene, Robert, 805, 862, 863, 868  
 Greenvil, Sir Bevil, 1146  
 Greenway, Jesuit, 987  
 Greenwich Observatory founded, 1303  
 Gregory the Great, Pope, 31  
   Ælfred's translation of his Pastoral, 97  
 Grenville, George, his ministry, 1676—1681  
 Grenville, Lord, 1803—1805  
 Gresham, Sir Thomas, 786  
 Grey, Earl, 1835  
 Grey, Elizabeth, wife of Edward the Fourth, 558  
 Grey, John de, Bishop of Norwich, 232  
 Grey, Lady Jane, 717, 718, 720  
 Grey, Lord, Deputy in Ireland, 847, 923  
 Grey, Lord Leonard, 907  
 Grey, Sir Richard, 584  
 Grew, physiologist, 1304  
 Grindcobbe, William, 488, 491  
 Grocyn, 596, 599, 601  
 Grosseteste, Robert, Bishop of Lincoln, 264, 275,  
   282, 286, 288  
 Gruffydd, Prince of Wales, 311  
 Guienne, struggle of Edward the First and Philip  
   the Sixth for, 430  
   lost to England, 545  
 Guiscard, Robert, 138  
 Guise, Mary of, Regent of Scotland, 755  
 Guises, the, 757, 761, 762, 826  
 Guisnes lost to England, 731  
 Gunhild, sister of Swein, 116  
 Gunpowder, effect of its introduction, 589  
 Gunpowder Plot, 986, 987  
 Gustavus Adolphus, 1069, 1070  
 Guthlac, S., 60  
 Guthrum, King of East Anglia, 88  
   treaties with Ælfred, 89, 93  
 Gwynn, Nell, 1354  
 Gyrth, son of Godwine, 148  
 Gyrwas, 22
- HADRIAN THE FOURTH, Pope, 897**  
 Hainault, Jacqueline, Countess of, 535  
 Hale, Sir Matthew, 1222, 1235, 1317, 1326  
 Hales, John, leader of Peasant Revolt, 487  
 Hales, John, theologian, 1307, 1310  
 Hales, Sir Edward, 1453  
 Halidon Hill, battle of, 412  
 Halifax (Nova Scotia) founded, 1633  
 Halifax, Savile, Viscount, 1412, 1416, 1418, 1424,  
   1425, 1427, 1428, 1453, 1477  
   share in the Revolution, 1489, 1491  
   Privy Seal, 1511  
 Hall, Bishop and satirist, 1094
- Halley, astronomer, 1303  
 Hamilton, Marquis and Duke of, 1106, 1198,  
   1207  
 Hamilton, second Duke of, 1217, 1219  
 Hampden, John, resists a forced loan, 1031  
   refuses ship-money, 1101  
   trial, 1103—1105  
   judgement annulled, 1119  
   charged with treason, 1133  
   death, 1148  
 Hampton Court Conference, 980  
 Hanover, Convention of, 1627  
   House of, 1539, 1578, 1579  
   severed from England, 1838  
 Harald Hardrada, King of Norway, 146  
 Harald, King of England, 127  
 Hardwicke, Lord Chancellor, 1599  
 Harfleur taken by Henry the Fifth, 520  
 Hargreaves, inventor of spinning-jenny, 1732  
 Harlaw, battle of, 752  
 Harley, Robert, 1556  
   intrigues against Marlborough, 1563, 1568  
   rivalry with Bolingbroke, 1571—1573  
   countenances South Sea Company, 1590; *see*  
   Oxford  
 Harold, son of Godwine, 130  
   his administration, 131—133  
   Welsh campaign, 311  
   King, 133  
   his oath to William, 144  
   struggle with Harald Hardrada and William,  
   146  
   death, 149  
 Harthacnut, King of England, 127, 128  
 Harvey discovers circulation of the blood, 1296  
 Haselrig, one of the five members, 1133, 1222,  
   1242, 1269, 1275  
 Hasting, 98  
 Hastings, battle of, 148, 149  
 Hastings, John, claims Scottish throne, 361  
 Hastings, Lord, minister of Edward the Fourth,  
   584  
 Hastings, Warren, 1709—1712, 1740, 1741  
 Hatfield, battle of, 39  
 Havelock, Sir Henry, 1845  
 Hawke, Admiral, 1651  
 Hawkins, John, 789, 839  
 Hawley, General, 1626  
 Heaven's Field, battle of, 41  
 Hengest, 12  
 Hengest-dun, battle of, 86  
 Henrietta Maria, wife of Charles the First, 1023  
 Henry the First, his accession, charter, and  
   marriage, 168—170  
   suppresses revolt, 182  
   conquers Normandy, 183  
   his administration, 183, 184  
   struggle with Anjou, 185, 190  
   death, 192  
   palace of Beaumont, 252  
   dealings with Wales, 312  
 Henry the Second, his marriage and accession,  
   196, 197  
   person and character, 197—199  
   policy, 199

- Henry the Second—*continued*.  
 relations with France, 199  
 Church policy, 201  
 quarrel with Beket, 202—207  
 war of Toulouse, 199  
 crowning of his eldest son, 204  
 revolts against, 209, 212  
 penance, 209  
 legal reforms, 208—211  
 death, 213  
 visit to Glastonbury, 226, 317  
 dealings with Wales, 313  
 with Scotland, 359  
 with Ireland, 895—899
- Henry the Third, crowned, 245  
 confirms charter, 268, 275  
 quarrel with Hubert de Burgh, 263—271  
 character and policy, 271, 272  
 marriage, 272  
 misrule, 272—275  
 expedition to Poitou, 276  
 quarrel with Simon de Montfort, 289, 290  
 with the barons, 292, 293  
 his English proclamation, 294  
 treaties with France and Wales, *ib.*  
 war with the barons, 296—304  
 death, 319
- Henry the Fourth, *see* Derby  
 king, 512  
 relations with Parliament, 513  
 suppresses Lollardy, 514  
 revolts against him, 514—516  
 death, 516
- Henry the Fifth, King, 516  
 war with France, 518—521  
 conquers Normandy, 522—524  
 marriage, 525  
 treaty with France, *ib.*  
 death, *ib.*  
 Regency nominated by him, 535
- Henry the Sixth, his minority, 527, 530  
 crowned at Paris, 543  
 marriage, 545  
 loses Normandy and Guienne, *ib.*  
 birth of his son, 548  
 idiocy, 549  
 prisoner, 550  
 deposed, 554  
 flies to Scotland, *ib.*  
 prisoner, 555  
 restored, 559  
 dies, 560  
 his library, 582
- Henry the Seventh, *see* Richmond  
 king, 587  
 marriage, *ib.*  
 revolts against him, *ib.*  
 title to the throne, 589  
 his policy, 589—592  
 character, 592  
 patron of Caxton, 582  
 dealings with Ireland, 904
- Henry the Eighth, his accession, 605  
 person, *ib.*  
 marries Catharine of Aragon, 611
- Henry the Eighth—*continued*.  
 war with France, 612  
 education of his children, 616  
 his "Assertion of the Seven Sacraments,"  
 632  
 treaty with France, 633  
 seeks Imperial crown, 638  
 meets Francis, *ib.*  
 alliance with Charles the Fifth, *ib.*, 640  
 withdraws from the war, 645  
 proceedings for divorce, 646—649, 659, 664  
 promises a translation of the Bible, 659  
 "Head of the Church," 662, 666  
 marries Anne Boleyn, 665  
 Jane Seymour, 689  
 Anne of Cleves, *ib.*  
 Catharine Howard, 705  
 death, 709  
 his will, *ib.*, 716  
 dealings with Ireland, 906—915
- Henry, King of Navarre (Henry the Fourth of France), 832, 889—891, 971
- Henry of Blois, Bishop of Winchester, 195, 196
- Henry, son of Henry the Second, 204, 205, 209, 212
- Herbert, Admiral, 1481; *see* Torrington
- Herbert, George, 972, 1094
- Hereward, 153
- Herford, Nicholas, 461, 465, 468
- Herloun of Brionne, 136
- Herrick, 1094
- Herrings, battle of the, 539
- Hertford, Earl of, 709, 711. *See* Somerset
- Hexham, battle of, 555  
 historians of, 222
- Highlands subdued by Monk, 1249  
 conquest of, 1627
- Hild, abbess of Whitby, 52
- Hilsey, Bishop of Rochester, 700
- History, English, its beginning, 73, 98  
 under Ælfred, 97  
 its significance, 1719
- Hobbes, Thomas, 1293, 1310—1314
- Hochkirch, battle of, 1649
- Hohenfriedburg, battle of, 1624
- Hohenlinden, battle of, 1775
- Holland, its relations with England and France,  
 1215, 1223—1225, 1345—1349, 1366, 1369,  
 1370, 1377, 1379, 1395, 1473, 1767
- Holland, Jacqueline, Countess of, 535
- Holles, one of the five members, 1133, 1186,  
 1188, 1192
- Homilies, Book of, 714
- Hooke, microscopist, 1303
- Hooker, Richard, 955—957
- Hooper, Bishop of Gloucester, 715, 727
- Hopton, Sir Ralph, 1146
- Horsa, 12, 15
- Horsted, 15
- Hotham, Sir John, 1139
- Hotspur, 514
- Hough, President of Magdalen College, Oxford,  
 1459
- Hounslow, camp at, 1453
- Howard, Catharine, 705, 709

- Howard, John, 1619—1621  
 Howard of Effingham, Lord, 837  
 Howden, Roger of, 223  
 Howe, General, 1702—1704  
 Howe, Lord, 1767  
 Howel Dda, Laws of, 309  
 Hrolf the Ganger, 135  
 Hubert de Burgh, *see* Burgh  
 Hubertsberg, Treaty of, 1672  
 Hubert Walter, Archbishop of Canterbury, 213, 232, 383  
 Huddleston, Catholic priest, 1441  
 Huguenots, 757, 761, 762, 825, 826  
     in England, 1451  
 Humbert, General, 1773, 1785  
 Hundred Years' War, its origin, 430, 431  
     change in its character, 518  
     its effect on England, 531  
     its end, 545  
 Huntingdon, Henry of, 222  
 Huskisson, Mr., 1832  
 Hussey, Lord, 682, 685  
 Hutchinson, Colonel, 941—943  
 Hyde, Anne, 1366, 1456  
 Hyde, Edward, 1127, 1136, 1139. *See* Clarendon  
 Hyder Ali, 1712
- IDA founds kingdom of Bernicia, 23  
 Impositions of James the First, 989, 990  
 Income-tax, 1839  
 Indemnity, Bill of, 1511, 1512  
 Independence, Declaration of, 1703  
 Independents, 1178—1179  
 India, English and Portuguese in, 1628, 1629  
     French in, 1629—1631  
     Clive's victories in, 1631, 1647, 1648  
     French withdraw from, 1672  
     Clive's rule in, 1708, 1709  
     Regulating Act, 1709  
     condition under Hastings, 1709—1712  
     Fox's India Bill, 1725  
     Pitt's, 1740  
     Mutiny in, 1845  
     transferred to the Crown, *ib.*  
 India Company, East, 789, 790, 1629, 1707—1709, 1836, 1845  
 Indies, West, acquired by England, 1769  
 Indulgence, Declarations of, 1336, 1377, 1381, 1458, 1461  
 Ine, king of Wessex, 67, 68  
 Ingelger, 186  
 Inkerman, battle of, 1844  
 Innocent III., Pope, 232, 234, 244  
 Instrument of Government, 1240, 1243, 1245, 1265  
 Interdict in England, 233  
 Inverlochy, battle of, 1171  
 Iona, 43  
 Ipswich, Wolsey's school at, 635  
 Ireland attacked by Ecgfrith, 64  
     condition in twelfth century, 891—895  
     its conquest, 897—899  
     John in, 899, 901  
     Richard the Second in, 506, 508, 904
- Ireland—*continued*  
     Henry the Seventh's policy in, 904  
     Henry the Eighth's, 905—915  
     English colonization under Mary, 917—919  
     revolts against Elizabeth, 919—926  
     colonization of Ulster, 927  
     Wentworth in, 1081—1084  
     revolt, 1125, 1126  
     Cromwell's conquest of, 1209—1213  
     settlement, 1251—1253  
     James the Second's dealings with, 1455, 1498, 1499, 1503  
     rising in, 1500—1501  
     William's campaign in, 1514, 1515  
     Marlborough's, 1515, 1516  
     first union with England, 1223, 1253  
     dissolved, 1358, 1359  
     demands of the volunteers, 1714  
     made independent, *ib.*, 1780  
     condition under the Georges, 1738, 1775—1779  
     Pitt's dealings with, 1739, 1782, 1783  
     efforts of French revolutionists in, 1757  
     revolt of 1798, 1773, 1785  
     union with England, 1786  
     agitation for repeal, 1837  
     rising of Smith O'Brien, 1843  
     Mr. Gladstone's dealings with, 1847, 1848  
 Ireton, General, 1190, 1193, 1251, 1327  
 Irishmen, United, 1757, 1783, 1784  
 Iron-trade, 1729—1731  
 Isabella of Angoulême, wife of King John, 274  
 Isabella of France, wife of Edward the Second, 401, 402, 434, 435  
 Isabella of France, wife of Richard the Second, 506  
 Italy, its influence on English literature, 798, 801, 805
- JACOBITES, 1511, 1517, 1519  
     revolt, 1585, 1586, 1624—1627  
     decline, 1668  
 Jamaica, English conquest of, 1261  
 James the First, King of Scotland, 752  
 James the Fourth, King of Scotland, 716, 755  
 James the Fifth, King of Scotland, 755  
 James the Sixth of Scotland (First of England), his birth, 766  
     crowned, 770  
     struggles with Presbyterianism, 1088, 1089  
     person and character, 974  
     theory of monarchy, 974—976  
     of ecclesiastical supremacy, 979, 980  
     at Hampton Court Conference, 980  
     relaxes penal laws, 983  
     proposes union with Scotland, 984  
     his impositions, 989, 990  
     despotism, 995—998  
     Court and favourites, 998—1002  
     foreign policy, 983, 1002—1007, 1011  
     tears out Protestation of Parliament, 1013  
     death, 1023  
 James the Second, *see* York  
     King, 1442  
     revolts against, 1445—1447



- James the Second—*continued*.  
 his vengeance, 1446, 1447  
 increases the army, 1449  
 alliance with France, *ib.*  
 dispenses with Test Act, 1453  
 dealings with Scotland, 1455  
 struggle with English Churchmen, 1456, 1457  
 tries to win Nonconformists, 1458  
 attacks Universities, 1459  
 struggle with clergy and Bishops, 1461—1463  
 birth of his son, 1481  
 deserted, 1482, 1486  
 flight, 1487  
 goes to St. Germain, 1492  
 dealings with Ireland, 1455, 1498—1503,  
 1511—1514  
 death, 1538
- Jarrow, 71
- Java won by England, 1769
- Jeanne d'Arc, 534—543
- Jeffreys, Chief-Justice, 1447  
 Chancellor, 1462
- Jemappes, battle of, 1759
- Jena, battle of, 1803
- Jenkins' ear, 1601
- Jersey, New, 1661
- Jervis, Admiral, 1771
- Jesuits in England, 819—820
- Jews settle in England, 161—163  
 expelled, 393  
 return, 1254
- Joan of Arc, *see* Jeanne
- Johanna, daughter of King John, 313
- John, son of Henry the Second, 213  
 King, 218  
 loses Normandy, &c., 218—220  
 his character, 231, 232  
 quarrel with the Church, 232—235  
 with the barons, 237—239  
 Welsh wars, 234, 235, 313  
 homage to the Pope, 236  
 war with France, 236, 237  
 with the barons, 238, 239  
 signs Charter, 240  
 subdues Rochester and the North, 244  
 dealings with Ireland, 899, 901  
 death, 245
- John, King of Bohemia, 437
- John, King of France, 442, 443
- John the Old-Saxon, 96
- John the Litster, 490, 491
- Jonson, Ben, 878—881
- Joseph the Second, Emperor, 1743, 1749
- Junius, 1679, 1690
- Junto, the, 1525, 1526, 1533
- Jurors in the shire-court, 333
- Jury, the grand, 210  
 petty, 211  
 trial by, 210, 211
- Justices of the Peace, 327
- Justiciar, the, 183
- Jutes, their country, 2  
 land at Ebbsfleet, 12, 13  
 found kingdom of Kent, 26
- Juxon, Bishop of London and Treasurer, 1060
- KENNETH MACALPIN, King of Picts and Scots,  
 353
- Kent, English conquest of, 15—17  
 kingdom of, 26  
 greatness under Æthelberht, 30  
 conversion, 31—34  
 fall, 34  
 subject to Mercia, 66, 76  
 John Ball in, 483  
 revolts in, 486, 487, 546—548  
 Complaint of Commons of, 546—548
- Kent, Edward, Duke of, 1838
- Kent, Earl of, beheaded, 411
- Ketel of S. Edmundsbury, 178
- Kildare, Earl of, Lord Deputy of Ireland, 904,  
 906
- Kilkenny, Statute of, 903
- Killiekrankie, battle of, 1496
- Kilmarnock, Earl of, 1627
- Kilsyth, battle of, 1173
- King, growth of his dignity, 111, 112  
 the King in council, 211, 325  
 Divine right of, 976  
 his feudal rights abolished, 1324
- Kingdoms, the Three, 34
- King's Bench, Court of, 212
- King's Court, the, 183, 211, 212, 325
- Kingship, English, its origin, 26  
 theory of, in thirteenth century, 350  
 Sir John Fortescue's definition of, 562; *see*  
 Monarchy
- Kit's Coty House, 15
- Knights of the shire, 300, 332—335
- Knolles' "History of the Turks," 801
- Knox, John, 760
- Knox's Liturgy, 1091
- Kolin, battle of, 1635
- Kunersdorf, battle of, 1650
- LABOURERS, their rise, 474—477  
 condition after Black Death, 479—482  
 as painted by Longland, 498, 500  
 their enfranchisement refused, 491, 492  
 Statute of, 480  
 its failure, 498  
 demand for its repeal, 547  
 labour question in fifteenth and sixteenth  
 centuries, 568, 569, 644
- La Hogue, battle of, 1521
- Lambert, General, 1198, 1263, 1275, 1321
- Lambeth, treaty of, 246
- Lancaster, John, Duke of, *see* Gaunt
- Lancaster, Thomas, Earl of, 398, 401
- Lancaster, House of, its claims to the Crown,  
 511—513, 550  
 its fall, 560
- Land-tenure, changes in, 154, 156, 328, 329,  
 642—644
- Lanfranc at Bec, 136  
 relations with Duke William, 143, 144  
 Archbishop of Canterbury, 158  
 secures the Crown for Rufus, 166  
 death, *ib.*
- Langport, battle of, 1173

- Langside, battle of, 771  
 Langton, Simon, 244  
 Langton, Stephen, Archbishop of Canterbury, 233  
   heads opposition to John, 238  
   produces Charter of Henry the First, *ib.*  
   suspended, 244  
   his care for the Charter, 268  
   death, *ib.*  
 Langton, Bishop of Winchester, 602  
 Language, English, under the Normans, 228, 229  
   Henry the Third's proclamation in, 294  
   growing use of, 415  
   changes in Caxton's time, 579, 581  
   used in law courts, 415, 1597  
 Lansdowne Hill, battle of, 1146  
 Latimer, Hugh, 698—700  
   Bishop of Worcester, 700  
   imprisoned, 705, 719  
   burned, 727, 728  
 Latitudinarians, 972, 1293, 1306—1310  
 Laud, Bishop, 1023, 1039  
   character and policy, 1054—1057  
   Archbishop of Canterbury, 1057  
   plans of Church restoration, 1060—1064  
   first minister, 1085  
   dealings with Scotch Church, 1090, 1091  
   sent to the Tower, 1119  
 Lauderdale, Earl of, 1359  
 Lauffeld, battle of, 1628  
 Lauzun, Count of, 1514, 1515  
 Law Courts, Common, 324  
   English language adopted in, 1597  
 Law, national, its development under Ælfred, 93  
   Roman, in England, 247, 248  
   of Eadgar, 110, 123  
   of Eadward, 129  
   of Howel Dda, 309  
 Layamon, 229  
 League, the Holy, 611, 612  
 Learning, the New, 593—604  
   its educational reforms, 605—609  
   plans of Church reform, 610  
   theology, 618, 619  
   antagonism to Luther, 632, 633  
 Leases, their introduction, 472, 473  
 Leicester, town of, 371, 372  
 Leicester, Earl of, revolts against Henry the Second, 209  
 Leicester, Earl of, Elizabeth's favourite, 745, 832, 836  
 Leicester, Earl of, *see* Montfort  
 Leipzig, battle of, 1820  
 Leith, siege of, 756  
 Leland, 800  
 Lenthall, Speaker, 1133  
 Leo the Tenth, Pope, 616, 630, 632  
 Leofric, Earl of Mercia, 130  
 Leslie, Alexander, 1107, 1109. *See* Leven  
 Leslie, David, 1213, 1215  
 Leuthen, battle of, 1649  
 Levant Company, 989  
 Leven, Alexander Leslie, Earl of, 1153, 1185.  
   *See* Leslie  
 Lewes, battle of, 298  
   Mise of, 300  
 Lewis the Seventh, King of France, 199, 209  
 Lewis (the Eighth) of France, in England, 244—246  
 Lewis the Ninth, King of France, 296  
 Lewis the Eleventh, King of France, 611  
 Lewis the Twelfth, King of France, *ib.*, 633  
 Lewis the Fourteenth, 1363  
   relations with England and Holland, 1366, 1372  
   claims Low Countries, 1369  
   makes peace at Aix-la-Chapelle, 1370  
   treaties with Charles the Second, 1373—1375, 1398, 1427  
   revokes Edict of Nantes, 1449, 1450  
   his power, 1467  
   character and policy, 1469—1472  
   attacks Flanders, 1473  
   Holland, *ib.*  
   Italy, 1476  
   Germany, *ib.*, 1485, 1492  
   Netherlands, 1522  
   designs on Spain, 1532, 1535  
   acknowledges the Pretender, 1538  
   campaign of 1703, 1551  
   offers terms, 1565  
   death, 1586  
 Lewis the Fifteenth, 1586, 1623  
 Lewis the Sixteenth, 1747, 1749, 1756, 1759, 1761  
 Lewis the Eighteenth, 1823, 1827  
 Lexington, battle of, 1701  
 Lichfield, seat of Mercian bishopric, 48  
   archbishopric of, 78  
   suppressed, 82  
 Liegnitz, battle of, 1669  
 Ligny, battle of, 1824  
 Lilburne, John, 1178, 1208, 1212  
 Lille taken by Marlborough, 1565  
 "Lillibullero," 1483  
 Lilly, head of St. Paul's School, 606  
 Limerick, siege of, 1515, 1516  
 Limitation Bill, 1427  
 Limoges, sack of, 448  
 Linacre, 596  
 Lincoln, battle of, 194  
   Fair of, 246  
 Lincoln, John de la Pole, Earl of, 587  
 Lindsfarne, See of, 44  
   Irish monks of, withdraw to Iona, 56  
   Cuthbert at, 63, 65  
 Lindsivara, 22  
   submit to Penda, 39  
   to Oswald, 44  
   ceded to Ecgrith, 63  
   seized by Æthelred, *ib.*  
 Lisle, Alice, 1447  
 Litany, the English, 706  
 Literature, in Northumbria, 69—74  
   under Ælfred, 95—98  
   under Dunstan, 108  
   under Normans and Angevins, 221—229  
   in fourteenth century, 416—428, 463  
   of Peasant Revolt, 485, 486, 493—498  
   decline in fifteenth century, 533, 571—574

Literature—*continued*.

- Caxton's translations, 577—581  
 New Learning, 593—609  
 under Elizabeth, 797—806, 844—857  
 Elizabethan drama, 857—881  
 drama of the Restoration, 1291  
 beginnings of journalism, 1693  
 literature of Wales, 306—309
- Lithsmen of London, 377
- Liturgy, the Scottish, 1091, 1101
- Liverpool, its rise, 1595
- Liverpool, Earl of, 1817, 1832
- Livery Companies of London, 385
- Llewelyn ap Gruffydd, 292, 318—320
- Llewelyn ap Iorwerth, 268, 313—318
- Loan, forced, 1030
- Locke, John, 1314—1316
- Lollardry, its origin, 464  
 suppressed at Oxford, 465, 466  
 character after Wyclif's death, 502  
 progress, 504, 505, 508  
 suppressed, 514, 516, 517  
 under Henry the Sixth, 530
- London, its position, 22  
 submits to Wulhere, 59  
 to Ine, 67  
 to Offa, 76  
 plundered by northmen, 86  
 subject to Ælfred, 93  
 submits to William, 150  
 charter from him, *ib.*  
 Normans in, 171  
 Henry the First's charter to, 175  
 religious revival in, 180, 181  
 S. Paul's Cathedral, 180  
 election of Stephen, 192  
 defies Innocent the Third, 244  
 Friars in, 285  
 supports Earl Simon, 296, 297  
 its cnihtengild, 181, 376  
 lithsmen, 377  
 rising of craftsmen in, 382, 383  
 attacked by peasants, 487  
 supports Lollardry, 503  
 Lollard rising in, 516  
 supports Richard of York, 551  
 declares for Edward the Fourth, 554  
 its trade, 107, 787  
 Merchant Adventurers of, 789  
 its extension forbidden, 1071  
 supports Shaftesbury, 1428, 1429  
 Plague of, 1348  
 Fire of, *ib.*  
 sympathy with America, 1699
- Londonderry, Marquis of (*see* Castlereagh), 1832
- Londonderry, siege of, 1500, 1501
- Longchamp, William of, 213
- Longland, William, 493—497
- Lords, House of, Harley's dealings with, 1570  
 scheme for limiting its numbers, 1589, 1590  
 Pitt's dealings with, 1788  
 rejects Catholic emancipation, 1817  
 dealings with Reform Bill, 1835
- Lothian granted to the Scots, 355
- Loughborough, Lord Chancellor, 1791
- Louisburg, capture of, 1652
- Louis Philippe, King of the French, 1835
- Lovat, Lord, 1627
- Lowestoft, battle of, 1347
- Lowlands, the, 351
- Lucknow, relief of, 1845
- Luddite riots, 1815
- Ludlow, General, 1251
- Luneville, Peace of, 1775
- Luther, 630—632  
 More's and Fisher's replies to, 633
- Luttrell, Colonel, 1690
- Lutzen, battle of, 1820
- Lydgate, 572  
 Caxton's edition of, 576
- Lyly, John, 801
- Lyttelton, Lord Keeper, 1139
- "MABINOGION," 306
- Mackay, General, 1496
- Madras, its origin, 1629
- Magellan, Straits of, English explorers in, 1659, 1660
- Mahrattas, 1631, 1711
- Maine, county of, 142, 190, 218, 545
- Major-Generals, Cromwell's, 1248, 1262
- Malaccas won by England, 1769
- Malcolm the First, King of Scots, 355
- Malcolm the Third, King of Scots, 153, 168, 357
- Maldon, battle of, 114
- Malmesbury, William of, 222
- Malplaquet, battle of, 1567
- Malta, dispute for possession of, 1792, 1793  
 retained by England, 1829
- Manchester massacre, 1831
- Manchester, Earl of, 1149, 1153, 1155, 1157, 1160, 1168
- Man, Isle of, conquered by Eadwine, 38
- Manor, the English, 469—472
- Manufactures, English, 433, 781—785, 1728—1732, 1815
- Map, Walter de, 227
- Mar, Earl of, 1575, 1585
- March, Edward, Earl of, 553. *See* Edward the Fourth
- Mare, Peter de la, 450, 451
- Marengo, battle of, 1774
- Margaret, sister of Eadgar the Ætheling, 153, 357
- Margaret, daughter of Henry the Seventh, 716, 755, 764
- Margaret of Anjou, wife of Henry the Sixth, 545, 549, 550, 553—555, 559, 560
- Margaret, the Maid of Norway, 359
- Margaret of York, Duchess of Burgundy, 558, 588
- Maria Theresa of Austria, 1593, 1605, 1621, 1634
- Marignano, battle of, 633
- Marlborough, Earl of, *see* Churchill  
 campaign in Ireland, 1515  
 intrigues against William, 1519, 1543, 1544  
 power over Anne, 1541, 1545  
 character and statesmanship, 1545—1547  
 campaign in Netherlands, 1549—1551  
 victory at Blenheim, 1553—1555



- Marlborough—*continued*.  
     Duke, 1556  
     relations with the Tories, 1556  
     with the Whigs, *ib.*, 1562—1565  
     victory at Ramillies, 1558  
     successes in Flanders, 1565  
     fall, 1570  
 Marlborough, Sarah Jennings, Duchess of, 1541—1543  
 Marlowe, Christopher, 863, 864, 868  
 Marriages, civil, legalized, 1836  
 Marsh or de Marisco, Adam, 286, 288, 290—292  
 Marshal, Richard, Earl, 274  
 Marshal, William, Earl of Pembroke, 232, 245, 246, 266  
 Marston Moor, battle of, 1157  
 Marten, Henry, 1121, 1209  
 Martinico, English conquest of, 1672  
 "Martin Marprelate," 963  
 Mary, daughter of Charles I., 1397  
 Mary, daughter of Henry the Eighth, 639  
     Queen, 716—718  
     her policy, 719  
     marriage, 721  
     revolt against her, 720  
     her persecutions, 723—731  
     war with France, 731  
     death, *ib.*  
     Ireland under her, 917—919  
 Mary, daughter of Henry the Seventh, 716  
 Mary, daughter of James, Duke of York, 1397  
     marriage, 1402  
     Queen, 1491  
     death, 1527  
 Mary Stuart, Queen of Scots, 716  
     claims to English throne, *ib.*, 719, 733, 745, 755  
     proposed as wife for Edward the Sixth, 755  
     marries the Dauphin, *ib.*  
     returns to Scotland, 757, 758  
     character and policy, 758—760  
     marries Darnley, 764  
     her plans, 764—766  
     vengeance on Darnley, 767, 768  
     marries Bothwell, 769  
     imprisonment and abdication, 770  
     escapes to England, 771  
     plots against Elizabeth, 773, 774  
     death, 833—835  
 Maryland colonized, 1049  
 Mary of Modena, wife of James the Second, 1391  
 Maserfeld, battle of, 46  
 Masham, Mrs., 1563  
 Massachusetts, its settlement and charter, 1050, 1051  
     Puritan emigration to, 1052, 1053, 1065  
     defies England, 1697—1699  
 Massena, General, 1774, 1812, 1813  
 Massey, dean of Christ Church, Oxford, 1459  
 Matilda (Edith), wife of Henry the First, 169, 170  
 Matilda of Flanders, wife of William the Conqueror, 143  
 Matilda, the Empress, daughter of Henry the First, 185, 191, 194  
 Maunay, Sir Walter, 479  
 Maurice, Prince, 1149, 1157  
 Mayflower, the, 1050  
 Mayne, Cuthbert, 819  
 Meaux, siege of, by Henry the Fifth, 525  
 Medeshamstead, 60  
 Medicis, Catharine of, 762, 770, 825, 825  
 Medina Sidonia, Duke of, 839, 841  
 Melbourne, Viscount, 1835, 1839  
 Mellitus, Bishop of London, 39  
 Melrose, 50  
 Melville, Andrew, 1088, 1089  
 Meon-wara, 59  
 Merchadé, 215  
 Merchant Adventurers, 789  
 Merchant-gilds, 377  
 Mercia, its origin, 22  
     under Penda, 39  
     its conversion, 47  
     three provinces, 48  
     under Wulfhere, 59, 60  
     struggle with Wessex, 69, 76—83  
     pays tribute to Danes, 88  
     extent after Peace of Wedmore, 92  
     annexed to Wessex, 100  
     earldom of, 123  
 Merlin, prophecies of, 316, 320  
 Methodists, 1612—1618  
 Middlesex, electors of, their struggle with the Commons, 1689, 1690  
 Middlesex, Earl of, 1021; *see* Cranfield  
 Millenary Petition, 973  
 Milton, John, 944—947  
     early poems, 1094—1096  
     "Lycidas," 1105  
     ecclesiastical views, 1093, 1094, 1132  
     later years, 1279, 1280  
     "Paradise Lost," 1281—1284  
 Minden, battle of, 1650  
 Ministry, Sunderland's organization of, 1523—1525  
 Minorca ceded to England, 1672  
     restored to Spain, 1717  
 Mirebeau, siege of, 218  
 Mise of Amiens, 296  
     of Lewes, 300  
 Model, New, of the army, 1166—1170  
     its struggle with Parliament, 1188—1200, 1273—1277  
     disbanded, 1284, 1285  
 Monarchy, the new, its character and causes, 561—569  
     its military power, 589  
     growth under Wolsey, 634, 635, 638  
     height of its power, 691, 692  
     under Elizabeth, 806, 807  
     abolished, 1204  
     effect of the Revolution on, 1504  
     decline of its influence, 1578, 1579  
 Monasteries, dissolution of, 667—671, 706—708  
 Monasticism, its reform under Eadgar, 108  
 Monk, General, 1249, 1273, 1275—1277, 1319  
 Monmouth, Duke of, 1355  
     scheme for his succession, 1417, 1422  
     flight, 1433  
     rebellion and death, 1444, 1445

- Monmouth, Geoffry of, 226  
 Monopolies, 813, 1072  
 Mons, siege of, 1519  
 Montacute, Lord, 687  
 Montagu, Lord, brother of Warwick, 556, 559  
 Montagu, Ralph, 1409  
 Montague, Dr., 1023, 1024  
 Montague, his finance, 1526—1528  
     impeached, 1538  
 Montcalm, Marquis of, 1634, 1652—1655  
 Montfort, Eleanor de, 320  
 Montfort, Simon of, Earl of Leicester, 289, 290  
     Governor of Gascony, 290  
     character, 290—292  
     heads the barons, 293  
     negotiates with France, 294  
     struggle with Henry the Third, 294—298  
     his rule, 298, 300  
     summons Commons to Parliament, 300  
     last struggle and death, 301—304  
 Montfort, Simon of, the younger, 302  
 Montreal, capture of, 1655  
 Montrose, Earl and Marquis of, 1107  
     joins the King's party, 1124  
     victory at Tippermuir, 1160  
     Inverlochy, 1171  
     Kilsyth, 1173  
     defeat at Philiphaugh, *ib.*  
     death, 1213  
 Moodkee, battle of, 1841  
 Moore, Sir John, 1809  
 More, Hannah, 1619  
 More, Sir Thomas, 620—624  
     his "Utopia," 624—629  
     reply to Luther, 633  
     Speaker, 640  
     Chancellor, 657  
     resigns, 662, 677  
     summoned to Lambeth, 678  
     imprisoned, *ib.*  
     death, 681  
 Moreau, General, 1769, 1774, 1775  
 Morkere, Earl of Northumbria, 133, 149, 153  
 Morrison, Robert, botanist, 1304  
 Mortemer, battle of, 141  
 Mortimer, House of, its claims to the Crown, 511, 550  
 Mortimer, Roger, 411  
 Mortimer's Cross, battle of, 553  
 Morton, Bishop of Ely, 584, 585  
     his "fork," 589  
 Morton, Earl of, Regent of Scotland, 1087, 1088  
 Moscow, Napoleon's retreat from, 1819, 1820  
 Mountjoy, Lord, 925  
 Mowbray, Roger, 209  
 Murray, James Stuart, Earl of, 764  
     Regent of Scotland, 770—772  
     murdered, 774, 1087  
 NAMUR taken by Lewis the Fourteenth, 1522  
     by the Allies, 1527  
 Nantes, Edict of, 1449  
     revoked, *ib.*, 1450  
 Napoleon the First, Emperor of the French (*see* Buonaparte), 1799  
     his victories over Austria and Germany, 1801, 1803  
     Continental system, 1803  
     alliance with Russia, 1806  
     mastery of Europe, 1808  
     dealings with Spain, *ib.*  
     with America, 1814  
     with Northern Europe, 1818  
     Russian campaign, 1819, 1820  
     fall, 1821  
     return, 1823  
     last struggle, 1823—1827  
 Napoleon the Third, Emperor, 1844, 1845  
 Naseby, battle of, 1171—1173  
 Nash, pamphleteer, 805, 806  
 Navarino, battle of, 1832  
 Nectansmere, battle of, 65, 352  
 Neerwinden, battle of, 1522  
 Nelson, Admiral, 1773, 1801  
 Netherlands revolt against Philip the Second, 770  
     825, 826  
     English volunteers in, 828, 829  
     claimed by Lewis the Fourteenth, 1369  
     invaded, 1473, 1522  
     Marlborough's campaigns in, 1549, 1551, 1556  
     invaded again, 1623, 1767  
 Neville, Anne, 559  
 Neville, George, Archbishop of York and Chancellor, 557, 559  
 Neville's Cross, battle of, 438  
 Newburgh, William of, 223  
 Newbury, battles of, 1149, 1160  
 Newcastle, Duke of, 1623, 1634, 1637, 1669  
 Newcastle, Earl of, Cavalier general, 1136, 1145, 1153, 1157  
 Newcastle-on-Tyne founded, 165  
 Newton, Isaac, 1304, 1305  
 Newtown Butler, battle of, 1501  
 Niagara, Fort, 1633, 1652  
 Nicholas, Secretary of State, 1320, 1367  
 Nile, battle of, 1773  
 Nimeguen, Peace of, 1403  
 Nonconformists, expulsion of ministers, 1331  
     persecution of, 1336—1339, 1428  
 Non-jurors, 1508, 1509  
 Nootka Sound, 1751  
 Norfolk, Duke of, his quarrel with Henry of Lancaster, 508  
 Norfolk, Duke of, uncle of Anne Boleyn, 647  
     his policy, 657, 705  
     dealings with insurgents, 682—685  
     imprisoned, 709  
 Norfolk, Duke of, under Elizabeth, 774, 775  
 Norfolk, Duke of, under James the Second, 1457, 1486  
 Norfolk, Earl of, *see* Bigod  
 Norfolk, Ralph of Guader. Earl of, 164  
 Norham, Parliament at, 361  
 Normandy, 134, 135  
     its relations with England, 115—117  
     with the Angevins, 190  
     conquered by Philip, 218—220

- Normandy—*continued*.  
 reconquered by Henry the Fifth, 521—524  
 Bedford's rule in, 543  
 lost again, 545  
 Normandy, Richard the Fearless, Duke of, 135  
 Normandy, Robert Curthose, Duke of, 165, 166,  
 168, 182, 183  
 Normandy, Robert, Duke of, 139  
 Normandy, William Longsword, Duke of, 135  
 Normandy, William the Conqueror, Duke of,  
*see* William  
 Normans, their settlement in Gaul, 135  
 conquests, 138  
 North, Lord Keeper, 1446  
 North, Lord, minister of George the Third, 1696,  
 1697, 1705, 1708, 1712, 1713, 1782  
 Northampton, Assize of, 211  
 battle of, 550  
 Council of, 204  
 treaty of, 411  
 Northampton, John of, mayor of London, 503  
 North Briton, the, 1678  
 North-folk, 19  
 Northmen, 83—86. *See* Danes, Ostmen  
 Northumberland, Duke of (*see* Warwick), 716—718  
 Northumberland, Earl of, under Elizabeth, 773,  
 775  
 Northumberland, Percy, Earl of, under Henry  
 the Fourth, 514  
 Northumberland, Robert Mowbray, Earl of, 166  
 Northumbria, kingdom of, 23, 29  
 its extent, 34  
 greatness, 34—38  
 conversion, 38, 39  
 Irish missionaries in, 41—46  
 Cuthbert in, 49—52  
 ecclesiastical strife in, 54—56  
 extent under Ecgrith, 62, 63  
 its fall, 64—65, 76  
 literary greatness, 69—74  
 submits to Ecgrith, 83  
 to the Danes, 87  
 to Eadward, 101  
 to Æthelstan, 102  
 earldom of, 106, 123  
 its northern part granted to the Scots, 355  
 Norwich, rising of John the Litster at, 491  
 Nottingham, peace of, 87  
 Nova Scotia conquered, 1632, 1633  
 ceded by France, 1672  
 Noy invents ship-money, 1099
- OATES, Titus, 1404—1407, 1509  
 O'Brien, Smith, 1843  
 Occleve, 572  
 Ockham, 287, 452  
 O'Connell, Daniel, 1833, 1835, 1836, 1839  
 Odo, Archbishop of Canterbury, 103, 107  
 Odo, Bishop of Bayeux, 150, 164, 166  
 Offa, King of Mercia, 76—82  
 Oglethorpe, General, 1662  
 Ohio Company, 1633  
 Oldcastle, Sir John, 502. *See* Cobham  
 O'Neil, Hugh, 1213  
 O'Neil, Owen Roe, 1204  
 O'Neill, Hugh, 924, 925  
 O'Neill, Shane, 919—921  
 Orange, William the First, Prince of, 826, 832  
 Orange, William the Second, Prince of, 1203  
 Orange, William the Third, Prince of, *see* William  
 Orangemen, 1784  
 Ordainers, the Lords, 398  
 Ordeal, 211  
 Orders in Council, 1805, 1807, 1813, 1817, 1818  
 Ordinance, Self-denying, 1168  
 for Suppression of Blasphemies, 1197  
 Orleans, Duke of, Regent of France, 1586  
 Orleans, Henrietta, Duchess of, 1375  
 Orleans, siege of, 537—541  
 Ormond, Earl of, general in Ireland, 1150  
 invites Charles the Second thither, 1204  
 besieges Dublin, 1209  
 Duke and Lord Steward, 1319  
 Governor in Ireland, 1360  
 retires, 1367  
 returns to the Council, 1391  
 Ormond, second Duke of, 1575, 1580, 1586, 1538  
 Orthes, battle of, 1821  
 Osbern's lives of English saints, 222  
 Osney Abbey, 252  
 Ostmen, 103  
 Oswald, Bishop of Worcester, 108  
 Oswald, King of Northumbria, 43—46  
 Oswiu, King of Northumbria, 47, 55  
 Otford, battle of, 76  
 Otter's voyage, 94  
 Otto of Saxony, Emperor, 215, 235, 236  
 Oudenarde, battle of, 1565  
 Oudh, annexation of, 1845  
 Overbury, Sir Thomas, 1001  
 Oxford besieged by Stephen, 194, 195  
 town, 248—252  
 Vacarius at, 248  
 friars in, 285, 286  
 Provisions of, 293, 294  
 Charles the First at, 1144, 1145  
 siege of, 1155  
 Parliament at, 1426  
 University, 252—255, 257—260  
 drives out a Papal Legate, 276  
 Lollards at, 465, 466  
 decline in fifteenth century, 573  
 Duke Humphry gives his library to, 582  
 the New Learning at, 596, 599—601, 608,  
 609  
 Cardinal College at, 609, 637  
 Protestants at, 697  
 religious changes in, 816  
 decrees passive obedience, 976  
 struggle with James the Second, 1459—1461  
 Jacobites in, 1586  
 Oxford, Earl of, under Henry the Seventh, 591  
 Oxford, Earl of, son-in-law of Cecil, 820  
 Oxford, Harley, Earl of (*see* Harley), 1573, 1580
- PACKENHAM, General, 1822  
 Palatine ravaged by Lewis the Fourteenth, 1492  
 Pale, the English, in Ireland, 899, 901



- Palmerston, Viscount, 1838, 1844—1846  
 Pampeluna, siege of, 1820  
 Pandulf, Cardinal, 236, 266, 268  
 Papacy, its claims on the English Church, 269, 454, 455  
   its jurisdiction rejected, 664—666  
   Mary's submission to, 722  
   rejected again, 747  
 Paris, English students at, 252, 256  
   Henry the Sixth crowned at, 543  
   declares for Charles the Seventh, 544  
   surrenders to the allies, 1821, 1827  
   Peace of, 1672, 1844  
 Paris, Matthew, 277, 278  
 Parker, Matthew, Archbishop of Canterbury, 748, 750, 800  
 Parliament, Commons summoned to, 300  
   growth in thirteenth century, 329—344  
   changes in its composition, 444, 445  
   two Houses, 446  
   superseded by permanent committee, 507  
   deposes Richard the Second and elects Henry the Fourth, 510—512  
   position under House of Lancaster, 513, 514  
   importance during Wars of Roses, 562, 569, 570  
   decline under Edward the Fourth, 570  
   revival under Richard the Third, 585  
   Henry the Seventh's dealings with, 589  
   struggle with Wolsey, 640, 641  
   revival after his fall, 657  
   undertakes Church reform, 659  
   revival under Cromwell, 692  
   opposes Mary's Church policy, 719, 723  
   position under Elizabeth, 809—813  
   relations with the Crown, 981  
   suspension under Charles the First, 1067  
   struggle with Charles the Second, 1381, 1393—1397  
   Danby's dealings with, 1397—1400  
   Roman Catholics excluded from, 1407  
   James the Second's attempt to "regulate," 1458  
   position after the Revolution, 1505—1507  
   composition after union with Scotland, 1559  
   after union with Ireland, 1786  
   relations with the Press, 1677—1679, 1692, 1693  
   Admonition to, 957  
   Acts of, *see* Statutes  
   reform of, 1690—1692, 1722, 1736, 1817, 1835, 1847  
   Barebones' Parliament, 1234  
   the Cavalier, 1327—1331, 1409  
   Club, 532  
   Convention, 1320—1324  
   Good, 449—451  
   Long, its proceedings in 1640, 1117—1119  
   in 1641, 1119—1124  
   Grand Remonstrance, 1129  
   schemes of Church Reform, 1129—1132  
   five members, 1133—1136  
   prepares for war, 1138, 1139  
   dealings with religion, 1181—1183, 1188, 1197  
   with the army, 1188—1194  
   Oxford, 1426, 1427  
   Rump, 1200, 1208, 1229—1231  
 Parliament—*continued.*  
   Short, 1109  
   of 1604, 983—986; of 1606, 987; of 1610, 990; of 1614, 992—995; of 1621, 1007—1015; of 1624, 1021; of 1625, 1023; of 1628, 1033—1042; of 1654, 1242—1245; of 1655, 1261—1267; of 1658, 1269, 1270; of 1659, 1271—1273; of 1679, 1411, 1416; of 1680, 1421—1426; of 1681, 1426, 1427; of 1686, 1443; of 1690, 1512; of 1696, 1527; of 1698, 1533; of 1701, 1537; of 1702, 1539; of 1784, 1725, 1726; of 1832, 1833, and 1835, 1835; of 1859, 1846; of 1868, 1847; of 1874, 1850  
   Irish, under Wentworth, 1084  
   under James the Second, 1501  
   under the Georges, 1777—1779  
   its independence restored, 1714, 1738, 1780  
   rejects free trade, 1739, 1783  
   action as to Regency, 1786  
   Scottish, the "Drunken," 1359  
 Parma, Duke of, 832, 835, 837  
 Parr, Catharine, 709  
 Parry's plot, 833  
 Parsons, Jesuit, 819, 820  
 Partition, Treaties of, 1532—1534  
 Paston Letters, 574  
 Paterson, William, financier, 1526  
 "Patriots," 1599  
 Paul, Czar of Russia, 1792, 1793  
 Paulinus, 38, 41  
 Pavia, battle of, 644  
 Peasant revolt, 485—492  
 Peel, Sir Robert, 1832, 1833, 1835, 1839, 1842  
 "Peep-o'-Day Boys," 1784  
 Peerage Bill, 1589, 1590  
 Pelham, Henry, 1623, 1634  
 Pembroke, Earls of, *see* Marshal, Striguil  
 Pembroke, settlement of, 312  
 Penda, King of Mercia, 39, 46, 47  
 Pengwyrn becomes Shrewsbury, 76  
 Peninsular war, 1808—1813, 1818, 1819  
 Penn, William, 1428, 1661  
 Pennsylvania founded, 1428, 1661  
 Penry, author of Marprelate tracts, 954  
 Perceval, Spencer, 1811, 1817  
 Percy, *see* Hotspur, Northumberland  
 Perrers, Alice, 451  
 Perth, Convocation of, 368  
 Peterborough, Earl of, 1557, 1562, 1563  
 Peterborough founded, 60  
   burnt by Danes, 87  
   Benedict of, 223  
 Peters, Hugh, 1178  
 Petition of Grievances, 992  
   Millenary, 973  
   of Right, 1035, 1037  
 "Petitioners" and "Abhorers," 1423  
 Petitions changed into Statutes, 447  
 Petre, Father, 1457  
 Petty, Sir William, 1298  
 Pevensy, 18  
   William lands at, 146  
 Phelps, Sir Robert, 1024, 1025  
 Philadelphia, Congress at, 1697

- Philip Augustus, King of France, 212  
 war with Richard the First, 213—218  
 conquers Normandy, &c., 218—220  
 charged to depose John, 234  
 victory at Bouvines, 237
- Philip, Duke of Anjou, King of Spain, 1535,  
 1536, 1586
- Philip of Valois, King of France, his war with  
 Edward the Third, 431—438
- Philip (the Second of Spain) son of Charles the  
 Fifth, marries Mary Tudor, 719, 721  
 supports Elizabeth, 755  
 turns to Mary Stuart, 764  
 position and character, 822—825  
 conquers Portugal, 831  
 defeat of his Armada, 839—841  
 designs on France, 731, 890, 891
- Philiphaugh, battle of, 1173
- Philippines, English conquest of, 1672
- Pict-land, 352, 353
- Picts attack Britain, 9, 10  
 defeated, 14  
 subdued by Ecgrith, 62, 352  
 rise against him, 64, 65, 352, 353
- Piers the Ploughman, 493—498
- Pilgrimage of Grace, 682—685
- Pilgrim Fathers, 1050
- Pillnitz, Conference of, 1756
- Pinkie Cleugh, battle of, 755
- Pitt, William, 1599  
 enters office, 1624  
 character, 1637—1647  
 supports Frederick the Second, 1649  
 policy towards America, 1651, 1652  
 opposed by the Whigs, 1669  
 fall, 1671  
 recalled, 1677, 1682  
 denounces the Stamp Act, 1682, 1683  
 returns to office, 1687. *See* Chatham
- Pitt, William, the younger, 1720, 1721  
 his plan of reform, 1722  
 Chancellor of the Exchequer, *ib.*  
 first minister, 1725  
 his character, 1726, 1727  
 policy, 1734, 1735  
 bill for Parliamentary reform, 1736—1737  
 his finance, 1737, 1738  
 treaty of commerce with France, 1739  
 dealings with Ireland, *ib.*, 1782, 1783, 1785,  
 1786, 1790, 1791  
 with foreign politics, 1748—1751, 1753, 1755,  
 1756, 1759—1761  
 supports Libel Act, 1753  
 gives Constitution to Canada, *ib.*  
 financial difficulties, 1769  
 dealings with the peerage, 1788  
 resigns, 1791  
 returns to office, 1799  
 death, 1802
- Pittsburg, 1652
- Place Bill, 1507
- Plassey, battle of, 1648
- Plattsburg, English attack on, 1822
- Plauen, battle of, 1650
- Pleas, Court of Common, 212
- Poitiers, battle of, 442, 443
- Poland, disputed election in, 1599  
 partition of, 1748
- Pole, Reginald, 685, 687, 722
- Pollock, General, 1840
- Poll-tax, 485
- "Popish Plot," 1404—1408
- Portland, Duke of, 1763, 1806, 1811
- Port Mahon taken by the French, 1635
- Porto Bello captured by Vernon, 1603
- Portreeves of London, 171, 175
- Portsmouth, Louise de Quérouaille, Duchess of,  
 1354, 1423, 1426, 1441
- Portugal conquered by Spain, 831  
 Wellington's campaigns in, 1811—1813
- Poynings, Sir Edward, 904
- Pragmatic Sanction, 1593
- Prague, battles of, 1007, 1635
- Prayer, Book of Common, 712, 714  
 Scottish, 1091, 1101
- Presbyterianism in England, 952, 953, 957, 962,  
 966, 1131, 1132  
 in Ireland, 1777  
 in Scotland, 1089, 1494, 1498
- Press, regulated by Star-Chamber, 963  
 censorship of, abolished, 1434  
 proposal to revive, 1528  
 growth of its influence, 1677, 1678  
 Grenville's struggle with, 1678, 1679  
 influence on Parliament, 1692  
 beginnings of journalism, 1693
- Preston, battle of, 1198
- Preston Pans, battle of, 1625
- Pride's Purge, 1200
- Printing, invention of, 575
- Protectorate, the, 1241, 1242
- Protestants, their triumph under T. Cromwell,  
 700—705  
 under Hertford, 711, 712  
 persecuted under Mary, 720—727, 729—731  
 growth under Elizabeth, 814—817  
 fortunes on the Continent, 967—971  
 attitude at Elizabeth's death, 971  
 French, *see* Huguenots
- Prussia rises against Napoleon, 1820
- Pulteney, head of the "Patriots," 1599
- Punjaub, annexation of, 1844
- Puritanism, its rise, 937  
 temper, 938—944, 979  
 growth, 962  
 Laud's struggle with, 1055—1060  
 its attitude towards the stage, 1097  
 fall, 1278, 1285  
 work, 1285  
 ideal, 1288  
 revolt against, 1290—1293  
 Puritan clergy expelled, 986  
 emigration to America, 1065
- Pym, John, 1035, 1037, 1111—1115  
 his Grand Remonstrance, 1129  
 plans for Church reform, 1130, 1131  
 charged with treason, 1133  
 proposes terms with Scotland, 1149  
 death, 1153  
 his corpse outraged, 1327

- QUAKERS, persecution of, 1338  
released, 1379
- Quarles, 1094
- Quatre Bras, battle of, 1824
- Quebec, capture of, 1652—1655
- Quiberon, battle of, 1651
- "Quo Warranto," 390
- RADICALS**, 1831
- Rædwald, King of East-Anglia, 34, 35, 39
- Rahere founds S. Bartholomew's, Smithfield, 181
- Railways, 1837
- Raikes, founder of Sunday Schools, 1619
- Raleigh, his "History of the World," 801  
friendship with Spenser, 847, 848  
discovers Virginia, 1046  
last expedition and death, 1004, 1005
- Ramillies, battle of, 1558
- Ray, John, zoologist, 1304
- Reform, Economical, 1722  
Parliamentary, *see* Parliament
- Reformation, the, its beginning, 630  
antagonism to the Renaissance, 632
- Regicides, their fate, 1320, 1321
- Reginald, sub-prior of Canterbury, elected Arch-  
bishop, 232
- Remonstrance, the Grand, 1129
- Renaissance, *see* Learning, New
- Restoration, its social effects, 1290—1292
- Revolution, the English, 1487—1491  
results, 1504—1509  
the French, 1747, 1749, 1751, 1756—1761  
of 1830, 1835  
of 1848, 1843
- Rhys ap Tewdor, prince of South Wales, 312
- Rich, Edmund, *see* Edmund
- Richard the First, son of Henry the Second, his  
rebellions, 209, 212  
Crusade, 213  
wars with France and alliance with Germany,  
215  
builds Château-Gaillard, 215, 216  
releases Scotland from homage, 359  
death, 218
- Richard the Second, son of the Black Prince,  
acknowledged heir to the Crown, 451  
King, 485  
dealings with Peasant Revolt, 487—491  
takes government in his own hands, 506  
truce with France, *ib.*  
marriage, *ib.*  
character, *ib.*  
rule, 507  
banishes Henry of Lancaster, 508  
expeditions to Ireland, 506, 508, 904  
prisoner, 510  
deposed, *ib.*
- Richard the Third, patron of Caxton, 582  
King, 584—587
- Richmond, Edmund Tudor, Earl of, 585
- Richmond, Henry Tudor, Earl of, 585  
victory at Bosworth, 587. *See* Henry the  
Seventh
- Richmond, Margaret Beaufort, Countess of, 585
- Ridley, Bishop of London, 719, 727
- Right, Claim of, 1494  
Petition of, 1035—1037
- Rights, Bill of, 1504  
Declaration of, 1489—1491
- Rivers, Earl, father of Elizabeth Woodville, 558
- Rivers, Earl, brother of Elizabeth Woodville, his  
"Sayings of the Philosophers," 581, 582  
executed, 584
- Rizzio, 764, 765
- Robinson, John, Brownist minister, 963, 1049
- Rochelle, Buckingham's expedition to, 1033  
its fall, 1039
- Roches, Peter des, 266, 275
- Rochester, Carr, Viscount, 1001
- Rochester, Laurence Hyde, Earl of, 1435, 1456,  
1533
- Rochester, siege of, by William the Second, 166
- Rochester, Wilmot, Earl of, 1290
- Rochford, Lord, 647
- Rockingham, Marquis of, 1682, 1686, 1714, 1722
- Rodney, Admiral, 1715
- Roger, Bishop of Salisbury and Justiciar, 194
- Roger, son of William Fitz-Osbern, 164
- Rohese, wife of Gilbert Beket, 196
- Rome, Cnut at, 124  
Church of, its revival in sixteenth century,  
967—971
- Roses, Wars of the, their beginning, 549  
results, 561—564
- Ross, General, 1822
- Rosbach, battle of, 1649
- Roucoux, battle of, 1628
- Rouen, siege of, by Henry the Fifth, 522—524  
Henry the Sixth at, 543  
submits to Charles the Seventh, 545
- "Roundheads," 1132
- Roundway Down, battle of, 1147
- Royal Society, the, 1297—1303
- Runnymede, 240
- Rupert, Prince, at Edgehill, 1143  
at Reading and Brentford, 1145  
at Chalgrove, 1147  
enters York, 1157  
defeated at Marston Moor, *ib.*  
at Naseby, 1171, 1173  
commands a fleet for Charles the Second,  
1203, 1212, 1213, 1347  
returns to the Council, 1391  
his "drops," 1301
- Russell, Admiral, 1519, 1521  
enters the Ministry, 1526  
resigns, 1533  
impeached, 1538
- Russell, Lord John, 1843, 1844  
Earl, 1847
- Russell, William, Lord, leader of Country party,  
1381  
enters the Council, 1411  
resigns, 1423  
beheaded, 1432
- Russia, its policy in eighteenth century, 1634,  
1748, 1773, 1774, 1792, 1793, 1801, 1806  
quarrel with Napoleon, 1818—1820
- Russian Company, 789



- Rutland, Earl of, 553  
 Ruyter, Admiral De, 1227, 1259, 1347, 1379  
 Rye House Plot, 1432  
 Ryswick, Peace of, 1529
- SACHEVERELL, Dr., 1567, 1568  
 St. Albans, its historical school, 277, 278  
   revolt of its burghers, 488, 491  
   battles at, 549, 553  
 St. Edmundsbury, its origin, 88  
   history, 175—178  
   confirmation of its privileges, 490  
 St. John, Henry, 1556, 1563. *See* Bolingbroke  
 St. Paul's School, 605, 606  
 St. Ruth, General, 1516  
 St. Vincent, Cape, battles of, 1715, 1771  
 Salamanca, battle of, 1819  
 Salisbury, Earl of, adherent of Richard the Second, 509, 516  
 Salisbury, Earl of, partisan of York, 549, 550  
   beheaded, 553  
 Salisbury, Margaret, Countess of, 685, 687  
 Salisbury, Robert Cecil, Earl of, 990, 1000, 1002  
 Sancroft, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1461, 1489, 1509  
 Sandwich, Montagu, Earl of, 1319  
 San Sebastian, siege of, 1820  
 Saratoga, Burgoyne's surrender at, 1704  
 Sarisfield, General, 1515, 1516  
 Sautre, William, 514  
 Savoy, Boniface of, Archbishop of Canterbury, 272  
 Savoy, Peter of, 272  
 Savoy, Prince Eugene of, 1549, 1553, 1565  
 Savoy, the, 272  
   sacked, 488  
   conference at, 1328  
 Saxe, Marshal, 1624, 1627  
 Saxons, their home-land, 2  
   East, their settlements, 19, 20  
   West, conquer Southern Britain, *ib.*  
   defeated at Faddiley, 29  
   conquer Somerset, 62, 66, 67  
   conquer Dyvnaint, 78  
   South, kingdom of, 18  
 "Saxony," 351, 352  
 Say and Sele, Lord, 1101, 1320  
 Say, Lord, 547, 548  
 Scholasticism, 287, 288  
 Schomberg, Duke of, 1512, 1513  
 Schools founded under Henry the Eighth, 608  
   under Edward the Sixth, 715  
   "Circulating," 1610  
   National, 1836  
   Sunday, 1619  
 Science, English, its beginnings, 1295—1304  
 Scinde, annexation of, 1840  
 Scotland, condition in thirteenth century, 351  
   kingdom of, its origin, 353  
   relations with England, 353—359  
   first conquest of, 361—364  
   second, 365—368  
   revolt under Bruce, 404—410  
   its independence recognized, 411
- Scotland—*continued.*  
   alliance with France, 505  
   history after Bruce, 751—755  
   Elizabeth's dealings with, 755, 756  
   union with England proposed, 984  
   relations with the Stuarts, 1088—1091  
   revolts against Charles the First, 1106—1110  
   reaction in, 1196  
   condition under Cromwell, 1249  
   under Charles the Second, 1359  
   acknowledges William and Mary, 1494  
   first union with England, 1222, 1249  
   dissolved, 1359  
   second union, 1561  
   Jacobite risings in, 1585, 1586, 1624—1627  
 Scots attack Britain, 10  
   their origin, 353  
   submit to Eadward the Elder, 101, 355  
   league with the Percies, 514  
   in service of France, 534  
 Scrope, Archbishop of York, 515  
 Scutage, 208, 242  
 Sea-Dogs, the, 829  
 Sebastopol, siege of, 1844  
 Securities Bill, 1394, 1416, 1425  
 Sedgemoor, battle of, 1446, 1447  
 Sedley, Sir Charles, 1290  
 Seminary Priests, 818  
 Seneff, battle of, 1475  
 Separatists, 962  
 Seven Years' War, its beginning, 1634  
   its effects, 1659  
   end, 1672  
 Seville, treaty of, 1594  
 Seymour, Jane, 689  
 Shaftesbury, Earl of (*see* Ashley, Cooper), 1379  
   character and career, 1383—1385  
   policy, 1385—1391  
   dismissed, 1393  
   new policy, 1393—1395  
   demands a dissolution, 1399  
   imprisoned, *ib.*  
   dealings with Popish Plot, 1406—1408, 1419—1422, 1425  
   President of Council, 1411  
   plans for Monmouth's succession, 1417  
   dismissed, 1421  
   recalls Monmouth, 1422  
   fall and death, 1428—1430  
 Shakspeare, 864—878  
 Shaxton, Bishop of Salisbury, 700  
 Shelburne, Lord, 1677, 1689, 1720  
 Sherborne, *see* of, 67  
 Sheriff, his function in the shire-court, 332  
 Sheriffmuir, battle of, 1585  
 Ship-money, 1099, 1100  
   declared illegal, 1119  
 Shire, Knights of the, 300, 333—335  
 Shire-court, 332, 333  
 Shrewsbury (Scrobsbyrg), 76  
   battle of, 515  
 Shrewsbury, Duke of, 1575, 1576  
 Shrewsbury, Earl of, Secretary of State, 1511  
   1527  
 Shrewsbury, Talbot, Earl of, 544, 545

Sidmouth, Lord, 1803  
 Sidney, Algernon, 1431—1433  
 Sidney, Sir Henry, 921  
 Sidney, Sir Philip, 802—805, 832, 845, 847  
 Sigeberht, king of East Anglia, 40  
 Sikhs, 1631, 1840, 1844  
 Simnel, Lambert, 587  
 Siward, Earl of Northumbria, 130  
 Skeffington, Deputy in Ireland, 906  
 Slanning, Sir Nicholas, 1146  
 Slavery in early England, 27, 28  
   its decline, 110  
   disappearance, 470  
   colonial, abolished, 1836  
 Slave-trade in early England, 110, 165, 895  
   African, 789  
   movement for its abolition, 1741, 1742  
   abolished, 1806  
 Sleswick, its people in the fifth century, 1  
 Sluys, battle of, 434  
 Smerwick, massacre at, 923  
 Smith, Adam, 1733  
 Smith, John, settles in Virginia, 1046—1048  
 Smith, Sir Sidney, 1774  
 Smithfield, St. Bartholomew's Priory at, 181  
 Snowdon, Lords of, 313  
 Sobraon, battle of, 1841  
 Solway Moss, battle of, 755  
 Somers, John, 1489, 1526  
   Lord Keeper, 1527  
   dismissed, 1533  
   impeached, 1538  
   effects union with Scotland, 1559  
   President of Council, 1565  
 Somerset, Beaufort, Duke of, 548, 549  
 Somerset, Carr, Viscount Rochester and Earl of, 1001  
 Somerset, Duke of, and James the Second, 1457  
 Somerset conquered by West Saxons, 62, 66, 67  
 Somerset, Margaret, Duchess of, patron of Caxton 581  
 Somerset, Protector, *see* Hertford  
   invades Scotland, 755  
 Somerton taken by Æthelbald of Mercia, 69  
 Somerville's plot, 832  
 Sophia, Electress of Hanover, 1539  
 Soult, Marshal, 1811, 1819, 1821  
 Southampton, Earl of, friend of Shakspeare, 871, 873  
 Southampton, Earl of, Lord Treasurer, 1319, 1367  
 South-folk, 19  
 South Sea Bubble, 1590—1592  
 Southumbrians, 22  
 Spain, growth of its power, 611  
   alliance with Henry the Seventh, *ib.*  
   under Philip the Second, 822—824  
   relations with James the First, 1002—1005, 1011, 1012, 1017—1023  
   its decline, 1471  
   disputed succession in, 1532—1537  
   war in, 1562  
   struggle for Sardinia and Sicily, 1587  
   Family Compact with France, 1601  
   war with England, 1603, 1672  
   league with France and America, 1707

Spain—*continued.*  
   mastered by Napoleon, 1808  
   rises, 1809, 1810  
   Wellington's campaign in; 1818—1820  
 Speed, chronicler, 801  
 Spencer, Earl, 1763  
 Spenser, Edmund, 844—857  
   influence on Milton, 1094  
 Sports, Book of, 1059  
 Spurs, battle of the, 612  
 Stafford, Lord, 1425  
 Stair, Dalrymple, Master of, 1496—1498  
 Stamford Bridge, battle of, 146  
 Standard, battle of the, 193  
 Stanhope, Lord, Secretary of State, 1584  
   his Ministry, 1589  
   death, 1591  
 Star Chamber, Court of, established, 591  
   regulates the Press, 963  
   employment by Charles the First, 1071—1073  
   abolished, 1124  
 Stationers, Company of, 963  
 Statutes, change in mode of passing them, 570  
   of Apparel, 546  
   Appeals, 664  
   Ballot, 1849  
   Civil Marriage, 1836  
   Church Disestablishment (Ireland), 1847, 1848  
   Conventicle, 1336  
   Corn, 1831  
   repealed, 1843  
   Corporation, 1328  
   Five Mile, 1336, 1367  
   Grace, 1512  
   Government, 1265  
   Habeas Corpus, 1435  
   suspended, 1585  
   Heresy, 514  
   repealed, 714  
   re-enacted, 723  
   India, 1740  
   Indemnity and Oblivion, 1320  
   Kilkenny, 903  
   Labourers, 480—482  
   Land (Ireland), 1847  
   Libel, 1753  
   Liveries, 591  
   Merchants, 327  
   Mortmain, 326  
   Municipal Corporations, 1836  
   Mutiny, 1505  
   Navigation, 1223, 1680  
   Occasional Conformity, 1555  
   repealed, 1586  
   Poor, 779, 780, 1836  
   Poynings', 904  
   repealed, 1714  
   Præmunire, 454  
   used by Henry the Eighth against Wolsey, 650  
   against the clergy, 662  
   Provisors, 454  
   "Quia Emptores," 327, 328  
   Reform, 1835, 1847  
   Registration, 1836  
   Regulating, 1709

Statutes—*continued*.

- Rights, 1504
- Schism, 1572
- repealed, 1586
- Security, 1559
- Septennial, 1586
- Settlement, 1539
- Six Articles, 703
- repealed, 711
- Stamp, 1680—1681
- resisted in America, 1682
- repealed, 1686
- Succession, 677
- Supremacy, 666
- Test, 762, 1381
- set aside, 1453
- Tithe Commutation, 1836
- Triennial, 1119, 1505, 1527
- Toleration, 1507
- Uniformity, 748, 1329
- Union with Ireland, 1786
- with Scotland, 1561
- of Wales, 321
- of Winchester, 327
- Steam-engine, 1731
- Steinkirk, battle of, 1522
- Stephen, King, 192—195, 197
- Stigand, Archbishop of Canterbury, 133, 158
- Stillingfleet, 1367, 1456
- Stirling, battle of, 366
- Stowe, chronicler, 801
- Strafford, Earl of (*see* Wentworth), 1109
  - impeached, 1117
  - trial, 1121
  - death, 1123
- Strathclyde, 34, 35
  - submits to Oswald, 44
  - to Eadberht, 74
  - to Eadward, 101
  - granted to Malcolm, 355
- Stratton Hill, battle of, 1146
- Streonesheal, *see* Whitby
- Striguil, Richard of Clare, Earl of Pembroke and, 898
- Strode, one of the Five Members, 1133
- Strongbow, 898
- Stuart, Charles Edward, 1624—1627
- Stuart, James Francis, son of James the Second, 1481, 1584, 1585
- Stukely, 922
- Sudbury, Archbishop, 487, 488
- Suffolk, Earl of, minister of Henry the Sixth, 544, 545
- Suffolk, Grey, Duke of (Lord Dorset), 716, 720
- Suffolk, Michael de la Pole, Earl of, 505
- Sunderland, Charles, Earl of, 1556, 1562, 1569, 1589
- Sunderland, Robert, Earl of, 1412, 1418, 1424, 1426, 1437, 1485
  - his ministerial system, 1523—1525
- Supplies, grant of, made annual, 1505
- Surajah Dowlah, 1647, 1648
- Surrey, Henry Howard, Earl of, 709
- Surrey, John de Warrenne, Earl of, 364
- Sussex, Earl of, Deputy in Ireland, 918, 919
- Sussex submits to Wulfhere, 59
  - to Ceadwalla, 67
  - to Offa, 76
- Swein Estrithson, King of Denmark, 152
- Swein Forkbeard, King of Denmark, 115—117, 122
- Swein, son of Godwine, 130, 131
- Swithun, bishop of Winchester, 86
- Sydenham, medical writer, 1304
- "TABLES," the, 1103
- Taillebourg, battle of, 27
- Talavera, battle of, 1811
- Taunton founded, 67
- Taxation regulated by Great Charter, 242
  - how levied, 331, 335, 336, 340
  - under Elizabeth, 808
  - arbitrary, *see* Benevolence, Impositions, Loan
  - regulated by Long Parliament, 1119
  - Parliament regains control over, 1505
  - reduced by Walpole, 1594—1596
  - during French war, 1769
  - income-tax, 1839
  - of America, 1664, 1680, 1681, 1695
  - Papal, on the English clergy, 276, 454, 455
- Taylor, Jeremy, 1308—1310
- Taylor, Rowland, 723—725
- Temple, Earl, 1682, 1687
- Temple, Sir William, 1370
  - Secretary of State, 1412
  - his Council, 1414, 1415
  - agrees to the Exclusion, 1424
- Tenchebray, battle of, 183
- Testament, New, Erasmus's edition of, 618
- Tewkesbury, battle of, 560
- Thanet, English land in, 12, 13
  - Augustine lands in, 31
- Theatre, first erected in London, 860
- Thegn, the, 112
- Theobald, Archbishop of Canterbury, 196
  - his court, 248
- Theodore, Archbishop of Canterbury, 57—59
  - his school at Canterbury, 71
- Thirty Years' War, 1005
- Thistlewood, Arthur, 1831
- "Thorough," Wentworth's, 1080—1084
- Thurstan, Archbishop of York, 193
- Ticonderoga, Fort, 1634, 1652
- Tillotson, theologian, 1310, 1367, 1456
  - Archbishop of Canterbury, 1509
- Tilsit, Peace of, 1806
- Tippermuir, battle of, 1160
- Tippoo Sahib, 1773
- Tithes, 58
  - commutation of, 1836
- Tone, Wolf, 1783
- Torgau, battle of, 1669
- "Tories," their origin, 1423
  - attitude towards Grand Alliance, 1526
  - relations with Marlborough, 1555, 1556
  - withdraw from politics, 1580, 1592
  - return, 1599, 1668
  - govern during French war, 1806. *See* Conservatives



- Torres Vedras, Wellington's defence of, 1812  
 Torrington, Herbert, Earl of, 1511, 1517  
 Tortulf the Forester, 186  
 Tostig, son of Godwine, 133, 146  
 Toulon, revolt of, 1767  
 Toulouse, siege of, 199  
     battle of, 1821  
 Tourville, Admiral, 1517, 1521  
 Tower of London founded, 150  
 Towns, early English, 170—178  
     their privileges confirmed by Great Charter, 243  
     share in the Barons' War, 296  
     taxation of, 335, 336, 340  
     struggle for freedom, 369—372  
     social life, 372—381  
     strife of classes in, 381—385  
     charters cancelled by Charles the Second, 1437  
     self-government restored, 1836. *See* Boroughs  
 Townshend, Charles, 1677  
 Townshend, Viscount, 1584, 1589, 1590, 1592, 1599  
 Township, the old English, 4, 6  
 Towton, battle of, 554  
 Trade, English, under Eadgar, 107  
     under Cnut, 126, 127  
     under Edward the First, 387  
     Edward the Third, 433  
     Elizabeth, 782—789  
     with the colonies, 1594, 1661, 1680  
     with Spanish America, 1601  
     in coal and iron, 1729—1731  
     Buonaparte's efforts to check, 1792, 1803—1805, 1808  
     Huskisson's and Canning's policy towards, 1832  
     freedom of, 1842, 1843  
     Board of, 1527  
     Irish, 1739, 1779, 1782. *See* Slave-trade  
 Trafalgar, battle of, 1801  
 Trent, Council of, 708, 969  
 Tresham, Francis, 986  
 Trevanion, Sir John, 1146  
 Trichinopoly relieved by Clive, 1631  
 Tromp, Admiral, 1225, 1228, 1259  
 Troyes, Treaty of, 525  
 Trumwine, Bishop of Abercorn, 63, 66  
 Tudor, House of, its claim to the Crown, 585.  
     *See* Richmond  
 Turgot, annalist of Durham, 222  
 Twysden, 800  
 Tyler, Wat, 486, 488—490  
 Tyndale, William, 695, 696  
 Tyrconnell, Earl of, 1455, 1498—1500
- UDALL, author of Marprelate tracts, 954  
 Ulm, capitulation of, 1801  
 Ulster, Plantation of, 927  
 Universities, their rise, 247  
     relation to feudalism, 257—260  
     to the Church, 260, 261  
     influence of New Learning on, 608, 609  
     consulted on Henry the Eighth's divorce, 659
- Universities—*continued*.  
     struggle with James the Second, 1459—1461  
     religious tests abolished in, 1848  
 Uriconium, 20  
 Usher, Archbishop, 1081, 1130  
 Utrecht, Treaty of, 1570  
 Uxbridge, Treaty of, 1170
- VACARIUS, 248  
 Val-ès-Dunes, battle of, 140  
 Valley Forge, battle of, 1704  
 Vane, Sir Harry, the elder, 1242  
 Vane, Sir Harry, the younger, supports Independents, 1131, 1185  
     negotiates at Edinburgh, 1149  
     organizes navy, 1212  
     his policy, 1222, 1223  
     quarrel with Cromwell, 1229—1231  
     offered seat in Council, 1234  
     share in union with Scotland, 1249  
     excluded from pardon, 1321  
     executed, 1328  
 Varangians, 151  
 Varaville, battle of, 142  
 Vaudois, massacre of, 1267  
 Verden, dispute about, 1588  
 Vere, Sir Horace, 1007  
 Verneuil, battle of, 535  
 Verney, Sir Edmund, 1128  
 Vernon, Admiral, 1603, 1605  
 Vervins, Treaty of, 891  
 Vespucci, Amerigo, his travels, 594, 624  
 Victoria, Queen, 1838  
 Villes, 470, 471  
     become copy-holders, 472  
     revolt, 480—491  
     excluded from school and college, 501  
     decline, 499  
 Vimiera, battle of, 1809  
 Vinegar Hill, battle of, 1773, 1785  
 Virginia discovered, 1046  
     settled, *ib.*, 1048  
 Vitoria, battle of, 1820  
 Volunteers, English, 1846  
     Irish, 1714, 1781
- WACE, 226  
 Wagram, battle of, 1811  
 Wakefield, battle of, 553  
 Walcheren expedition, 1811  
 Walcourt, battle of, 1494  
 Wales, William the First's dealings with, 165  
     its literature, 306—309  
     relations with England, 309—312  
     revival in twelfth century, 313—318  
     conquest of, 320—322  
     statute of, 321  
     revolt in, 515, 516  
 Wallace, William, 365—368  
 Waller, Sir William, 1146, 1168  
 Wallingford, Treaty of, 197  
 Wallington, Nehemiah, 943  
 Wallis, Captain, 1660

- Wallis, Dr., 1297, 1298  
 Walpole, Sir Robert, 1582—1584  
   his offices in Townshend ministry, 1584  
   resigns, 1589  
   opposes Peerage Bill, 1590  
   returns to office, *ib.*  
   his peace policy, 1592, 1593  
   finance, 1594—1597  
   greed of power, 1599  
   attitude in Polish war, *ib.*  
   towards Spain, 1603  
   fall, 1605  
 Walter, Hubert, *see* Hubert  
 Walters, Lucy, 1355  
 Walworth, William, 490  
 Wanborough, battle of, 68  
 Wandewash, battle of, 1707  
 Warbeck, Perkin, 587, 588  
 Ward, Dr., mathematician, 1298  
 Warham, Archbishop of Canterbury, friend of the  
   New Learning, 602—604  
   protects Church reformers, 610  
   supports Erasmus, 616  
   his share in submission of the clergy, 662  
   death, 664  
 Warwick, Earl of, son of Clarence, 587  
 Warwick, Earl of, Protector, 712. *See* North-  
   umberland  
 Warwick, Earl of, buys Connecticut valley, 1101  
   commander of the fleet, 1139  
 Warwick, Neville, Earl of (the King-maker), 549,  
   553, 554  
   his character and position, 555—557  
   policy, 558, 559  
   death, 559  
 Washington, English capture of, 1822  
 Washington, George, 1633, 1652, 1699—1701,  
   1703, 1704, 1712  
 Waterloo, battle of, 1824—1827  
 Watling Street, 92  
 Watt, James, 1731  
 Wearmouth, monastery at, 55  
 Wedmore, peace of, 89, 90  
 Wellesley, Marquis, 1811  
 Wellesley, Sir Arthur, 1809, 1811. *See* Welling-  
   ton  
 Wellington, Lord (*see* Wellesley), campaign in  
   Portugal, 1812  
   in Spain, 1818, 1820  
   in France, 1821  
   in Belgium, 1824—1826  
   (Duke of) his ministry, 1833—1835  
 Welsh, their alliance with Penda, 39  
   submit to Offa, 76, 82  
   to Ecgbert, 82  
   to Æthelstan, 102  
 Wentworth, Peter, 810  
 Wentworth, Thomas, 994, 1033  
   his policy, 1079—1081, 1099—1101  
   Deputy in Ireland, 1081—1084. *See* Strafford  
 Wesley, Charles, 1614  
 Wesley, John, 1614—1617  
 Wessex, kingdom of, 19, 20  
   its extent, 34  
   submits to Oswald's overlordship, 44  
 Wessex—*continued.*  
   becomes Christian, 44  
   ravaged by Wulfhere, 59  
   revival under Centwine, Ceadwalla, and Ine,  
     66, 67  
   struggle with Mercia, 67—69, 78, 82, 83  
   attacked by northmen, 86  
   by Danes, 88  
   revival under Ælfred, 90—98  
   fall, 113—117  
   earldom of, 123  
 Westminster Abbey, 271, 387, 388  
   Assembly and Confession, 1181  
   Parliament settled at, 344  
   Provisions of, 294  
 Weston, Lord Treasurer, 1039, 1070, 1085  
 Wharton, Lord-Lieutenant of Ireland, 1565  
 Whiggamore raid, 1198  
 "Whigs," their origin, 1198, 1423  
   support war against France, 1526  
   relations with Marlborough, 1562—1565  
   their long rule, 1580—1582  
   factions under Walpole, 1599  
   reunited under Pelham, 1624  
   oppose Pitt, 1669  
   divisions under Rockingham, 1720  
   the "Old," 1763  
   return to power, 1835, 1843, 1844  
 Whitby, abbey of, 52  
   synod of, 55, 56  
 Whitefield, 1613, 1614, 1616  
 White Ship, wreck of the, 184  
 Whitgift, Archbishop, 958, 963, 966  
 Wiglaf, King of Mercia, 82, 83  
 Wilberforce, William, 1742  
 Wilfrid of York, 55  
 Wilkes, John, 1678, 1687—1690  
 Wilkins, Dr., 1297  
 William the Conqueror, Duke of Normandy,  
   139, 140  
   war with France, 141  
   subdues Maine and Brittany, 142  
   his rule in Normandy, *ib.*  
   marriage, 143  
   relations with Lanfranc, *ib.*, 144  
   visits England, 144  
   his claims, *ib.*  
   lands at Pevensey, 146  
   victory at Senlac, 148, 149  
   crowned, 150  
   his conquest of England, 151—154  
   dealings with feudalism, 154—156  
   administration, 156—158  
   Church policy, 158—161  
   revolts against him, 152—154, 164  
   his rule, 164, 165  
   bridles Scotland and Wales, 165  
   death, 166  
 William Rufus, King, 166  
   revolts against him, *ib.*  
   struggle with the Church, 167, 168  
   Continental wars, 168  
   dealings with Scotland, *ib.*  
   with Wales, *ib.*, 312  
   death, 168

- William the Third, Prince of Orange, 1379, 1390,  
1473—1475  
proposed marriage, 1397  
defeat at Cassel, 1400  
marriage, 1402  
policy in England, 1425, 1428, 1477—1479  
on the Continent, 1475—1477  
invited to England, 1481  
lands, 1486  
King, 1491  
forms Grand Alliance, 1492  
dealings with Scotland, 1494—1498  
with the Church, 1507—1509  
campaign in Ireland, 1514, 1515  
in Flanders, 1519  
motives for peace of Ryswick, 1532  
last struggle with Lewis, 1536—1539  
death, 1545
- William the Fourth, King, 1835, 1838
- William the Ætheling, 184
- William the Lion, King of Scots, invades Eng-  
land, 209  
homage to Henry the Second, 359  
released from it by Richard, *ib.*
- William, son of Robert of Normandy, 183, 185, 192
- William of the Long Beard, 382, 383
- Williams, Bishop of Lincoln, 1130, 1132
- Williams, Roger, 1065
- Willis, physiologist, 1304
- Wiltshire, Earl of, 647
- Winchelsey, Archbishop of Canterbury, 395
- Winchester surrendered to the Conqueror, 149  
Statute of, 327
- Winchester, Marquis of, 1173, 1174
- Windebank, Secretary of State, 1119
- Windham, leader of "Old Whigs," 1764
- Winfrith, *see* Boniface
- Winthrop, John, 1052
- Winwæd, battle of, 47
- Wippedsfleet, battle of, 17
- Witenagemot, the, 112, 113
- Wither, George, 1094
- Witt, John de, 1473
- Wolfe, General, 1652—1655
- Wolsey, Thomas, 633  
his foreign policy, *ib.*  
his offices, 635  
educational foundations, 609, 635—637  
administration, 637  
financial measures, 640, 641  
struggle with Parliament, *ib.*  
conduct in the king's divorce case, 647, 648  
fall, 649, 650  
results of his career, 650, 651
- Woodville, Elizabeth, *see* Grey
- Woodward, mineralogist, 1304
- Worcester, battle of, 1218
- Worcester, Tiptoft, Earl of, 533, 582—584
- Wulfhere, King of Mercia, 59, 60
- Wulfstan, Archbishop of York, 103, 106
- Wulfstan, Bishop of Worcester, 166
- Wulfstan's voyage, 94
- Wyatt, Sir Thomas, 720
- Wycherly, 1291
- Wyclif, John, 452, 453  
his plans of reform, 458—460  
charged with heresy, 460, 461  
his "poor preachers," 461, 464  
denies Transubstantiation, 463  
his writings, *ib.*  
condemned, 464  
death, 468  
translation of the Bible, *ib.*  
its effects, 504  
influence in Bohemia, 508
- Wykeham, William of, Bishop of Winchester,  
449—451
- Wyndham, Sir William, 1580, 1585, 1586
- YORK conquered by the Deiri, 23  
by Cadwallon, 41  
revolts against William the First, 152, 153  
massacre of Jews at, 392  
Parliament at, 401  
siege of, 1155—1157
- York, Duke of, joins Henry the Fourth, 509
- York, Frederick, Duke of, 1766
- York, James, Duke of, Lord Admiral, 1319  
marries Anne Hyde, 1366, 1456  
conversion, 1372, 1373  
fight with De Ruyter, 1379  
resigns office, 1381  
second marriage, 1391  
plans for his succession, 1416, 1425, 1427  
*see* James the Second
- York, New, its origin, 1661
- York, Richard, Duke of, Regent in France for  
Henry the Sixth, 544  
rivalry with Henry, 548—550  
death, 553
- York, Richard, Duke of, son of Edward the  
Fourth, 584
- York Town, surrender of Cornwallis at, 1712
- ZARAGOZA, sieges of, 1810
- Zorndorf, battle of, 1649
- Zutphen, battle of, 832

Vol. I. pp. 1—468; Vol. II. pp. 469—932; Vol. III. pp. 933—1408; Vol. IV. pp. 1409—1850.

THE END







DA 30 .G7 1901

v.4 SMC

Green, John Richard,  
1837-1883.

A short history of the  
English people /  
AZF-4395 (mcih)





